Presented By

Friends of the

Greene County Room

Greene Co. Room 974.7 Kings
1m

Stiles. Henry Reed. 1832-
1909. v.2 1869

A history of the city of
Brooklyn

ge

H 11 $5^{\underline{00}}$
New York

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/historyofcityofb0002henr

HISTORY

OF THE

CITY OF BROOKLYN,

N. Y.

VOLUME II.

ET PATRIBUS ET POSTERITATI.

THE MAJOR & KNAPP ENG. MF'G. & LITH. CO. 71 B'WAY, N.Y.

GEN. JEREMIAH JOHNSON.

A

HISTORY

OF THE

CITY OF BROOKLYN.

INCLUDING

THE OLD TOWN AND VILLAGE OF BROOKLYN,
THE TOWN OF BUSHWICK,

AND

THE VILLAGE AND CITY OF WILLIAMSBURGH.

BY

HENRY R. STILES.

VOL. II.

BROOKLYN, N. Y.:
PUBLISHED BY SUBSCRIPTION.
1869.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1869,
By D. Williams Patterson,
In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States for the
Northern District of New York.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

PAGE
HISTORY OF THE TOWN UNTIL THE INCORPORATION OF THE VILLAGE OF BROOKLYN, - - - - - - - - 9

CHAPTER II.

BROOKLYN, SIXTY YEARS AGO, - - - - - - 33

CHAPTER III.

THE VILLAGE FROM 1817 TO 1834, INCLUSIVE, - - - - 194

CHAPTER IV.

THE CITY FROM 1834 TO 1855, - - - - - - 249

CHAPTER V.

THE EARLY SETTLERS AND PATENTS OF BUSHWICK, - - - 304

CHAPTER VI.

HISTORY OF BUSHWICK, 1660 TO 1708, - - - - - 328

CHAPTER VII.

ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF BUSHWICK, 1700 TO 1869, - - - - - - - - - - - 355

CHAPTER VIII.

PAGE.
BUSHWICK DURING THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR, - - - 359

CHAPTER IX.

BUSHWICK AND WILLIAMSBURGH, FROM THE CLOSE OF THE REVOLUTION, UNTIL 1854, - - - - - - - 371

CHAPTER X.

GREEN-POINT, - - - - - - - - - - 406

CHAPTER XI.

THE CONSOLIDATED CITY OF BROOKLYN (JAN. 1ST, 1855 – JAN. 1ST, 1869), - - - - - - - - - - 418

NOTE.

We take especial pleasure in acknowledging the assistance received from J. M. STEARNS, Esq., of Brooklyn, E. D., who, learning of our design, soon after its inception, kindly placed in our hands a large amount of manuscript material which he had collected, with a view to the preparation of a history of Williamsburgh; and who has, at all times since, freely rendered all required assistance to us in our labors. Acknowledgments are also due to ALDEN J. SPOONER, Esq.; to Mr. HENRY E. PIERREPONT; to T. M. PERRY, Esq., of Green-Point, as well as to others whose favors have been appropriately alluded to in various parts of this volume.

H. R. S.

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

TO SECOND VOLUME.

	Page.
Portrait of General Jeremiah Johnson,	*Frontispiece*
Map A, The Old Ferry District of the Village, in 1816,	37
Portrait of Jacob Patchen,	69
View in Fulton street, 1830,	74
Guy's Brooklyn Snow Scene, in 1820,	89
St. Ann's Church, in 1823,	108
Map B, The Village of Brooklyn and the Heights, 1816,	120
Portrait of Hezekiah B. Pierrepont, Esq.,	147
Map C, Course of a portion of old Jamaica Turnpike,	163
View of the Fleet Mansion,	165
Valley Grove, or Battle Pass, in 1816,	171
Map D, Yellow Fever District of 1823,	204
Portrait of Cyrus P. Smith,	263
Portrait of Henry C. Murphy,	266
Map of Burned District, 1848,	281
Portrait of Samuel Smith,	287
Portrait of Conklin Brush,	289
Fac-Simile of Autograph of Bondewyn Manout,	333
Old Bushwick Church, 1828,	355
Map E, Het Dorp — Bushwick Green,	373
Old Bushwick Graveyard,	375
View of the Devoe Houses,	375
View of the Boerum House,	376
Map of Green-Point,	406
Portrait of Mr. Neziah Bliss,	410
Portrait of Samuel Booth,	478
Sailor's and Soldier's Medals (3 cuts),	488
Portrait of Martin Kalbfleisch,	492

HISTORY OF BROOKLYN.

CHAPTER I.

HISTORY OF THE TOWN UNTIL THE INCORPORATION OF THE VILLAGE OF BROOKLYN.

1812–1816.

1812. September 23d. A serious fire, originating in Benjamin Smith's large stable, on the east side of Main street, near the Old Ferry, consumed that building, together with nine horses, and communicated to Charles Hewlett's grocery store, T. Hicks's and Van Mater's stables, and the large stone building known as the "Corporation House,"[1] which were totally destroyed. Three dwelling houses were also injured and, had it not been for the opportune arrival of a floating[2] and other engines from New York, the fire would, in all probability, have crossed the street and endangered the safety of the whole village. The flames could have been sooner arrested, had not the New York firemen been hindered at the ferry, the only large ferry boat happening to be on the Brooklyn side at the time of the alarm. Public houses and private residences were freely thrown open to the brave firemen who had come to the rescue, and the inhabitants vied with each other in furnishing them with refreshments. Messrs. John Doughty and David Seaman,[1] the engineers of the Brooklyn fire department, returned thanks, in the public prints, to the New York firemen and also "to Captain Robert L. Gardiner, of the [fishing] smack, for his willing and friendly exertions in transporting two engines with their members, across the East river." From the New York firemen the Brooklynites received the following sensible suggestion, which was sent to the *Star* for publication: "The disastrous fire of the 23d which your village suffered and the sundry late fires, ought to awaken the inhabitants to make all possible preparations to facilitate the extinguishing of fires. Whenever you have been visited by a fire of any magnitude, some of the firemen of New York have come to your relief. Had there been any ferry boat or other conveyance at command, you would at all times receive much earlier assistance. Not a boat belonged to your ferry sufficiently large to convey one engine, nor did any cross until after the fire had raged for two hours. I would propose to your inhabitants that they build two scows, one for each ferry, sufficiently large to take in two or three engines; that these boats be deposited in our ferry slip, in which case you may at all times calculate upon assistance from the New York firemen."

---

[1] See pages 311 and 312 of first volume.

[2] *Furman's Manuscripts* (dated 1856), says: "About forty years ago, Brooklyn was often visited by large fires, the buildings being, with very few exceptions, all frame. The village had but two small and inefficient fire engines and relied mainly upon New York for relief; principally upon what was called the "floating engine," a large, powerful engine, fitted in a scow and propelled by oars, and which was worked by about fifty men, by means of large, long handles, turning cranks. This engine lay in the East river, near Peck slip, and when a fire occurred in Brooklyn the villagers were always intensely anxious for its arrival."

---

[1] Of David Seaman, we learn that, "as early as 1795, when making an application for a stand in the old Fly-market, he was highly recommended as an honest, worthy man, by some fifteen of the most distinguished men of that period. In a petition, he states that "he has served a regular apprenticeship with John Doughty, junior, butcher, who also endorses him as a practical butcher, and an honest man." With all these vouchers, Seaman appears to have been then unsuccessful; but the next year, he purchased at auction, stand number 71, Fly-market, for which he paid £290, and became known as a "beef butcher," who slaughtered and sold only the largest animals. He was a great patron of prize or extraordinary cattle, the first of which we find noticed in the month of April, 1799, as "Two very extraordinary Beaves," with which he graced his stall; and, again, in 1805, he purchased a remarkably large pair of twin cattle, fattened by Hewlet Townsend, of Oyster bay, which were slaughtered at Brooklyn, from which place he daily brought his meats in large row boats, directly across to the Fly-market.

"At an early day, Seaman became much interested in the growth of the town; and being naturally gifted with a quick and active mind, he greatly assisted in the formation of a fire department and the establishment of better ferry accommodations. He was elected a trustee of the town for the years 1810, 1811, and 1812; and he became also one of the fire engineers, which office he held for several years.

"After Seaman moved to the city of New York, he joined its fire department; became an alderman, when that office was held by worthy men; and, afterwards, was sent to the legislature, where, for his acts of firmness and independence in the discharge of his duties, he was complimented by a series of resolutions passed by a citizen's meeting, held in the park, on the 19th of May, 1824."—*Devoe.*

The subsequent introduction of team and steam boats upon both of the Brooklyn ferries gave the much needed facilities for succor from New York, and consequently largely diminished the risks to which Brooklyn had, hitherto, been exposed by fires.

1813. In this year an enterprise originated which ultimately resulted in the establishment of the first public school. A number of charitable ladies of the village formed an organization and established a school known as the *Loisian Seminary*, named after Lois, the grandmother of Timothy the Apostle, and by whom he was instructed in the first principles of the Christian religion. The aim and objects of this association will be best understood by the following statement, drawn up and signed by its founders:

LOISIAN SEMINARY.

"The object of this Association is for the purpose of teaching poor children reading, writing, arithmetic, knitting, and sewing, gratis.

"A suitable room to be provided in a house occupied by some family.

"The number of Trustees, whose duty it shall be to attend at least once each week, assisted by two young ladies in such manner as the Trustees have fixed, and provide paper, books, &c., as may be found requisite.

"The Trustees are to judge of the children who are to be admitted.

"Money for the rent of the room and providing books, &c., to be raised by subscriptions and donations.

"It is expected that the friends of this school who may have books proper for the children will furnish, free of expense.

"It will be the duty of the Trustees to see that the children admitted in this school attend divine service in the churches to which they belong.

"The Trustees to fix the hours for keeping school open, and to make all suitable regulations as they may judge proper.

"A book to be provided, the names of the Trustees and the young ladies who agree to assist in this school to be recorded, with the rules and regulations of said school. The young ladies who are to attend weekly are to be named by the Trustees, and any one neglecting to attend without sufficient excuse to the Trustees, to pay a fine of one dollar.

"The Trustees who attend the week shall make a report of the children who have been admitted or dismissed during the week, and such further particulars relating to the school as they may think proper.

"The Trustees to meet the first Wednesday of every month in the afternoon, at 4 o'clock.

"Mrs. Sands,
Mrs. Onderdonk,
Mrs. Miller, Trustees."
Mrs. Moffat,
Mrs. Ireland, Treasurer.

"H. Cunningham, Secretary."

RULES FOR REGULATING THE LOISIAN SEMINARY.

"The school to be regulated by five Trustees, namely, Mrs. Sands, Mrs. Onderdonk, Mrs. Ireland, Mrs. Miller, Mrs. Moffat and Miss Cunningham, Secretary; one of the Trustees to attend throughout the week to open the school with prayer, and to see the business of the school properly arranged.

"Twenty-four young ladies to be elected, who will attend in rotation, to be appointed by the Trustees.

"The two young ladies who are notified on the preceding Saturday to attend the ensuing week will be under the presiding Trustee's direction.

"The school to commence at nine o'clock and be dismissed at twelve in the morning, and from two till five in the afternoon.

"No visitors will be admitted unless upon business connected with the school.

"It will be necessary that the presiding Trustee observe that the children attend punctually, no trifling excuse to be admitted, and that they are kept clean, and behave in a decent manner.

"The children to be instructed in plain sewing, knitting, spelling, and reading the Bible.

"Any young lady joining the society and not disposed to assist in teaching will be expected to promote the interests of the school by a yearly subscription.

The Loisian School, established and conducted in accordance with the principles set forth in the preceding documents, continued for five years. Some of the teachers got married, others tired of the duties, and finally a lady was engaged to teach at a salary. In 1817 Mr. Andrew Mercein had called on the lady managers, and requested that a teacher might be employed at a salary and the school converted into a public school, which could only be done under the then existing laws by showing that the school was conducted by a teacher or teachers who had been drawing pay. This was agreed to. The last teacher of the Loisian School was Mrs. Abrams, wife of the undertaker of that name formerly connected with St. Ann's Church, and long since deceased. The lady herself died a few years ago in the Old Ladies' Home.

Mr. Mercein, and his associates in the enterprise, then transferred the school — which had been held in the houses of the members of the society, without any permanent building — to a small frame house corner of Concord and Adams streets, which was subsequently removed to make room for the present building, occupied by Public School No. 1.

In December of this year an *Assistant Society* was formed in Brooklyn for relieving and advising the sick and the poor during the winter season. Its appeal to the benevolence of the public was signed by Thomas Everit, John Garrison, Abraham Remsen, Andrew Mercein, John G. Pray and William Cornwell.

The winter proved to be very severe, and the passage of the ferry boats was accompanied with much delay, and even peril.

1814. War matters (see chap. XI, of first volume); and the introduction of steamboats on the Brooklyn Ferry (see chapter VI on Ferries, in this volume) were the principal events of this year.

1815. May 1st. An association was organized, under the name of *A Society to Prevent and Suppress Vice in the Town of Brooklyn*. On the 11th of the same month this society published, in the *Star*, several extracts from the laws of the state of New York, relative to working, sporting, traveling and selling on Sunday, which publication was approved by Isaac Nichols, Noah Waterbury and Tunis Joralemon, justices of the peace for the town of Brooklyn, and notice was given "that the law will be rigidly enforced."[1]

---

[1] The following list of the officers and members of this association is perhaps worth preservation, as showing who were at that time the substantial, law-abiding, "solid men" of Brooklyn.

Andrew Mercein, *president*, Joshua Sands and Joseph G. Swift, *vice presidents*, Fanning C. Tucker, *secretary*, Abraham Remsen, *treasurer*.

September 15th, witnessed the formation of a *Brooklyn Female Religious Tract Society.*

December. The subject of a village incorporation now began to be considerably agitated, and public notice was given by Andrew Mercein, as chairman, and Alden Spooner, as secretary of a meeting held for that purpose, that application would be made to the legislature of the state, at its next session, for "an Act of Incorporation for the Village of Brooklyn, comprehending the Fire District."

During the winter of 1815–'16, several cases of the natural small-pox occurred in Brooklyn, and the mortality from this disease, at the same time, in the city of New York, was considerable. Drs. Ball and Wendell, who were then the principal physicians of Brooklyn, put forth a public advertisement, stating their wish to extend the benefits of vaccination as a substitute for and preventative of the small-pox, and offering their gratuitous services to all favorably disposed.

1816. January 6th. A public meeting was held for the purpose of organizing a *public school*, at which Andrew Mercein, John Seaman, and Robert Snow were elected trustees, and John Doughty, clerk of the school. The trustees were appointed a committee to ascertain a proper site for building a school house, and report the probable expense thereof. At a meeting held January 12, 1816, the trustees reported that they could purchase four lots of ground on Concord street, of Mr. Noah Waterbury,

---

The following were appointed a *standing committee*, viz: S. T. Anderson, Joseph Moser, Robert Snow, Robert Bach, William Cornwell, Samuel Sackett, Robert Hoey, David Anderson, William Cunningham, Christopher Codwise.

The following, in addition to those named above, were *members:* Samuel Merwin, Selah S. Woodhull, John P. K. Henshaw, John G. Pray, John O. Zuill, Charles Ball, M.D., Benjamin S. Cook, George Smith, Joseph Herbert, George Gibbs, Charles Hewlett, Matthew Wendell, M.D., Newbury Hewlett, William Foster, Adam Tredwell, Simon Richardson, Ebenezer Close, Isaac Moser, John McKenney, John Murphy, Jonathan Monnell, William Wallace, Hendrick L. Suydam, Samuel Morris, Manuel Pestana, Alden Spooner, Peter Barr, Joseph Dean, William G. Lawrence, Samuel Wyckoff, John Dean, Nicholas Rouse, William Henry, John M. Hicks, Jacob M. Hicks, John Garrison, Leffert Lefferts, Thomas Kirk, Jeromus Schenck, Edward Coope, Abraham Bennett, John Cornelison, John Dikeman, John Sharpe, John Jackson, John Johnson, Evan Beynon, James Harper, William Grigg.

for $550. The meeting thereupon resolved, that "the sum of $2,000 should be raised by tax on the inhabitants of the said district, to purchase said lots and to build a school house thereon;" and that "in the meantime, the Loisian school be the common school of the said district;" and that "the trustees of the district be authorized to exonerate from the payment of teacher's wages all such poor and indigent persons as they shall think proper, pursuant to the act of the legislature;" and that "it be recommended by this meeting, that the common school to be taught in this district, be on the Lancastrian plan of instruction." The further history of this enterprise, from which originated our present public school system, will be given in another chapter.

January 8th. A public meeting of the freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Brooklyn, was held at the public house of Lawrence Brower, "to take into consideration the proposed application for an incorporation of Brooklyn." On the following day, Messrs. Thomas Everit, Alden Spooner, Joshua Sands, Rev. John Ireland, and John Doughty, who had been appointed a committee to draft the required petition and bill, met at the residence of Mr. Hez. B. Pierrepont, and proceeded to perform the important task assigned to them. The papers were forwarded to Albany early in February, and the anxious (would be) villagers were informed by the *Star*, on the 13th of March, that the bill had passed the senate and was referred to a committee of the house, of which Dr. B. F. Thompson (subsequently the historian of Long Island), was chairman.

March 27th. The aspiring inhabitants of Brooklyn, being now in a fair way to obtain their village charter, straightway turned their attention to the permanent establishment of an institution which, in all parts of the civilized world, is considered essential to the comfort and self-respect of a properly organized community. We allude to a *barber's shop*. We would not have our readers to suppose that these founders of "the third city in the Union," had always gone unshorn and unkempt; nor, that they had been obliged, "from time immemorial," to shave themselves — but they were, at the period of which we write — *bereaved*. Mr. J. Burke, who for some years before had exercised the tonsorial profession among them, had sought a wider field for his genius in the city of New York, and so great was the necessity of his late patrons in Brooklyn, that a number of them assembled, made up a subscription for a barber's shop, and gave a barber *a call!* The fortunate recipient of this "call" was a consequential little man named Penny, and the stock subscribed was known as "The Penny Stock;" which, in 1819, Mr. Geo. S. Wise offered, by advertisement, to buy up at its original price.

This incident elicited from a local poet (Alden Spooner, editor of the *Star*), the following

NEW SONG.

Tune.— Anacreon.

At Barnum's hotel,[1] where they met in full glee,
A few sons of merriment drew a petition,
Their beards were unshaven and hideous to see,
And their heads *discomfrizzled*, in frightful condition,
Each one told his case,
With deplorable face,
And ask'd what relief could be found in the place;
For the fair (tender creatures) their smiles never gave,
To the man who neglected to comb and to shave.

Then jump'd upon a bench and addressed the throng,
A man of small size, but in consequence big,[2]
And said, "for a price which no man will deem wrong,
I'll smooth every chin and pomatum each wig;
Put your names down I say,
If five dollars you'll pay,
I'll build a snug barber's shop over the way,
Where ev'ry true son of Columbia may shave,
And the fair will yield to the smiles of the sleek and the brave."

The news thro'out Brooklyn most rapidly flew,
And a *Wise*[3] man was called to direct the affair,
The Shaver's hard fortune he held out to view,
And all lent a favorable ear to his prayer,

---

[1] The Franklin Hotel, No. 1 Fulton street, is the successor of Barnum's House.
[2] Penny. [3] George S. Wise.

They signed a long roll,
Bought a place for his pole,
And a snug little building now gladdens his soul,
Where the wise and the otherwise, the gallant and brave,
May frizzle and powder, may lather and shave.

April 12th. The act incorporating the *village of Brooklyn* passed the legislature of the state.

That portion of the *town* of Brooklyn, thus set aside as a distinct government, an *imperium in imperio*, had previously been known as the fire district, established in 1801, and was described as "beginning at the Public Landing south of Pierrepont's Distillery formerly the property of Philip Livingston deceased, on the East River; thence running along the Public Road leading from said Landing, to its intersection with Red Hook Lane; thence along said Red Hook Lane to where it intersects the Jamaica Turnpike Road; thence a north-east course to the head of the Wallaboght Mill-pond; thence through the centre of the Mill pond to the East River; and thence down the East River to the place of beginning."

The *officers* of the newly created village were to consist of five trustees and three assessors, to be chosen on the first Monday in May of every year, by the freeholders and inhabitants qualified to vote at town meetings. The board were authorized to choose their president, treasurer, clerk, and collector; also to appoint weighers and measurers.

The *freeholders and inhabitants* were declared a body corporate, and "by law, capable of purchasing, holding and conveying any estate, real and personal, for the use of said village (provided the said estate be within the limits of the said village), and of erecting any public buildings for the use of the said village, and of raising money by tax for erecting such public buildings, purchasing such real and personal property, or making any necessary repairs or improvements, procuring fire-engines and other utensils for extinguishing fires, and for making a reasonable compensation to the officers of the corporation."

The *trustees*, or a major part of them, were empowered "to make, ordain, constitute, and publish such prudential by-laws, rules and regulations, as they from time to time shall deem meet and proper; and such in particular as relate to the public markets, streets, alleys and highways of the said village; to draining, filling up, levelling, paving, improving, and keeping in order the same; to slaughter-houses, houses of ill fame, and nuisances generally; relative to a village watch, and lighting the streets of the said village; relative to restraining geese, swine or cattle of any kind; relative to the better improvement of their common lands; relative to the inspection of weights and measures, and assize of bread; relative to erecting and regulating hay scales; relative to the licensing of public porters, cartmen, hackney-coachmen, guagers, weigh-masters, measurers, inspectors of beef and pork, of wood, of staves, and heading, and of lumber; relative to public wells, pumps, and reservoirs or cisterns of water to be kept filled for the extinguishment of fires; relative to the number of taverns or inns to be licensed in said village; and relative to anything whatsoever that may concern the public and good government of the said village; but no such by-laws shall extend to the regulating or fixing of the prices of any commodities or articles of provision, except the article of bread, that may be offered for sale."

Messrs. Andrew Mercein, John Garrison, John Doughty, John Seaman, and John Dean, were named, by the act, as the first trustees of the village, to remain in office until the first Monday in May, 1817, when an election was to be held by the people.

On the 29th of April, these gentlemen took the oath of office as trustees, and held their first meeting on the 4th of May, following.

Another important event of this memorable year, 1816, was the establishment of a *Sunday School* in the village.

It seems that a Sunday School had been established in the fall of 1815, at Elizabethtown, N. J., "for the education of the blacks in that vicinity, by the *gratuitous* services of some young men as teachers"—and that the school had subsequently "been taken under the charge of an association for educating the ignorant.[1]

This philanthropic enterprise met with a prompt response from Kings county; where, at Flatbush, on the 17th of December, of the same year, a "Sunday School was opened for the education of slaves." "At a very short notice, according to the newspapers of the day,"[1] upwards of one hundred, from the age of ten to sixty assembled. They commenced with writing, and conducted themselves in the most becoming manner. In the evening they were instructed in figures, for the purpose of ascertaining the value of money bills in circulation. Schools are to be opened every night in the week in each town in the county. A store will shortly be opened, the profits of which are to be applied solely to their education. All such as are disposed, will have an opportunity of having their slaves instructed in different mechanical branches. The plan is well arranged, and nothing but the misconduct of the blacks can defeat the laudable views of this philanthropic society. Subscription books are opened at Flatbush, for the free blacks from Brooklyn and New York.

---

[1] *Star*, January 3d, 1816.

Of the ultimate success, or history, of this laudable enterprise, we have no further record. It is certain, however, that its influence was not lost upon some of the more thoughtful and earnest Christians in the community; for, in March, 1816, we learn that a Sunday School was then "in operation in the village of Brooklyn;"[2] that "the number of children who appear to have entered as scholars is upwards of seventy; their attention generally to their studies is such as to give great satisfaction and encouragement to their teachers;" and that the school was "under the management of four superintendents; a standing committee of seven, and a number of (volunteer) teachers, male and female." The design of the institution is declared to be the combining "of religious and moral instruction with ordinary school learning;" and the parents and guardians of the children who attend, while urged to co-operate, by their advice and influence at home, with the efforts made by the teachers, are also "particularly requested" to express their wishes as to *what catechism* they would have them study. We further learn "that the children are taught to spell, read and write," and that "they will, likewise, be taken to such church as their parents may choose, once on the Lord's Day." In conclusion, the hearty co-operation of all ladies and gentlemen in the village is invoked in behalf of the school, the object of which is declared, by its founders, to be the taking "of a number of poor children from *that most destructive* of *all places to the morals of youth*, we mean *the street* on the sabbath day." Who these founders were, or the principal of them, we learn from the signatures to this address or statement; viz: *Andrew Mercein*, *Robert Snow*, *Joseph S. Harrison*, and *John Murphy;* and, we may add, *Joseph Herbert.*[1]

---

[1] *Nat. Advertiser*, quoted by the *Star*, of December 20, 1815.

[2] Evidently, the school had been some little time "in operation," although this is the first date which we can assign to it. From what has been told us by Judge John Dikeman, one of its earliest teachers, it is probable that it had its beginnings sometime in 1815.

---

[1] These men, who were neither wealthy, influential (in the worldly acceptation of that term), or even "to the manor born," may justly be honored as the *true* "foster-fathers" of the infant village of Brooklyn. "Instant, in season and out of season," in "every good word and work," and thoroughly unselfish in their desire to benefit their fellow men, they were always to be found as the leaders of any enterprise, which promised to advance the religious, educational, or social interests of the community; and accomplished, in the course of their long and useful lives, an incalculable amount of good, the influence of which is even yet felt in the city which has arisen upon the scene of their former labors. We have taken pains, therefore, to collect such biographical details concerning them, as may properly preserve their memory: commencing with a sketch of *Robert Snow*, who (though, with characteristic modesty, his name never appears *first* on the list), is known, by all concurrent testimony, to have been prominently the leader in this Sabbath School, as in all other similar enterprises of that period, in Brooklyn.

ROBERT SNOW was a native of Ireland, and we first hear of him, in America, as keeping a small shoe shop near the corner of Reed and Elm streets, in New York city. About this time he married Susan Meir, who had been a fellow passenger in the ship which brought him to this country. She was of an amiable and industrious character; and, while her husband mended shoes, she took in washing. Their united frugality and industry, at length, enabled them to open a small grocery; but, after a few weeks trial of this, Robert became thoroughly disgusted with it, telling his wife that, "as his customers wanted only a pound of soap, a loaf of bread, and a pint of rum, varied by some squalid child calling at dark for a twopenny candle and a bottle of gin," he would not administer to intemperance and vice; but, would rather "trudge about the city and saw wood," for a living. Selling out his shop, he soon found a clerkship with John Pintard, in whose employ, all his principles of honesty, industry and benevolence were fostered by the daily example of one of the kindest, most active and worthy merchants, which New York ever possessed. Through Mr. Pintard's aid, Robert Snow obtained a situation as foreman in Kip's potash store, and his assiduity there was rewarded by his appointment as potash inspector, about the year 1788. He now formed a partnership with Mr. John Brower, Thus far, the Brooklyn Sunday School, as it was called, seems to have been mostly, if not entirely, in the hands of those who

---

who, though a moderate man in politics, was often removed and reappointed — while Mr. Snow, amid all political strifes, and at a time, when party measures were violent, was never once removed — his unswerving fidelity, and kindness of disposition having won the esteem of all who knew him. In course of time, he acquired the means of purchasing some land adjoining the "Negro burying ground" (in the rear of Mr. A. T. Stewart's present lower store in Broadway); and erected thereon three houses, in one of which he resided, surrounded with all the comforts then appertaining to gentlemen in moderate circumstances. His houses, however, were burned, and his title to the land (a part of the well known Teller estate) subsequently became invalid and worthless.

It is related of Messrs. Snow & Brower, whose store was in Front street near Broad, that in the summer months, when the men who were at work early "knocked off" at 8 A.M. and went home to breakfast, the two partners were accustomed to retire to their little private office; and, while a frugal meal was preparing for them in a neighboring cook shop, a half-hour was spent by Mr. Snow in reading aloud from the Bible, and then, after a short prayer, breakfast was eaten and they were ready for work again, by the time the men returned to the store. Even, if, from press of business, they were compelled to snatch a hurried repast, it was always in the privacy of the little back office, and never without a short prayer, or "grace." As business increased upon them, they took in another partner, who ultimately became intemperate, lost all self-respect, begged in the streets, and died in the Alms House. It was well known that no beggar (unless intoxicated) ever applied to Mr. Snow without receiving help; and, to his old partner, he had not the heart to refuse the alms which the besotted man occasionally asked of him. The only way, therefore, in which he could withstand his importunities was to take all the money from his pockets and give it over to Mr. Brower's safe keeping, whenever he had occasion to expect a call from his former partner. Mr. Snow's rooted aversion to intemperance was very noticeable at a period when drinking usages were common, and no one ever thought of reforming the drunkard. The feeling had been greatly strengthened by the unfortunate fate of two of his wife's nephews, whom Mr. Snow had brought over from Ireland, at his own expense, and had furnished with every facility for doing well in this new country. But they could not withstand the temptation so destructive to their countrymen generally. One of them became a stupid sot, whom he supported while living, and buried when dead; the other, in addition to his drinking habits, defrauded his benefactor of a considerable amount, was forgiven, and his debts paid; but, proving incorrigible, was shipped back to Ireland by Mr. Snow.

To one constituted as Mr. Snow was, no blessing could be greater than children, and of these he had seven, all of whom, however, died in early youth. To fill, in some measure, the void thus left in his heart, he adopted many children from time to time, and never had less than two in his house. Seven of these were girls, some of whom are now happily settled in life, while the unhappy marriages of others were identified with Methodist denomination in the village. But these gentlemen and their co-laborers were evidently unin-

---

brought much pain and trouble to the good man's heart. After the loss of land and houses, his business being a lucrative one, he had begun, without any diminution of his charities, to build up his fortune, and, with every prospect of success, when — through the misconduct of the husband of one of these adopted daughters, for whom he had endorsed — his property was, for the second time, wholly swept away. Though this severe blow neither depressed his spirits, soured his feelings, or diminished his ever active charity, yet age had crept upon him, and feebleness of body so clogged his energy of mind as to prevent his making more than a mere competency during the remainder of his life, so long as health was spared to him. When, however, that failed, he became poor indeed. But no murmur escaped him, and it was only when his friends accidentally found his house without food, that they were aware of the straits to which he had been reduced. Then, with the same gentleness with which he had ministered to the poor and lowly, did they attend on him, and, thenceforth, his pillow of poverty was smoothed by kind hands, although he never knew whose they were.[1] Among the other afflictions which clouded Mr. Snow's pathway, was the suffering of his excellent wife, who was afflicted with rheumatism for twenty-two years, during eighteen of which she was confined to her bed and chair, unable to feed herself or raise a hand even to brush away a fly from her face. Her condition required the constant attention of one person, and of three to move her, yet the cheerful piety which beamed from her eye, and the tranquil sweetness of her conversation, made her sick room pleasant to both old and young who visited her. So kindly were her wants ministered to by others, that her husband was never obliged to neglect his business, or to intermit the fatherly cares and duties called for by his adopted children; and indeed by *all the children* of the village, at that day. For he was "everybody's friend," and none found it out sooner than the little ones, to whom for more than forty years, "Poppy Snow" was a beloved friend and counsellor.[2] The philanthropic labors of Robert Raikes, the founder of Sabbath Schools in England, deeply interested Mr. Snow, who, in due time, quietly took up the good work, and joined by Andrew Mercein and Joseph Herbert, visited the

[1] We have heard an anecdote illustrative of this which is also so characteristic of the other party named that we deem it worthy of preservation. One of the market men, with whom Poppy Snow had dealt for a long time, was a portly, good natured man, a fellow worshiper at the Methodist church, and knowing his excellencies as well as his straightened circumstances, always found occasion to refuse his money. Suspecting the motive, Mr. Snow once said to him, "Now, Brother Garrison, this will not do. I must pay for what I eat; tell me how much I owe you." "Well, well," says Mr. Garrison, "I will look up your account against the morrow." When the morrow came, however, Mr. Snow found only a dollar charged against him. "Then," said he, "I will try another of my Methodist friends," and did so; but when, after trading with him for four or five weeks, he asked for his bill, it, also, only amounted to as many shillings.

[2] During Mr. Snow's temporary absence from home, the minister of the congregation of which he was a member, at the close of a sabbath sermon, desired his listeners to tarry a few moments while he would read to them a letter he had received, the day before, from "*Poppy Snow*." The parental appellation stuck, and was soon used by every inhabitant of the village; for old and young, alike, seemed to feel that it brought them nearer to the kind old gentleman.

fluenced by any unworthy or sectarian prejudices, for, shortly after, we find in the village paper,[1] a call for a public meeting, to

---

[1] *Star*, March 27th, 1816.

---

neglected places of the village, leading the children of the poor, without regard to color, to the school-room, where they could be taught the principles of religion and morality. Nor did their labors cease here; but, in the severe winters, these needy ones were clothed, and their various necessities ministered to by Mr. Snow and his coadjutors, who always made the first of January, a "Happy New Year" by dispensing on that day, at the school-room, shoes, stockings, flannel garments, etc., which had been solicited from the wealthier citizens. Gradually, as the numbers increased, there came a pressing necessity for larger accommodation, and with the beams and timber from his old potash store in New York, was commenced the first Sabbath School building in Brooklyn.

Then the colored children were separated from the white; benevolent and active persons (one each from the Dutch Reformed, Episcopal, Methodist and Presbyterian churches of the village), were selected by Mr. Snow as teachers, who, when the Sabbath School session ended, accompanied portions of the scholars to such of the churches as they, or their parents, preferred to have them attend. Again, so greatly was this enterprise blessed, a new and larger school house was needed, and Mr. Snow then proposed to three of his coadjutors (James Engles, Joseph Moser and Robert Nichols), that they should join him in erecting, at a certain specified cost, a building sufficiently large to hold all the Sabbath School children then in Brooklyn. He, also, informed them that he had spoken with a school teacher, who, with a school mistress, would rent it for week day use, at a rate sufficient to pay interest on its cost and incidental expenses. The building was accordingly erected by them, in Prospect street (present Nos. 33 and 35), near Adams, and there all the children, which could be gathered together were formed into one large Sabbath School, embracing a portion of the children belonging to every congregation. In after years as each religious denomination became better established, and new places of worship were erected, these children gradually withdrew to the schools attached to their respective churches, but all with kind feelings, and carrying with them the good wishes, through life, of the teachers they left. In the Sunday School cause, "Poppy Snow" never lost his interest, and when a lingering illness confined him to his house (next door to the Methodist church in Sands street), the scholars of that persuasion, the most numerous in the village, always looked for him at the door, as they passed on their way to the school. A week before his death, he asked to have the children pass before his window, which they did, every boy doffing his cap, and every girl "dropping a curtsy," while the good old man returned bow for bow and blessing for blessing, as the tears rolled down his cheeks, and dimmed his aged eyes.

After the Sabbath School enterprise was fully established, Mr. Snow's interest in youth took a wider scope and he was one of the foremost to carry out Mr. William Wood's suggestion for the organization of an *Apprentices' Library*, in 1823, of which he was chosen the first president. He it was, also, who proposed to the be held on the evening of March 27th, at Mr. Evan Beynon's school-room, "at which Christians of *every* denomination in Brook-

---

directors of that institution the appointing of a committee to procure a charter for a *Savings Bank*, for the benefit of the apprentices, mechanics and others. Much of the labor then necessary to obtain information on which to properly base their application, as well as in preparing a charter, which should be guarded against abuses, was undertaken by Mr. Snow, who also named the first officers, and was named in the charter of incorporation as one of the corporators. He was a strenuous advocate for the moral and intellectual education of children, and though holding republican sentiments, and strongly opposed to the arbitrary exercise of power, he was often heard to say that he would willingly sanction one tyrannical act, viz: the compelling of every parent to send his child to school.[1] His favorite maxim, often repeated and faithfully acted upon in the course of his long and active life, was "*Endeavor to leave the world better than you found it.*"

In person, Mr. Snow was small of stature; always dressing with small clothes, white stockings, high boots and a broad brimmed hat, with a pretty long cue hanging from under it; and retained until his death, the costume and the fashions, which prevailed in his earlier manhood. He never spoke haughtily of, or to, any one; his piety overcame sorrow. He abounded in lively anecdote on ordinary occasions, or tales of deep pathos, when serious subjects were discussed, and was always listened to with respect and interest by old and young.

We are indebted for the facts here stated to a carefully prepared manuscript memoir of Mr. Snow, prepared by his intimate and devoted friend, the late Gen. Robert Nichols, who characterizes him as "the best man that fortune, in half a century, has favored me with the knowledge of."

JOHN MURPHY, or John Garrison Murphy (as he wrote his name during the latter part of his life), was born at Middletown, Monmouth Co., N. J., on the 3d of January, 1783. His father, Timothy, was a native of Ireland, where he was educated as a physician, and from whence he emigrated to America in the year 1766. Settling down in Monmouth Co., he became a farmer, and married Mary Garrison, a granddaughter of Richard Hartshorne, of Middletown, for several years a member of the council, and a representative of the assembly of that province; and who, also, owned a large plantation adjoining to and including Sandy Hook. Upon the out-break of the American revolution, Mr. Timothy Murphy espoused the cause of his adopted

[1] When the corner stone of the Apprentices' Library building was laid by Gen. Lafayette, on the 4th of July, 1825, all of the children of the town were assembled to witness the ceremony. Mr. Snow being the president of the association, was requested to say a few words to the multitude. He mounted the platform, and instead of launching out into a laudation of the warrior and patriot—with merely a few appropriate words to the distinguished guest, he turned, in his usual mild manner to the children, and told them always to rely upon the benevolence of God and on his provident care of innocence and virtue, illustrating it, so powerfully, by a graphic relation of the escape of a mother and children from the Indians in the early settlement of our country, that there was scarcely a dry eye among his hearers, or a heart that did not feel its influence. Again, when the military marched off the grounds with their bands of music, and the citizens with loud hurrahs accompanied Lafayette to the ferry, Mr. Snow conducted the children to the Methodist church, where the citizens joined them, and he again addressed them.

lyn, *all* who are advocates for decency and order, and *all* who are friends to the promulgation of the fundamental truths of our

---

country, and served in the ranks of her defenders, at the battle of Monmouth and elsewhere. He left eight children, four of whom were sons. JOHN GARRISON MURPHY, the second of these sons, and the subject of our sketch, enjoyed the ordinary educational advantages attainable by farmers' boys at that day; was bred to the trade of a mill-wright; married Clarissa Runyon, of Princeton, N. J., and, about 1808, removed to Brooklyn. Here his industry and marked mechanical genius enabled him to establish a good business, and ultimately to secure a comfortable property. As a mill-wright he was concerned in the construction or repairs of nearly all of the old tide mills which then existed in Brooklyn; and in conjunction with Mr. Rodman Bowne, he invented and patented the machinery of the horse or "team-boats," which were used to cross the East river at the ferries (first at the Catherine or New Ferry) before the full introduction of steam. He built all the machinery not only for the horse-boats on the Brooklyn ferries, but for many other places throughout the United States, even to the Mississippi river, and the Canadas.

Mr. Murphy possessed the confidence of his fellow citizens, whom he served for many years as a justice of the peace, a judge of the municipal court, and school commissioner. In politics, he was a thorough Jeffersonian democrat; and few men possessed more influence in the councils of that party in Kings Co. In religious matters he was like his father, a consistent member of the Methodist denomination. He was a tall, fine looking man, and possessed much prudence, reticence, and self-reliance of character.

He died on the 11th of February, 1853, in the seventieth year of his age, leaving four daughters, and two scns, the eldest of whom is our distinguished fellow citizen, the Hon. Henry C. Murphy.

ANDREW MERCEIN was of Swiss descent, his parents having come to America from Geneva, in 1756, and settled, like many other Huguenot families, at New Rochelle, where he was born in 1763. Soon after his birth, the family removed to New York city, and his father having gone to New Orleans, with a view of ultimately establishing their home there, was never heard from thereafter. Young Andrew, who was but a boy at the commencement of the revolutionary war, was at the age of sixteen, impressed on board a British man of war, then lying in the Hudson river. Determined not to fight against his country, he seized an opportunity, one dark night, to escape; and stripping himself, and tying his clothes on his back, he dropped into the water and swam towards the shore. His escape was quickly discovered, and many shots were fired at him, which fortunately missed him, and he reached the shore in safety. During the war, young Mercein was apprentice to a baker, who supplied bread to the army, and used to state, in after years, that for a considerable time there was a great scarcity of that article; that when the Cork provision fleet, on one occasion, overstayed its time, he dealt out sixpenny loaves as fast as he could for a hard half dollar apiece. The bakers at that time gave twenty dollars a hundred weight for flour, and they were obliged to make oatmeal bread for the navy. Often, he saw the people pay seven shillings the pound for butter, which before the war had been only two shillings per pound. He witnessed, also, the evacuation of New York by the British.

common religion, are invited to attend." The object of this meeting was stated to be the organization of a *society* in the village on a plan similar to that then recently adopted by the Sunday School Union Society in New York; and the object of the *society* was further stated to be the establishment of a *school*, "in which children or adults or both, as the circumstances may be, shall be taught gratuitously, on the sabbath day, to read the Holy Scriptures and shall receive other religious instruction; to devise the best methods of teaching; and to unite the Christian feelings, the counsels and the labors of persons of different religious denominations in this benevolent undertaking."

In 1786, Mr. Mercein was converted under the powerful preaching of the Rev. Dr. J. H. Livingston of the Reformed Dutch church, but, through the influence of some friends, was induced to attend services at the "Old John street" Methodist church, in New York city, and finally cast in his lot with that denomination, of which he was ever after a consistent, useful and honored member. The records of the John street church, show that he was a most useful officer, a trustee for many years; and, "though a conscientious Methodist," he was of that truly catholic spirit, which saith, "Grace be with *all* who love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity." He was identified with the erection of the Forsyth street, Duane street, and Bowery village Methodist churches, and was for fifty-two years a most efficient class leader, meeting his class, regularly, until the last week of his life. For many years Mr. Mercein carried on the business of a hard bread, or cracker baker, at No. 93 Gold street, and acquired a handsome competence. His private life was an example of meekness, gentleness, humility and benevolence, and, like his master, he went about doing good. During the terrible "yellow fever" season of 1798, he was untiring in his personal exertions and charities among the sick, the dying, and the afflicted survivors. Early in the present century (about 1805), he retired from business, and removed to Brooklyn, where, during the remainder of his life, his influence and labors were steadily, yet unobtrusively, exerted in behalf of religion, education, morality, and everything which could advance the best interests of the community. An honored member of the Sands street Methodist church, he was instrumental, with his friend Snow and others, in originating the Sabbath School, the Public Schools, etc., and was one of the first board of trustees named in the act of village incorporation in 1816.

"Father Mercein," as he was generally called, died in peace, and in full assurance of a glorious immortality, June 29th, 1835, in the seventy-fourth year of his age, and was buried in the Sands street burying ground. (For some of these facts we are indebted to *Rev. J. B. Wakeley's Lost Chapters of Methodism*, 558–561.)

MR. JOSEPH G. HARRISON married an adopted daughter of Mr. Snow.

JOSEPH HERBERT was a shoemaker, a man of fervent piety and great benevolence. who lived to a good old age, and labored till the last in the Sabbath School, of which he had been a founder.

The "*Brooklyn Sunday School Union Society*," which was organized pursuant to the above call, adopted, on the 8th of April, a constitution, and (subsequently) a code of rules, which were published in the *Star*,[1] and were issued by Joshua Sands, president; Andrew Mercein and Abraham Remsen, vice-presidents; Thomas Sands, treasurer; Rev. John Ireland, secretary; William Cornwell, Robert Bache, David Anderson, Jonathan G. Pray, Joseph Harris, Robert Snow, and Alexander Young.

The school, up to this time, had been held in Thomas Kirk's printing office, a long, narrow, two-story frame edifice, on the westerly side of Adams street, between High and Sands, but it was now removed to the school building of District School, No. 1, on the corner of Concord and Adams streets, and Mr. Joseph Herbert succeeded Mr. Snow as superintendent.[2] At this point in the history of the Sabbath School enterprise in Brooklyn, considerable obscurity gathers around the pen of the historian: records are wanting; newspapers furnish but scanty memoranda; those who could best have aided our researches have passed away; and the memories of the few old Brooklynites who still linger among us fail to retain with sufficient clearness the facts which we are anxious to secure from oblivion. As nearly as we can ascertain, the school, under the *union* arrangement, continued for a short time (probably through the summer of 1817), until from the want of teachers, and owing to the opposition encountered, its operations were suspended for several months.[3]

In the spring of 1818, however, the Episcopalians commenced a Sunday School of their own, which, with but temporary interruptions, has continued to the present day.[4]

---

[1] *Star*, issues of April 8th, and 17th, 1816.

[2] James Engles; Samuel James; William Wallace; Mary Ann McGee; Richard Cornwell and his wife, a daughter of James Herbert; John Dikeman, and his wife Susan Remsen, were among the teachers of this school.

[3] Strange as it may seem at the present day it is yet true that those engaged in its management had to contend not only with the difficulties generally attending new enterprises, but with the strenuous opposition of some even who were church members and who regarded the undertaking as a desecration of the sabbath.

[4] This we learn from an aged member of that church, Mrs. Mary Pettit (widow of Robert Pettit, deceased) of Brooklyn; who, with her husband, was a teacher in the

As far as the other denominations were concerned, the Sunday School enterprise seems to have laid dormant; until, about July, 1821, "an advertisement appeared in a New York newspaper intimating the intention of some members of the Baptist church in that city, to commence a Sabbath School in Brooklyn, and appointing the hour on a certain sabbath when the school would be opened. This announcement aroused the spirit of the friends of the cause in this city, who not being willing to look idly on while others from abroad were superseding them in this field of labor, resolved to put forth a new effort. The original veterans, Messrs. Snow, Mericen and Herbert, together with Mr. Ezra C. Woodhull (Presbyterian); Mr. Adam Dodge (Baptist); Mr. Abraham Vanderveer (a member of the Dutch Reformed church), reopened the school (on the same Sunday morning as advertised in the newspaper before referred to) in the district school-house, on the corner of Adams and Concord streets."

It may be stated, also, in this connection, that in these early village days, the gathering together of boys, on the sabbath, in and around the ropewalks then so numerous in Brooklyn, and the card playing, profanity and other vices which they there indulged

---

school at its commencement. The *Star* of May 20th, 1818, contains an advertisement of the trustees of District School No. 1, calling a meeting of the inhabitants residing in the district, at Thomas Langdon's, on the 22d following; in which advertisement it is stated that "the purpose of the proposed meeting is to take the sense of the inhabitants, interested in the school-house, whether it would be proper to allow the use of said house, or any part of it, for the Sunday School at present in operation in the village, as the Trustees have refused it on the ground of the school being exclusively Episcopal."

The Episcopal Sabbath School was formed under the pastoral charge of Rev. Hugh Smith, Rector of St. Ann's, and with the Rev. James P. F. Clark as superintendent. Among its teachers were John Green, Mary Green, Robert J. Pettit and Mary (Cole) his wife, Jane and Grace Cornell, Sarah Stewart who afterwards married Cornelius Stanton; and among the warmest friends of the school were Mrs. Ann Sands, the Rev. John Ireland, etc. The school was discontinued during the winter following, "in consequence of the many inconveniences attending the instruction of the children during the winter season," the school-house being too far from the church and "many of the scholars thinly clad." It had at this time eighty-seven regular scholars, and was opened again in March, 1819. In April, 1820, it was again open at District School building No. 1. Its subsequent career may be traced in Fish's admirable *History of St. Ann's Church.*

in, had become a most serious nuisance to the better portion of the community. It was natural, therefore, that so fearful a source of demoralization to the youth of the place as to invoke the interference of the constables and the constituted authorities, should call the attention of all good citizens to the Sunday School as the means of inducing the boys to spend the sabbath in a manner more conducive to their good, and to the quiet and comfort of the village.

The village was districted into four parts, each being thoroughly visited, and both the boys and their parents were invited to be present, on the following sabbath, at the District School-house before mentioned. On the appointed day, some ninety children were there assembled, and (in addition to those beforementioned) the Rev. Selah S. Woodhull, pastor of the Dutch church, was present, and addressed the children. During the following week these parties visited around the village, renewing invitations to parents, guardians and children, and soliciting subscriptions for the purchase of books and a proper book-case.

By a union of the Dutch Reformed, Presbyterian, and Methodist churches, a goodly number of children were brought together, and these churches united, accomplished what neither alone could perform. Among the happy results immediately following the labors of those thus engaged, was the unanimity, harmony and good feeling which prevailed between the churches united in this enterprise. It was the custom for the children to attend the churches of their parents' choice; and, there being at that time no Presbyterian churches in Brooklyn, clergymen of that persuasion, from New York, frequently preached in the Sabbath School-room, and this led to the formation, in February, 1822, of the first Presbyterian Society here."[1]

As the prosperity of the school increased, however, its original accommodations became too restricted; and it was finally agreed that each congregation should have its own school. The school was, therefore, resolved into its original elements, the Methodists occupying a building in Prospect street (Nos. 33 and 35) near

---

[1] *See Appendix* I.

Adams; where, under the supervision of Messrs. Snow, Mercein, Herbert, Moser, and others, it flourished exceedingly; and the other denominations going to their respective churches.

May. Various ordinances of the village trustees begin to appear in *the* newspaper (*The Star*,) against the firing of guns, crackers, etc., in the village; the obstruction of streets by heavy merchandise; the building of fires, or cutting up of sod or grass in the streets; the selling of liquor, or the keeping of taverns without proper license, etc., etc.; also, for the due observance of the sabbath.

June 27th. The board of trustees formally adopted a corporate seal for the village, designed by Mr. John Garrison. The design was exceedingly simple, being a star, surrounded with the words "Corporation of Brooklyn."

July. During this month, Messrs. C. Rumley & Co., from England, established in Brooklyn, a manufactory of japanned leather hats, horseman's and artillery caps, hammer cloths, etc. Mr. Rumley was the inventor of a process of making hats out of a single piece of leather, without seam.

August 26th. An ordinance was passed by the trustees "for establishing the assize and regulating the inspection of bread in the village of Brooklyn," and, also, an ordinance "to prevent the firing at a mark, or target within the village," under the penalty of five dollars for each member, and twenty-five dollars for the captain of any military company offending. The reason for this regulation is given in the preamble: "The practice which now prevails, of firing or shooting at a target within the precincts of this village, by volunteer corps from the city of New York, or elsewhere, has become extremely dangerous to the inhabitants of the same, residing in the vicinity of the place usually selected for the purpose aforesaid, exposing them to imminent danger of their lives, from the direction of the fire, whereby musket balls are frequently discharged among inhabited dwellings and over the most public road of the village."

A favorite resort for this target practice was in the trenches of the "Old Fort" on the heights (See note, p. 315, vol. I), which afforded an excellent sheltered place for the purpose, but occasionally a ball would go astray, and across the old road, now Fulton street.

September. David Anderson was appointed inspector of the village *sidewalks* by the trustees, who during the preceding month had ordered the construction of gravel sidewalks, with curbstones in "Old Ferry" and "New Ferry," (now Fulton and Main) streets. A tax of three hundred dollars was also imposed upon the inhabitants of the village, for the benefit of the fire department.

October. The trustees ordered sign-boards to be placed at the corners of Main (New-Ferry), Washington, Sands, Nassau, Concord, Pearl, Adams, Hicks, Jay, Pierrepont, York and Middagh streets.

John Marshall was also appointed master chimney sweep of the village.

November. John Applegate was appointed by the board of trustees, to take up all hogs running at large in the streets, in compliance with a special ordinance of the previous September.

December 18. The village trustees gave public notice of their intention to apply to the legislature of the state, at its next session, "for an act to explain and more accurately define the powers vested in the said trustees, by the act entitled, *an act to incorporate and vest certain powers in the freeholders and inhabitants of the village of Brooklyn, in the county of Kings*, passed April 12, 1816." The trustees also framed an amendatory act, containing twelve sections, and comprising mainly the two following propositions: 1*st.* A virtual request that no inhabitant who was not a freeholder should have a vote in raising taxes.[1] 2*d.* That in case of any vacancy in the board of trustees, or assessors, etc., the trustees might have the power to fill such vacancies without resorting to the people for a new election.

---

[1] By the act of incorporation freeholders and *inhabitants*, as well as freeholders, were entitled to vote on such occasions. The amendment proposed by the trustees, was that "no tax shall be levied or money raised, assessed or collected for erecting public buildings, nor any purchase or sale of any real estate made, nor any public buildings erected or disposed of, without the consent of the *freeholders* of said village, or the major part thereof in open meeting first obtained."

Justly indignant at such an invasion of their rights, the inhabitants held a very large and respectable meeting, on the 19th of February following, at which Judge William Furman, was appointed chairman, and Samuel S. Birdsall, secretary. They then and there resolved that they wholly disapproved of the proposed amendments to their present act of incorporation, and appointed a committee of five persons, viz: William Furman, Henry Stanton, James B. Clarke, Esq., Noah Waterbury and Samuel S. Birdsall, to draw up a remonstrance to the legislature, against the proposed amendments. This remonstrance was signed by two hundred and seventy-nine of the freeholders and inhabitants of the village of Brooklyn, and forwarded to Albany through the medium of William Furman, Esq., who was sent there as an agent to prevent the passage of the proposed amendments into a law. It was presented to the house of assembly on the 1st of March, 1817, by Peter Sharpe, Esq., from New York (Kings Co., having at that time no representative in the legislature) and was referred by the house to a committee, of which Mr. Sharpe was chairman. The remonstrance was considered so strong that nothing more was heard of the proposed amendment.

It was in this month, also, that the celebrated suit was instituted before Justice Nichols, by the village trustees, against Jacob Patchen for refusing to relay the pavement in front of his house in Old Ferry street — result, a fine of $5 and costs, and the commencement of an animosity, on the part of the defendant against the constituted authorities, which finally resulted in a litigation prolonged through many years, and forming, as will be seen in another portion of this volume, a most amusing chapter of Brooklyn history.

CHAPTER II.

BROOKLYN, SIXTY YEARS AGO.

Before proceeding to trace the history of the new village, it seems desirable to present our readers, as far as can be done by the aid of pen and pencil, with a view of Brooklyn as it appeared about 1816; and, with but little alteration, for about fifteen years ensuing. If, in so doing, we seem to indulge too much in minor details, we can only plead that these *minutiæ* are indispensable to a proper understanding of what we propose. We are writing not for ourselves and our contemporaries only, but for those who are to come after us and to whom these matters may be, to a considerable extent, unattainable except through our pages; "Posterity" it has been said, "delights in details" and to many of our readers themselves, if they should live to "a good old age," years will bring a truer appreciation of the value of many of these little points which are now unheeded in the rush and bustle of the active present. If, therefore, any one chooses to "skip" this chapter as "stupid," we shall content ourselves with the (in nowise improbable) prediction that, at some future day, it may prove to be even to them, the most interesting portion of the volume.[1]

---

[1] *Not* being "to the manor born," and having lived in Brooklyn only since July, 1856; we do not pretend to impose this chapter upon our readers as *our* "personal recollections." It is, in fact, the result of long and careful study, in which we have been largely aided by the manuscript notes of Brooklyn's first historian, Gabriel Furman, who had a singularly rare appreciation of those things most valuable in a local history; by the reminiscences, both oral and in manuscripts of Nathaniel F. Waring, Esq., upon whose memory the events of the past seem to be photographed with peculiar tenacity and clearness; and by numerous conversations with, and examinations of maps, etc., belonging to Mr. H. E. Pierrepont and Mr. Silas Ludlam. To these gentlemen, as well as other parties (ladies included) whom we have consulted in the preparation of this chapter, we return our thanks for their kind furtherance, in every possible way, of our difficult and somewhat presumptuous attempt to effect this restoration of "Brooklyn in the Olden Time."

Brooklyn, as seen from the New York side of the river, during the first third of the present century, presented features of simple rural beauty, strongly in contrast with its present imposing aspect. Around the "Old (now Fulton) Ferry," there was a clustering of houses, taverns, stables and shanties, which had grown up since the earliest establishment of a ferry at that point, and which formed the nucleus of a considerable business activity. From the ferry-slip (with its horse-boat, its one steamboat and its row-boat accommodations; but, with no such accommodation as the present ferry-house affords, and with no bell save the resonant throat of the ferryman), the old country road, the "king's highway" of the colonial and revolutionary periods, straggled crookedly upward and backward, out past the old Dutch church, out through Bedford Corners, and away beyond Jamaica, even to Montauk Point; being, in fact, the great highway of travel of Long Island itself. As far as the junction of this old road (now Fulton street), with the new road (now Main street), which came up from the "New Ferry" (as it was even then called, although it had been established some twenty years), it was tolerably well lined with buildings of various shapes and sizes. Pert looking Yankee frame edifices rudely intruded their angularities among the humpbacked Dutch houses quaintly built of stone, or with small imported Holland bricks. Yet one and all wore such an unpretentious and neighborly look, under the brooding shadows of the noble trees, with which the village abounded, that it was plainly evident, even to the most casual observer, that no premonition of the future greatness, so soon to be thrust upon them, had as yet disturbed the minds of their occupants.

Less than a quarter of a mile to the *left* of the "Old Ferry" was the "New Ferry," to Catherine street, New York, and the road (or present Main street), which led from it up the hill till it met the "Old Ferry road" (now Fulton street), was beginning to show a respectable number of frame buildings; all, however, of comparatively recent origin. Beyond this ferry and street, the land stretched northwardly (broken by McKenzie's, Vinegar, and other considerable hills), to the verge of the Wallabout bay, where John Jackson had a ship-yard, and eight or ten houses for workmen. Adjacent to this was the infant United States Navy Yard (established in 1801); while beyond, along the curving shore of the bay, were the farms of the Johnsons, Schenckes, Remsens, Boerums, and others.

On the *right* of the Old Ferry, and with an abruptness which, even at this day, is scarce concealed by the streets and buildings covering it, rose the northernmost corner, or edge of that portion of the present city known as "The Heights," stretching southwardly to near the foot of the present Joralemon street. The face and brow of this noble bluff were covered with a beautiful growth of cedar and locust, while its base was constantly washed by the waves of the East river. From its summit, the land stretched away, in orchards, gardens and pasture, out to the old highway (Fulton street). The red men, who first roamed over this spot, named it in their expressive language "Ihpetonga," or "the high sandy bank," and it must have been a favorite place of resort with them, if we may judge from the large quantities of stone arrows and other implements, in every stage of manufacture, which used formerly to be found here after the washing of the river banks by storms, or heavy rains. To the early villagers, it was known as "Clover Hill" and its owners,[1] at the time of which we write, Messrs. Cary Ludlow, the Hickses, Waring, Kimberly, Middagh, De Bevoises, Pierrepont and Joralemon, resided upon their respective farms in a state of semi-seclusion, almost prophetic of that social aristocracy, which has since claimed "The Heights" as exclusively its own. Yet, in the memory of some yet living among us, the brown freestone glories of these latter days can never eclipse the simpler natural beauties of the "Clover Hill" of their boyhood. From this elevated plateau, the eye rested upon a panoramic scene of unsurpassed beauty; the city of New York, with its glorious bay; Staten

---

[1] The owners of *water front* between Red Hook and the Wallabout, in 1810, were John Doughty, David Seaman, Tunis Joralemon, Ralph Patchen, Samuel Jackson, Thos. Everit, Geo. Hicks, W. Thompson, Gideon Kimberly, Joel Bunce, John Garrison, W. Cornell, Hicks Bro's, Joshua Sands, John Cornell, Fernandus Suydam, H. B. Pierrepont, J. & R. De Bevoise, James Thompson, John Jackson, Henry Remsen and Cary Ludlow.

Island, with the numerous lesser islands studding the bosom of the harbor; the Jersey shore, with the Orange mountains in the background; further to the southward was Red Hook with its old mills; the scattered farm-houses nestled around the bay; Yellow Hook, and the forest slopes of Greenwood.

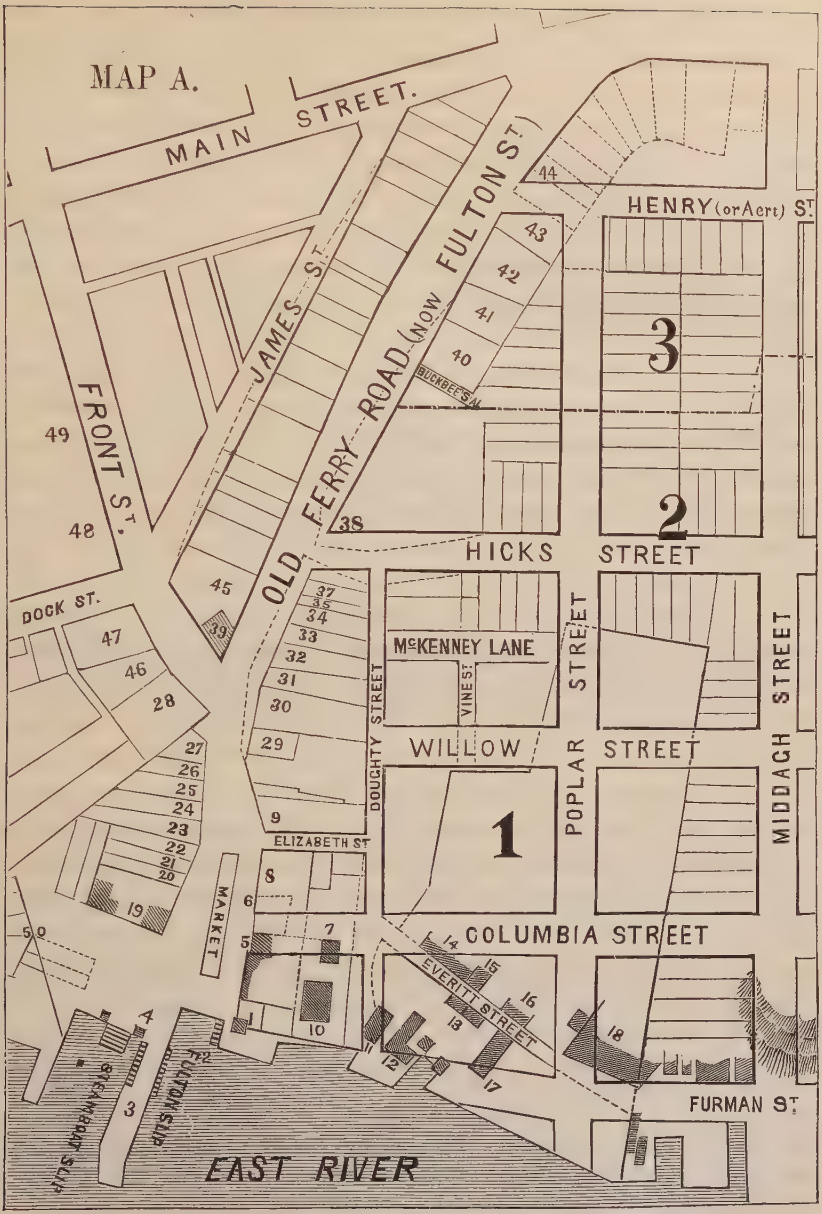
Such then, was the *external* view of the village and town of Brooklyn which the reader might have obtained in the year of our Lord, 1815. And, if this "birds-eye view" should, perchance, only serve to whet the edge of that curiosity which we trust each of our readers possesses concerning the city of his residence; we shall be happy to *cicerone* him, to the best of our ability, in a more leisurely and minute inspection of those localities which have long since lost their identity by reason of the many metamorphoses incident to the expansion of the modern city. This we can best accomplish in a series of imaginary walks or excursions through the town, as well as the incorporated village.

The Village.

Our first walk will be *along the old highway* (now Fulton street) *as far as the present City Hall.*

We commence, of course, at the "Old Ferry" landing, which (as seen by reference to "Map of Brookland Ferry," page 311, first volume) was then situated much farther inland and somewhat to the southward of the present lower ferry-slip. On one side of the dock (Map A, 3) were steps for the accommodation of the wherry, or row-boat passengers; while, on the other, or upper side, the larger boats or scows landed their freight, and after the steam-boat was placed on the ferry, it was known as the "steam-boat slip."

Some fifty or sixty feet from the slip was a flag-staff, or liberty pole, of which Burdet Stryker, the butcher, who occupied a stand in the neighboring market building, was the acknowledged custodian, "and," says Col. De Voe (*Historical Magazine*, second series, II, 346), "on all proper occasions the stars and stripes were flung to the breeze, in a most ceremonious style. While the liberty pole existed, the town and village were satisfied that he should remain its custodian. In the course of time, the old or



MAP OF THE OLD FERRY DISTRICT OF THE VILLAGE, IN 1816.

(The dotted lines designate old roads, lots and estates. Figure 1, the Ludlow Estate ; Fig. 2, the Hicks Estate ; Fig. 3, the Middagh Estate. The smaller figures are referred to in the text.)

first liberty pole became much decayed, and it was thought dangerous, when Stryker appealed to the Brooklynites to have it replaced with a new one. Many responded very liberally; yet there was a deficiency, or not enough collected to obtain such an one as would be a credit to the village. There were many residents who belonged to the "Society of Friends," and were opposed to liberty poles; and they would not subscribe. However, Stryker thought that all the patriotism had not left the heart of his old "boss," Thomas Everit, and he appealed to him. Friend Everit at once told him that he was opposed to liberty poles; but, at the same time, he would give ten dollars to assist in *taking down* the old one. This, indeed, was a new idea, which Stryker afterwards advanced towards some others who held the same views as his old "boss," so that, in the end, sufficient was furnished to save a second subscription from Stryker and the friends of the new liberty pole."

In the middle of the street, about fifty or sixty feet east of the flagstaff, stood the old market, a long, shabby, wooden structure, the head of which was about opposite Carll's stables, near Elizabeth street. It was slightly raised above the level of the street, had a rounding roof, and contained six stalls or stands, one of which is remembered to have been occupied by Burdet Stryker, another by John Doughty, another as a fish stand, etc. The locality was a sort of rendezvous for all the butchers, of whom, from time immemorial, there had been a large number resident in Brooklyn.[1] Many of them had their slaughter houses near by;

---

[1] In the year 1645, Paulus van der Beeck appears; in 1654, Roelef Jansen; in 1656, William Harck and Thomas Willet; in 1660, Pieter Jansen; in 1707, James Harding; in 1715, Evardus Brower; in 1720, the brothers Israel and Timothy Horsfield; followed by the sons of Israel; in 1735, Samuel Hopson; in 1743, John and Benjamin Carpenter; in 1755, Whitehead Cornell and his sons, John, William, Whitehead, junior, and Benjamin; also the brothers Sedam or Suydam; in 1756, Thomas Everit and his sons, William, Thomas, junior, and Richard; together with Matthew Gleaves; in 1760, John Doughty and his son, John, junior: in 1774, George Powers and Jotham Post; in 1780, John Garrison and his three sons John F., Jacob, and Thomas, together with Gersham Ludlow; in 1790, Burdet Stryker and his sons; after whom came Abiel Titus and his sons; David Seaman, Jacob Patchen, Ralph Patchen, Jesse Coope, Israel Reynolds, John Raynor, William Foster, Michael Trappel, and many others.—*Devoe.*

and every morning came down to the ferry stairs with their wheelbarrow loads of nicely dressed meats, which they trundled aboard the boats, barrows and all, and were ferried over to the city where they had stands in the "Fly Market." The old market, also, was the great resort of the sportive blacks, who formed no inconsiderable portion of the population of Brooklyn, at that early day. They were much employed by the butchers and others, and were fat, sleek and happy fellows, generally on the best of terms with their masters and "all the world beside," and full to overflowing of the waggery and tricks for which the Dutch negroes have always been noted. At the market, also, these negroes celebrated their annual "Pinkster" holiday, which corresponded to their masters' "Paas" festival. "Paas," now almost obsolete and kept in remembrance only by a little childish egg cracking, occurred on Easter and Easter Monday, and was a "high day" among the Dutch, who feasted and rollicked to their heart's content. But, as it was evidently impolitic to allow the negroes the opportunity of being "elevated" on the same day with their masters, who were apt to need their *sober* services and attention, the following Monday (Whitsuntide) was allowed to the slaves as their especial festival. It was, indeed, their annual saturnalia, The village was fairly black with them; they came trooping into Brooklyn from the island, men, women and children, sometimes as many as two hundred. They danced for eels around the market; they sang; "tooted" on fish horns; played practical jokes on one another; and, everywhere, throughout the village, might be heart the cackle of obstreperous laughter by which the negro is wont to give relief to his overplus of happiness. In short, "Pinkster" was a scene of the broadest good humor—where every sort of common game and of uncommon drollery was in requisition, and drinking was by no means neglected. As a necessary consequence of "Pinkster," the negroes generally got "as jolly drunk as lords," and on the following morning as many as twenty-five or thirty would usually be brought up before old Squire Nicolls on a charge of "disorderly conduct." The squire, however, knowing that "Pinkster" came but once a year, and appreciating the peculiar weaknesses of the negro character, always treated the culprits with leniency; and, summarily confiscating whatever funds remained in their pockets after their "spree," dismissed them until such time as the recurrence of their annual festival should again bring them under his judicial notice.[1]

"In regard to Paas," an old Brooklynite writes us that "its observance as a day for the cracking of eggs was kept up with great vigor in Brooklyn, until about 1830. Boys were to be observed on the corners of the streets, carrying their winnings in their hats and trying the hardness of the eggs upon their teeth. The eggs were often boiled and colored, although this latter process did not improve their hardness. Goose eggs and guinea-hen's eggs were sometimes used clandestinely, or to deceive the uninitated; and the excitement of this small gambling is remembered to have equaled, in a small way, that to be witnessed at the gold board in Broad street, New York."

To return to the market, however. The old building finally became so dilapidated as to be considered a nuisance, and was torn down one night, in 1814, by a party of young men and boys. It was a public institution, and the "market fees" were always collected by *William Furman*, one of the overseers of the poor, and who occupied a large double frame house, (Map A, 1) with a long, high piazza in front, which stood upon the site of the present City Rail Road Company's elegant edifice. The house then stood right in front of the ferry stairs, which led down on the lower side of the slip; and, in the basement nearest the water, Mr. Furman kept an oyster house, where, for the moderate charge of *twelve and a half cents*, one could be furnished with as many fine roasted oysters as he could eat at a sitting. Adjoining the western side of Furman's house, on the corner of the beach under the Heights (now Furman street), was a small shanty kept as a sort of opposition fish and oyster house, by another Furman.

---

[1] The five holidays of the Dutch were Christmas (*Kersdydt*) New Year's (*Niewe jar*); Saint Nicholas or Christ-Kinkle's (*San Claes*') day; Easter (*Paas*) and Whitsuntide (*Pinkster*, or *Pinxter*). Those who would like to understand more fully the eccentricities and history of "Pinkster" will find a very full account of its celebration among the Albany negroes in *Munsell's Historical Collections of Albany*, II; *Cooper's Novel* "*Satanstoe*" also gives an animated description of the "Pinkster" in New York city, during the colonial times. The festival then extended over three days.

William Furman, or "Judge Furman," as he was generally called, was of a Newtown family, and came to Brooklyn, just after the revolution. He was one of the founders of "New (or Catherine street) ferry;" first judge of the county, from 1808 to 1823; a trustee of the village, in 1817; supervisor for several years; a member of the state legislature, in 1827; president of the Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company, incorporated in 1824, and was, in various other ways, honorably identified with the interests of the place. He is said to have been "a warm friend of Gov. Clinton, and the canal policy, a man of great constancy and warm affections." He died on the 18th of October, 1852, in his 87th year, having been confined to his house for many years previous, by debility.

His son, Gabriel Furman, Esq., a talented lawyer and historian of Brooklyn, was born in the house which we have described, in the first month of the present century; and, upon the completion of his earlier studies, read law with Elisha W. King, Esq., of New York, whose office he entered in 1823, and with whom he was a favorite student. Here he developed qualities of steadiness, method and good analytical powers; well suited, in the opinion of eminent lawyers, to the successful practice of his profession. From his father's social position, also, young Furman secured, to a very large degree, the confidence of the Dutch families and of the old residents of that day, and might easily have risen, by their help, to wealth, as he evidently did to an excellent position at the bar. In 1820, he was the originator of a debating society in the village, and, in 1824, at the request of his fellow citizens, he gave the fourth of July oration, at the Dutch church in Joralemon street. In 1827, Gov. Clinton appointed him a justice of the municipal court of Brooklyn, then just established, which office he held for three years. In November, 1838, he was elected to the senate of the state, and served during four consecutive years, his record being marked by ability and industry, and by several statesmanlike and excellent speeches on matters of public policy. In 1841, he delivered two very valuable lectures, on the *Discoveries of the Northmen*, and on *Aboriginal Remains in America*, before appreciative audiences, in Brooklyn, New York, Albany, and other large cities of the state. In 1842, he was an unsuccessful candidate, on the whig ticket, for lieutenant governor of the state. But the bright promise of his earlier life was never fulfilled. He began to manifest irregularities and infirmities, which pained and astonished his friends, and which, no doubt, had their source in the use of opium, which he had begun to use in very small quantities during the cholera summer of 1832. Without going into detail, we may say that all personal ambition seems to have died out; his law business became sadly neglected. Always retiring and secluded in his habits, he gradually became unsocial, buried himself among his books and manuscripts, or hid himself in out of the way nooks and corners, where the eyes of even his one or two intimate friends could not find him. Friends and clients, of course, became estranged, business fell away, public opinion, ever uncharitable to what it cannot understand, said harsh things about the erratic scholar, whose ways were past finding out, and whose inattention to his business was not only annoying to his clients, but imperiling their interests. Finally, his mood became somewhat more reckless, his property passed away, his family were left without the protection of a roof, his sister and aged father were left helpless and dependent upon others, his much loved books passed under the sheriff's hammer, and, his own misused life went out amid clouds and darkness, Nov. 11th, 1854, in the City Hospital. Yet Furman was in no sense a vicious man. The pernicious influence of the lethean drug, combined with an *overweening love of study for its own sake*, seem to have benumbed his sense of duty and of responsibility to the community, to his family, and to himself; and, in the grateful seclusion of his study, he became selfishly forgetful of all outside realities. What this feeling was, we may, perhaps, best learn from the following extracts from his manuscript memoranda, in earlier life:

"As to politics and contest for office, they are entirely dissimilar to my habits of feeling and very unpleasant, and nothing but an imperious sense of duty to my country would ever induce me to enter at all into them, or to have any sort of connection with them. My wish would be, if possible to be attained, to pass my life as a literary man, and a humble inquirer into the history of my country, never to mingle in political life, never to hold an office of any kind, but quietly to while away my time among my books and papers; and when it pleased the Almighty Disposer of all events to call me hence, to lay my head upon the pillow of death in peace with all men. There is nothing on earth to compare, in the least degree, with the joy and comfort, which attends literary research, with the inward satisfaction, which results from a day thus spent. It strikes me that a man truly literary can never be immoral." Again, speaking of the love of books, "It is a passion which gains strength by what it feeds on, and affords an unalloyed pleasure, far, very far, transcendentally far, beyond what can be afforded by any other pursuit in this life. It also renders a man, to a great extent, independent of the world for his happiness, and enjoyments. Society with its pleasures is not with him as it is with thousands, everything. He has another world, unaffected by toils and troubles, in which there are no storms nor tempests, but everything is peace, calm and sunshine; an eternal spring and summer, having at once the promise and the fruition." These sentiments bespeak the enthusiastic and pure minded scholar; but, alas, as we have seen, the promise of *his* spring-time and summer never reached its full fruition. Yet there remains enough of the results of his labor, to make us thankful that he once lived among us. In the library of the Long Island Historical Society, is a little row of bound volumes of manuscript, fairly transcribed in his own clerkly chirography, and comprising almost every conceivable topic of curiosity, or inquiry, from the most scientific to the most absurd and trivial, all thrown together without order in a perfect chance-medley. Yet, amid this mighty mass of miscellaneous matter, which curiously illustrates the scope and composition of his mind, Furman, fortunately for us, carefully jotted down all that occurred to his observation in the elementary condition and progress of his native city. In the well chosen words of one of his most intimate earlier friends, to whom we are indebted for most that is known about him, " his mind early turned towards its characters, traditions, revolutionary reminiscences, and the facts of its earlier settlement and population, agriculture and trade. He seemed to have an intuitive and prophetic sagacity as to the importance of describing, recording and fixing the dates of many things of his own time, which could change with progress and be forgotten. The minuteness of some of these details may look like folly and simplicity, but still the better critics will admit that they go to make up his reputation as an antiquarian of the best character, who knew that these details would be the very things that posterity would delight in. Already, in the rapid march of population for the past thirty years, since Brooklyn assumed the character of a city, the old buildings and landmarks have been swept away, and, but for Judge Furman's 'Notes,' published in 1824, it would be well-nigh impossible for us to trace the beginnings of our 'goodly heritage.' In person, Furman was of middle height, well formed, with fine, high forehead, and Roman features, strongly resembling the best portraits of Pascal, the eminent French philosopher and Christian. He was always neatly dressed, generally in frock-coat of dark greenish hue, with light pantaloons and vest, shoes with spatterdashes and a black fur hat, turned up at the side, and carefully brushed. His neck-tie, a little gay and ornamental, adding grace to his otherwise somewhat quaint and prim attire; and his *tout-ensemble* that of the polished gentleman, and suggestive also, of a scholar and antiquary."

Between Furman's house and the corner of the present Columbia street, there had originally been, in the early colonial times, a cattle-yard or enclosure, wherein were confined the cattle brought down from the island for sale in the New York markets, and which were often delayed, by stress of weather, from crossing the East river, for days together. It is probable that this cattle-yard (represented in the view of the Brookland Ferry House, in 1745, see *chapter* on *ferries*) originally extended to Doughty street, for we have evidence of there having been a public landing place at the foot of that street. On the site of this yard, adjoining to Furman's dwelling, there was, at the time of which we speak, a two-story frame house, with dormer windows and a long front stoop, occupied by John Bedell as a "stage-house" and grocery. Next to this (Map A, 5), was a very large brick stable, with slate roof, said to be the best on the island.

On the corner of the narrow lane, now called Elizabeth street, was a very old brick building (Map A, 8), of *ante*-revolutionary date, owned by John Carpenter and subsequently occupied by Daniel Mott as a tavern. Mott was burned out in January, 1814, by a great fire which involved some of his neighbors, between his place and the river, among whom were Thomas Everit and John Bedell. After this, for many years, the ground was occupied by a temporary structure used as a grocery until the erection (about 1832) of the brick edifice known from that day to the present as "Carll's stables."

Across the lane, stood the old stone tavern (Map A, 9) to which Benjamin Smith removed after he was burned out of the "Corporation house," on the opposite side of the road (Fulton street) in 1812.[1] It was a two-story stone edifice, of about fifty feet front, with its bar and sitting room on the corner next the lane, and a sign, swinging before the door, proclaimed it to be "*The Traveller's Inn. By Benjamin Smith.*" It was afterwards known as "Smith[2] and Woods," and, at a later date still, was kept by Samuel Birdsell, the father of our venerable fellow citizen Mr. Thos. W. Birdsell. It was a noted stopping place for the Long Island Quakers when they came to Brooklyn. At times, it was said, as many as a hundred and fifty horses munched their oats, stamped their feet and whisked away the flies, in the stables of this inn, and great was its fame among the "broad brims." It was, also, the place of deposit for the New York newspapers, which were brought over in small boats, and left here for delivery to subscribers; for, in that day, the post office confined its operations simply to the transmission of letters. To "Ben. Smith's," therefore, the village urchins were wont to resort, on their way home from school, for the papers which were anxiously awaited by their parents. Nor—when they had obtained the desired paper—did they linger around the bar-room; for, in those "good old-fashioned days," *boys* were made to understand that such places were no fit places for *them*. Next above Smith's was James W. Burtis's feed store (Map A, 29); and a tavern (also Map A, 29) kept by Martin Boerum, a son of an old citizen of Brooklyn, who owned a large farm near the Wallabout. Upon his father's death, Martin assumed the charge of his patrimonial farm, and sold out his tavern stand to John Hunter, a rough, jovial man, who (by virtue of having formerly been a member of the "Horse artillery" of the county) emblazoned upon his sign the rude delineation of a mounted artilleryman, above the words "Hunter's hotel." Of course, his stand became the general "headquarters" for many of his old comrades and military acquaintances when they came down from the island. Landlord Hunter's joviality frequently took the form of practical jokes; and it was an exaggerated offer of purchase made by him to Jacob Patchen, as if in earnest, which formed the ground of an affidavit upon which the first valuation of the celebrated plot in Market street, was set aside and a new appraisemout had, in that tough and famous litigation. Like his neighbor Smith, Hunter was a prominent member of the Masonic order in the village.

---

[1] *Ante*, p. 9. [2] Valentine Smith, yet living, and for many years a resident of Hempstead.

Next to Hunter's, and about opposite to Front street, was Selah Smith's tavern (Map A, 30), double frame building, erected

---

[1] At the period when this old house was built, and for many years after, down to about 1805, nothing but oak was used for the frames of dwellings, even of wood. Pine was not then thought of for that purpose; and, in the construction of brick and stone houses, the lime used, was generally made from burning oyster shells; and the mortar was *carefully* made, with a large quantity of this lime, in the

in 1780, and framed entirely of oak, even to the rafters.[1] *Furman's Manuscripts* record (in 1824), that "in digging the cellar of this house, a large rock was found, in endeavoring to sink which, it slipped, and one of the workmen fell under it and there his bones remain to the present day," which legend, of course, gives to that building and its present successor an indubitable right to have a ghost of its own.

Along the easterly side of the tavern ran the alley leading to the stables in the rear, and the gateway at its entrance, was spanned by a huge arch, formed of a whale's jaw-bones, and painted *blue.* Selah Smith, died in the early part of the year 1819, and the business was continued by his widow, Ann. Adjoining the other side of the alley, was the ancient, two-story, brick building, with a very high stoop (Map A, 31), occupied as a residence by Burdet Stryker, tallow chandler and butcher, his shop being in the basement.

He was the son of Hendrik Stryker, a native of Brooklyn, and was born in the city of New York, on the 11th of February, 1769. He served his apprenticeship with that good old Quaker butcher, Thomas Everit, jr., near the Old Ferry, Brooklyn; and, on arriving of age set up for himself in the village where he continued in business during his life time. His slaughter-house was, at first, in Doughty street, and he had a stand (No. 60) in the old Fly market, New York, for which, in 1796, he paid $210, and soon after took up the business of a tallow chandler, in Brooklyn. In 1822 his stand was at No. 80 Fulton market. In 1791, he married Hannah Waters, who died in 1797, and he then married Susan Roberts, widow of Isaac Remsen. In 1794, he was one of the eight firemen chosen by the citizens, at annual town meeting, to man the *new* fire engine, the second one in the infant fire department of Brooklyn. During the same year, he became identified with the establishment of Methodism in Brooklyn, being one of the board of trustees in the newly incorporated Methodist church in Sands street. In 1799, as we learn from the papers, "a gang of villains stole two horses from the stable of Burdet Stryker, of Brooklyn. One of these was a favorite

---

autumn, previous to building in the spring, then covered over with loam and left to stand in a heap through the winter; and it has been found, in taking down old houses constructed in this manner, about as easy to break the brick, or stone, as it was to separate them from the mortar.

horse which he kept for the saddle, and occasionally to parade with when ordered out with the Brooklyn Troop of Horse." He was much interested in military matters, being, also, the captain of the village militia company, the "Republican rifles," which subsequently, during the war of 1812, volunteered, and performed a tour of duty at New Utrecht, with much credit. He was an ardent politician of the old Jeffersonian school, and a member of the celebrated "Tammany Society, or Columbian order," being one of the "Wallabout committee," appointed in 1808, to make arrangements for the sepulture of the marytrs of the prison ships, at the Wallabout.[1] Subsequently, he left the democratic ranks and warmly espoused the cause of De Witt Clinton, with whom he was on terms of considerable intimacy. His old political friends relate, with much gusto, several amusing anecdotes about him, especially of his peculiar aversion to the practice of "splitting tickets," against which he was wont to inveigh with great warmth, insisting, in his sputtering Dutch way, that folks "should take de tail, mit de hide." It was, however, in the benevolent aspects of his life and character that Burdet Stryker was best appreciated and remembered by those who knew him. On the several occasions when Brooklyn was visited by the dreaded yellow fever, and, also, on the occurrence of small-pox, he distinguished himself by his fearless, patient and thorough devotion to the sick. When friends and family fled from the touch of the pestilence, then Burdet Stryker appeared at the bedside of the sufferer, and, regardless of color, social position, and condition, he nursed them tenderly as if they had been his own "kith and kin;" and, if needs be, as frequently happened, he performed the last sad offices and buried them with his own hands. No case, however deplorable, failed to enlist his sympathy; no remonstrance ever deterred him from his self-imposed ministrations of duty; and he even insisted upon his sons, especially Mr. (ex-mayor) F. B. Stryker, accompanying him upon these errands of benevolence, saying to the neighbors who remonstrated with him "I cannot always be here, and I want my lads to know about the disease, and to learn how to be useful to the sick." That these bedside lessons of personal courage and practical Christianity were not wasted, has been amply evidenced by the subsequent career of these boys, now grown to years and to position in the confidence and respect of their fellow citizens. In personal appearance he is strongly resembled by his son, F. B. Stryker, although not quite so tall as the latter. He was erect, alert in movement, plain in manner and dress, honest of purpose, easy and blunt in conversation; in short, a sort of "rough diamond." He died February 1st, 1825.

---

[1] Col. De Voe says of Mr. Stryker's connection with this movement (*Historical Magazine, second series,* II, 346): "A grand celebration took place on the fourth of July, 1804, when all the uniform corps, consisting of the Brooklyn Troop of Horse, Republican Riflemen, Artillery, Washington Fusileers and the Rising Sun Company, formed on Brooklyn Heights, where they performed various evolutions, under Col. Jeremiah Johnson. In the afternoon the officers dined together, and among the toasts offered on that occasion, was 'Those hardy sons of freedom, who died on board the *Jersey* prison ship; their bones have severally had a grave, while their patriotism has merited a monument; may their memory be held in the highest veneration, until the end of time.' Whether it was this toast then offered, or the daily conversation on the same subject, but from that moment, Stryker became very much interested in the matter. Being somewhat patriotic and liberally disposed, with feelings strongly in favor of 'old fashioned republicanism' which cause he was ready at all times to advance, without seeking rewards or office, he, with Benjamin Romaine, John Jackson and others, became colaborers in getting up a grand procession, and in removing the bones of the martyrs from the Wallabout," to the vault in Jackson street.

We will now cross Fulton street and examine the buildings on its *northerly side, between the river and Front street.*

By reference to the "Map of Brookland Ferry in 1766 – 7 and 1867" (page 311 of our first volume), the reader will perceive that, as late even as the close of the revolutionary period, the high water mark of the East river, *north* of the ferry, extended nearly up to the westerly line of Front street. They will, also, see that the nearest building to the river, on the northerly side of the Old Ferry road (Fulton street), was the Ferry tavern, or "Corporation House," which has been fully described in our previous volume.[1] Between it and the ferry stairs, during the revolutionary period, there was a frame building, together with a barn for stabling, both of which were enclosed within the tavern yard. After the close of the war, Capt. Adolph Waldron, the former occupant, returned from the exile to which his political principles had forced him, and resumed his ferry and tavern leases, which he carried on for some years thereafter, being succeeded in 1789, by Capt. Henry Dawson, one of the three new ferrymen, that year appointed by the corporation of New York.

Henry Dawson was a native of Dublin, Ireland; of good family; and at one time a major in the British army. He came to this country about

---

[1] Vol. I, pp. 311, 444; see, also, "View of Old Ferry House, in 1748," in chapter on Ferries.

1760, and married for his first wife a Miss Coombs, of Jamaica, L. I., and for his second wife, a sister of Gen. Jacob Morton, for twenty-six years the clerk of the common council of the city of New York. Mr. Dawson resided in Brooklyn, near the Old Ferry, in Doughty street, and (retaining all the sportsmanlike tastes of his early life), he kept a pack of dogs, as well as hunting steeds, with which he frequently took "a brush" in the country around the village of Brooklyn. He held the ferry until his death in 1808.[1]

The tavern is next found in the hands of Capt. Benjamin Smith, who was burned out, as before stated, in 1812.[2] But, at the period of which we speak, the block between the ferry and Front street, had been much extended by filling in, and its appearance totally changed by the erection of a line of buildings, mostly occupied by stores, taverns and stables.

Standing, then, at the ferry slip, we notice, upon the site of the "ladies sitting room," in the present ferry house, a small shanty (Map A, 4), built and occupied by Daniel Wright, as an oyster saloon, his oysters being conveniently kept fresh in the water which flowed beneath.

To the north, or left of this shanty, the original beach appeared; while on the corner now occupied by Marston & Powers' extensive coal yard (Map A, 50), was originally Richard Mott's livery and tavern, afterwards kept successively by Townsend & Cox, Joel Conklin, and Daniel Wright, and it was a general stopping place for the *habitues* of the ferry.

Opposite, on the easterly side of Water street, and on land owned by the corporation of New York, was a block of four buildings, all under one roof, and fronting on Fulton street. The corner one (Map A, 19), now "The Franklin House," was originally a tavern kept by Captain King, and afterwards by Mr. Barnum, subsequently the proprietor of the widely known and popular "Barnum's Hotel," in the city of Baltimore. He was succeeded by Abiather Young, who kept here "The Steamboat Hotel," and he, in turn, was followed by Gerardus C. Langdon.

---

[1] Henry Dawson, Jr., son of the above, was born in Jamaica, in 1771, and married Miriam, a niece of Elias Hicks, the Quaker preacher. He lived in Doughty street in Brooklyn, and continued the ferry, after his father's death, up to 1810 or '12. He was more enthusiastic in sporting matters, even, than his father, and it was said of him, that "he had not a bone in his body, which had not, at one time or another, been broken" by the falls and accidents he had experienced in his favorite diversion. He had sons, Jacob H. (who is now a patent-leather manufacturer in Newark, N. J.); Staats; George and John; and a grandson, Rodman B. Dawson, who was surrogate of Kings county, in 1855, 1856, 1857, and 1858.

[2] *Ante*, p. 9.

LANGDON, had, from 1816 to 1822, kept the "Steamboat Hotel" in South street near the ferry, in New York city, and, removing to Brooklyn, opened a grocery store next door above Young, who was his brother-in-law, and whom he subsequently succeeded. He was a jovial, talkative man, and most grievously tormented with gout, which had so crippled his feet as to oblige him, in his later years, to use almost constantly a wheeled chair to get around in. Many funny anecdotes connect themselves with "Gerardy," one of which we may venture to relate. Langdon, who was an original stockholder in the steamboat ferry, was one day obliged to go over to New York on business connected therewith, and made an arrangement with Bob ——, the somewhat bibulous son of an esteemed citizen of the village, to "tend bar" for him during his absence. His instructions to Bob were that he should not drink more than one glass of liquor for every three that he sold. On "Gerardy's" return, however, the bar was found, to all appearances, tending itself, and Bob as gloriously *befuddled*, as he could well be. Langdon's first look was into his money till, and finding, to his surprise, that it only contained eighteen pence (the price of three drinks, in those days), he incontinently "pitched into" the somnolent defaulter with a "Why! Bob, how's this? You're drunk as a fool, and only three drinks in the drawer! Did'nt I tell you to take only one drink for every three you sold?" "No — no — no," replied drowsy Bob, rubbing his eyes confusedly, "N — o — o, I did'nt take it quite that way. I thought you said I could drink *three* drinks to every *one* I sold."

In the upper part of the hotel was a large ball room, where entertainments was given, and where many an old Brooklynite learned to "shake the light fantastic toe," under the able instruction of Mr. Whale, dancing master. In this room, also, Elias Hicks, the celebrated Quaker preacher, frequently held forth to large audiences, of all denominations, who were always attracted to his preaching.

Next above "Gerardy" Langdon's, was Coe S. Downing's tavern (Map A, 20), and stage house. Its immense sign, projecting over the sidewalk, attracted much attention from strangers, not only from its size, but from its peculiar inscription, which at least one English traveler has immortalized by inserting, *verbatim et literatim*, in his printed travels:[1]

COE S. DOWNING'S STAGE
& LIVERY STABLE.
HORSES AND CARRIAGES TO BE LET.
FLAT-BUSH AND BATH — HEMPSTEAD — JERUSALEM — HEMPSTEAD HARBOUR — COW NECK — WESTBURY — MUSQUETOE COVE — JERICHO — OYSTER BAY — HUNTINGTON — EASTWOODS — DIXHILL — BABYLON AND ISLIP, STAGE HOUSE.

Upon the stoop under this gigantic sign-board, with its curious medley of island names, Downing could be seen, at almost every hour of the day, comfortably seated in a chair adapted to his especial use; for he was as big as his sign, a Daniel Lambert of a man, to whom quiescence was far easier than locomotion. But, if any one had imagined that "mine host's" intellect partook of the heaviness of his frame, they would have done him a serious injustice. He was vivacious, kindly hearted, intelligent and shrewd. He was originally a Quaker, from Jerusalem (where he was ultimately buried), and, therefore, naturally succeeded to much of the island patronage and stage business of old Ben. Smith's tavern, after that worthy's decease. He was a democrat of the "straightest sort," and, for many years, the leading politician of that party, in the county. Although somewhat too blindly obedient to party lines, he was, nevertheless, universally esteemed to be honest, conscientious and reliable — qualities which commended him to his fellow citizens whom he served acceptably in both houses of the state legislature, as well as in the board of supervisors and as a judge of the municipal court in Brooklyn.

The next building (Map A, 21) was the liquor and grocery store of old Mr. Evert Barkeloo; and, as a modest little sign over the door announced, the "office of the trustees of the town of Brooklyn," of which body Mr. B. was clerk.

---

[1] *Capt. Basil Hall's Travels in the United States*, I, 14.

Next door (Map A, 22) was Thomas Burroughs', the harness maker; and, next to him, was Samuel Carman's tavern (Map A, 23), much patronized by island folks of the rougher sort, among whom "Sammy" was an oracle, especially in regard to "horse" matters. A covered alley between his hotel and his next neighbor on the east gave entrance to the tavern stables in the rear. Next him was the shop of Samuel Penny, (Map A, 24) whose sign of "merchant *barber*" burlesqued that of his next door neighbor Peter Prest (Map A, 25), the "merchant tailor." On Penny's place "Sheriff" John T. Bergen afterwards built and kept a grocery store. Adjoining Prest's was the wholesale grocery (Map A, 26), of Messrs. J. & S. Schenck, occupying the site of the old "Corporation," or Ferry house.

It will be seen, by reference to the "map of Brookland ferry," in our first volume (p. 311), that the angling position of the "Corporation house" left, on the westerly corner of the present Front and Fulton streets, a "gore" between it and the stone mansion of John Rapalje.[1] On this vacant space, was subsequently erected an engine house for the accommodation of the first fire engine introduced into the town. The town's fire-bell was swung upon the roof of the adjoining Rapalje house (Map A, 28), then occupied by Mr. Abraham Remsen, who in return for the accommodation was granted all the privileges and immunities belonging to the firemen; a courtesy which was no more than just, inasmuch as tradition says, that he was the *only* man in the place who was willing to accept the risk of having his slumbers disturbed by the clanging of the bell over his head.

---

[1] Gen. Johnson, in a manuscript communication to the board of village trustees dated Oct. 17, 1833, after describing the location of the Corporation house, further states, on authority of Chas. Doughty, and Fernandus Suydam, Esqs., men of respectability (who assisted in building the mansion house of John Rapalje, and of course were well acquainted with the grounds contiguous to the ferry), and Lambert Suydam, of Bedford," that "between the yard occupied by Waldron, and the house, and land of John Rapalje there then was a road running to the river, to a public landing, whereat a public slaughter house for the butchers of the town was erected;" that during the occupation of the British (1776–1784), this "road was shut up by the persons, who occupied the Corporation house, or by John Rapalje, or by both parties," and that "after the evacuation of the county, by the British, the road and landing place above stated remained in the enclosure of the Corporation of New York (i. e., of the Corporation house), or of Comfort and Joshua Sands," who purchased it after its confiscation, but who "are not chargeable with voluntarily closing the road, etc., the shore of their possession remaining open in its whole distance for three or four years." Gen. Johnson, furthermore, says: "the statements of these gentlemen are corroborated by the *record* of a road diverging from the main road in Brooklyn, to a public landing place on the south side of the dock of Hendrick Hendrickson, against the East river. If this landing be not *north* of the Fulton ferry, then, in my opinion, it must be at a place where the road, or lane now called Love Lane formerly ran down to the river, etc."

The Rapalje house (Map A, 28, and No 2, "Map of Brookland Ferry,"[1] first volume), has been already described. It passed into the hands of Mr. Abraham Remsen, above mentioned, who demolished it and used a portion of the stone in the erection upon the same site of a brick and stone store and dwelling, where he kept dry goods and groceries. After his removal to Newtown, L. I., this brick building gave place to that occupied, for many years (until May, 1861), by the Long Island Insurance Company, and at present by the splendid building of the Long Island Safe Deposit Company.

Let us recross, now, to the

Southerly side of the Old Road (Fulton street), from opposite Front street to Middagh street.

Next above Burdet Stryker's, were some lots owned by the French church (*L'Eglise du Sainte Esprit*) of New York, on which were two or three small frame buildings. One of these (Map A, 32) adjoining Stryker's, was the residence of Henry Dawson, Jr., a ferryman, who kept one of the "sixpenny boats," as the row-boats were called, from the amount charged for ferriage; then (Map A, 33), the residence of John Simonson, a well known butcher; then (Map A, 34) a house occupied by the Misses Van Cleef, sisters of old Rulof Van Cleef, the ferryman. They were marketwomen, and acquired a comfortable property. Then (Map A, 35), was the shoe-shop of Isaac Van Nostrand, who used to say that he "could fit a man's foot, but he could not fit his eye;" then (Map A, 37), John Rusher, tin and wooden ware; and, on the corner of Hicks street, the low one and a half-story store of D. Pell, grocer; afterwards, in 1831, fitted up as a drug store for Dr. James W. Smith, by his village friends.

---

[1] Vol. I, p. 78, 79, 312.

Here, crossing the then narrow mouth of Hicks street, we come (Map A, 38; and Fig. 5, in Map of Brookland Ferry, page 311, of first volume) to an ancient, roomy, low-roofed house, constructed of stone, roughly plastered over and shaded by two immense willow trees. This was the Hicks' mansion, in which resided two brothers, John M., and Jacob M. Hicks, who had inherited, through their mother, a fine portion of the original Middagh estate. Exempted, by the possession of ample means, from the necessity of engaging in business or active labor, they passed their lives in a quiet, leisurely manner, which gained for them, from their less fortunate neighbors, the appellation (distinguishing them from others of the same name in the village) of "the Gentlemen Hicks." John M. (known as "Milk" Hicks, from the fact that he sold milk) resided in the small frame house, still standing on the south-west corner of Hicks and Doughty streets. Jacob M. (generally called "Spitter" Hicks, from the habit he had of constantly expectorating) resided in the old mansion above referred to, on the wide front stoop of which he could often be seen sitting and enjoying the grateful shade of the venerable willows, looking placidly upon the passing travel, little dreaming, perhaps, of the improvements which were soon to change the entire aspect of the farm, and leave nought recognizable of it, except the old pump, (on present Hicks street, near the corner of Fulton), ever to be remembered as furnishing the villagers, "from time immemorial" with the best and purest drinking water to be found in Brooklyn. As will be seen by reference to fig. 5, Map of Brookland Ferry, in the first volume, the old house stood angling to the main road; and, when Hicks street was finally fully opened to Fulton street, the mansion fell before the inexorable *fiat* of the surveyor's level and chain. The Hicks' estate, as will be seen from Map "B," (and, also, Map "A," where it is designated by the large figure 2) comprised no small portion of "Clover Hill," as Brooklyn Heights were then termed. Tradition says, that the whole of this hill between Poplar, Hicks, Orange and Furman streets was used, during the revolutionary war as a burying ground for British soldiers and sailors, and was thickly covered with graves, which were all levelled off when the Hickses took possession at the close of the war.

Some years before the incorporation of the village, and in consequence of a dispute between the Hickses and their neighbor Aert Middagh as to the boundary line between their respective properties, the two estates were surveyed by Mr. Jeremiah Lott, of Flatbush, then the leading, if not the only, surveyor in Kings county. He surveyed and plotted the two estates in blocks two hundred feet square and "two feet thrown in for good measure" to each block. When the village of Brooklyn was incorporated, in 1816, Mr. Lott, who was employed to prepare a map of the same, proposed to carry out his survey, on the same scale as that of his previous plotting of these two estates. Mr. Hezekiah B. Pierrepont, whose large property on the Heights was also included within the limits of the proposed survey, wished to prevent this wasteful plan, and to secure one with wider streets (they were only forty feet wide) and larger blocks. He, therefore, employed, at his own expense, a competent Englishman, Thomas Poppleton by name, who was a city surveyor of New York, to make a plan for laying out the Heights. Poppleton surveyed all the village, from Fulton street to Jerolemon's lane, and made a map, still in existence, upon which all the streets, and the buildings, wharves, etc., which then existed, were laid down with great accuracy. On this map he laid out all the ground south of the Hicks and Middagh estates at Clark street,[1] in blocks four hundred and five hundred feet long, with streets fifty and sixty feet wide, and this plan, fortunately for Brooklyn, was adopted for that part of the village south of Clark street. At first, the Hickses poohed at what they considered Mr. Pierrepont's visionary plans; but, when, in due course of time, they saw the superior class of purchasers which his property secured, and the many advantages it presented, they began to appreciate his foresight, and, were candid enough to say so. Moreover, they abandoned the old stone-house, which they had so long occupied, and moving up Hicks street near to Clark, built there handsome houses for themselves, on the line of their old estate, and where they could enjoy the pleasanter surroundings due to their Yankee neighbor's broader streets, etc.[1]

---

[1] With characteristic energy and determination to succeed in whatever he undertook, Mr. Pierrepont induced Mr. Joel Bunce to purchase all the land he could, and as far as he could, on that street. Mr. Bunce, therefore, purchased as far as Cranberry street, and Hicks street was accordingly laid out to that point, fifty feet wide, according to the Poppleton plan. Having thus accomplished his purpose, Mr. Pierrepont sold out at an early day. The matter is thus referred to in his diary, under date of "March 30, 1816. Mr. Joel Bunce, at my instance, bought thirty-six lots on Hicks street, for £15 ($75) each, he to choose eight, the residue for my use." May, 5th, 1817, as we learn from the same diary, Hicks street was run and staked by Mr. Poppleton, Mr. Pierrepont having, in the meantime purchased the De Bevoise farm, between the Hicks's estate and his own.

After leaving the Hicks' mansion and garden we pass the places of Mrs. Thomas, who kept green-groceries, candy and *yeast* and was succeeded in the same business, by Mrs. Flowers; of John Cole, carriage maker, a very nice and highly respected old gentleman, the grandfather of the present Mr. James Cole, auctioneer; of Gilbert Reid, saddler, a most worthy citizen; of John McKenney, coachmaker (afterwards occupied by John Gildersleeve, in the same business), a very excellent, industrious man and an active Freemason. He discharged the functions of collector and constable in the town and village form any years; and in these offices he acquired considerable celebrity; then Mrs. Johnson's fruit and candy shop; John Bergen's shoe shop, subsequently Abraham Van Nostrand's, and this last brings us to "Buckbee's Alley" now "Poplar Place," the history of which we have given on page 378 of our first volume. Buckbee's store was on the easterly corner (Map A, 40), now occupied by "old Harry" Russel's ale shop. Directly in front of the store was the hay scales, upon which farmers, coming to the ferry to sell their hay, could drive their loads and have them weighed; and, at one time, upon the top of the hayscales, was hung the town's fire-bell. Buckbee sold *very* poor liquor, and himself and customers were no ornament to the society of the village.

---

[1] John M. Hicks built upon the corner of Hicks and Clark, and his brother Jacob M., on the corner of Hicks and Pine-apple streets. Both houses are yet standing, somewhat modernized, and in a fine state of preservation, the former (No. 99 Hicks) being the residence of Mr. Hippolyte Mali, and the latter (No. 90 Hicks) that of Mr. Thomas P. Hurlbut. Jacob Middagh (for both brothers bore their mother's maiden name as their own middle name) Hicks, had a son, Edwin, and two daughters, one of whom married Commodore S. H. Stringham, U. S. N., and the other James Hurlbut, of the firm of E. D. Hurlbut & Co., merchants of New York. John M. Hicks' children were a son, Edgar, who died in early manhood, and four daughters who married, respectively, James S. Clarke, Newbury Hewlett, Whitehead Cornell and Hippolyte Mali.

Next to him was the long, two-story house (Map A, 41) of Ogilvie, the cooper; then (Map A, 42) Stephen S. Voris's (formerly John Middagh's) hat store, and next, on the corner of the present Henry and Fulton street (Map A, 43, and fig. 6, "Map of Brookland Ferry," page 311, first volume) the old Middagh mansion, at this time occupied by Aert Middagh, the hatter. It was a very ancient two-story frame edifice, with high stoop, and a front door opening (by horizontal section, forming an upper and lower half) into a wide, generous hall. It stood angling to the road, and when Fulton street was widened, was moved back to the present line of that street. It was afterwards (about 1840) leased by Mr. James W. Peck, the hatter, who raised it up and placed three stores under it. In October, 1850, that part of the building on the corner was destroyed by fire, but the other half yet remains, retaining some of its old fashioned appearance, as I. D. McClasky's liquor store, No. 92 Fulton street. Mrs. Sarah Middagh, wife of Aert, was a most excellent woman, whose memory is intimately associated with the early history of St. Ann's Episcopal church, of which she was an honored member. Their eldest daughter, Magdalen, married Samuel B., son of Joshua Sands; and after his death she became the wife of Joshua March, son of Mr. Thomas March, of March & Benson, wine merchants, of New York. Another daughter, Mrs. William R. Gracie, is now living in this city.

In the rear of the mansion, on present corner of Henry and Poplar streets, was the Middagh barn, (Map of Brookland Ferry, first volume, Fig. 7), where, for a time, the Episcopalians of Brooklyn held their meetings. It was occupied for awhile, by Elizur Tompkins, and then by Mr. D. S. Quimby, who subsequently built a brick building upon this corner, having carried on the stove and range business here for nearly thirty years.

We are fortunately enabled to present our readers with a view of the old mansion and barn, as they appeared about 1843 or '44, taken from a painting made by the late James W. Peck, Jr., son of James W. Peck, the well known hatter, who, for so many years, has occupied the opposite corner, 98 Fulton street, where his sons still continue the business. The old pump, seen in the picture, was removed, and the well filled up during the summer of 1868.

On the present site of Peck's hat store (Map A, 44), on the easterly corner of Henry and Fulton streets, was a two-story frame house, occupied by the widow of Dirck Amerman, the ferryman, who died during the yellow fever season of 1809. Their son, John W. Amerman, a well known printer in New York city, is now a resident of Brooklyn.

Adjoining Mrs. Amerman's was a similar building, owned by sheriff Wyckoff, and in which our esteemed fellow citizen Judge Dikeman, first "put out his shingle," as a lawyer; shortly thereafter succeeding old Mr. Barkeloo, as clerk to the trustees of the village.

Between this and Middagh street, was leased property, belonging to the Middagh estate, and occupied by some small frame tenements, only one of which challenges our attention, a neat, genteel, little house, standing back from the road, about fifty feet westerly of Middagh street. Here lived Mr. James Harper, the grandfather of the well known publishers "Harper Brothers," a very excellent man, and for many years, treasurer of the first Methodist church in the village. The building was built by Mr. Thomas Kirk for his printing office, and was occupied as such, after his failure, by Mr. George L. Birch, editor of the *Patriot.*

On the corner of Middagh and Fulton streets, stood the little dwelling of St. Clair, the stocking-weaver, said to be the first to introduce into the United States, the knitting of stockings by machinery.

Northerly side of the Old Road (*Fulton street*), *from Front street to Sands.*

On the north-east corner of Front street and the Old road, (Map A, 39) was the large and very old frame building, originally Kirk & Mercein's printing office, prior to their removal to New

York, about 1813 or '14. It was next occupied as a hardware store by Thomas W. Birdsall and Joel Bunce; and its portrait at this period has been faithfully preserved (No. 1) in Guy's "Snow Scene of Brooklyn, in 1820." It was, also, for many years the post-office — Mr. Bunce, and after him in 1819, Mr. Birdsall, being post-master. At a later period it became the property of the Couvenhoven family of New Lotts; was occupied, for several years, by Sylvanus B. Stillwell's tailor shop, and, about 1830, was supplanted by brick buildings erected by the Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company. Its site is now occupied by the new building of the *Brooklyn Union* newspaper.

First above Birdsall's corner was the residence of Abiel Titus (Map A, 45), a small frame dwelling, with a narrow front on Fulton street, and not shown in Guy's picture. Titus is represented in that picture as feeding his chickens in the gateway of the yard between his house and his barn and slaughter-house. He was said to have espoused the loyalist side during the revolution, and was servant to a major in the British army; and, in after life, carried on the trade of a butcher. In 1828, Wm. J. Dodge and Nathaniel F. Waring, Esqs., leased a lot, 18 by 20 feet, on the site of this yard, at a ground rent of $80, which, in those days, was considered an extravagant figure, and on which they erected a small brick building, the first ever put up on this side of Front street between Fulton and James. Here Mr. Waring opened his law-office. Subsequently, a building called "The Mechanics Exchange" was put up, fronting the old pump seen in Guy's picture, and this, somewhat remodeled, was occupied by the *Brooklyn Union* office, previous to the completion of its new edifiec, on the corner of Fulton street.

Next to Titus', was a large, one and a half-story house (No. 2, Guy's picture) built of small yellow bricks, and possessing the indubitable appearance of very great antiquity. It is represented on the Map of Brookland Ferry, page 311, first volume, as the first house on Fulton street, easterly from the line of Front street; with a garden between it and that street and with another smaller building at the rear of the lot, on what is now James street. This property was a portion of the John Rapalje estate (Vol. I, 78), and was sold by C. & J. Sands to Abiel Titus, who occupied the old mansion), and kept a sort of livery stable in the building on James street), until he had built the small frame dwelling, next to the Birdsall corner. We are inclined to believe, from all the data ascertainable, that the old building was the original John Rapalje homestead.[1] It is, moreover, interesting to us as having been the scene of occasional religious services of the Episcopal order, during the occupation of Brooklyn by the British; and may, perhaps, be considered as the first of the many resting places in Brooklyn in which that particular ark of the covenant tarried, before it finally, after many buffetings, took unto itself a local habitation and a name as "St. Ann's." Nor, must we forget to mention, that in one side of this ancient house, in the early village days, was Ansel Titus's wheelwright shop; and, in the other, Mrs. Eagles' candy shop. This somewhat remarkable female, rejoiced in the *soubriquet* of "The American Heroine," from a current tradition that she had once worn a uniform, and seen service in the revolutionary war. She was a little, squat, "snapping-eyed" woman, always wore a red and white plaid turban, and, to the great delectation of the village, "bossed it" most tyrannically, over her husband Jacob, a tall, lank, easy-going man, who called himself a grocer. Mrs. Eagles was succeeded, after a while, by Mrs. Burnet (wife of Martin Burnet, wheelwright), whose portrait is preserved in Guy's picture (fig. 26), and who, in addition to candies, kept that *sine qua non* of every civilized community, "a thread and needle shop."

---

[1] We consider this to be "the *old* brick house" which, according to Gen. Jeremiah Johnson's manuscript, was built by John Rapalje, "on the corner formed by the Mill road (now Front street) and the King's highway, now Fulton street. This Mill road ran through Rapalje's land toward the meadow, where it turned northerly, and ran on, or near, the present line of Gold street, until it came to a hill, where it turned easterly and entered the Remsen farm by a swinging-gate, near which was a red cedar tree, a dividing landmark." As will be seen, from note 1, page 52, of this volume, in 1776 a public road ran along Rapalje's house and garden, from the main road to the East river. It was closed during the revolutionary war, by Loosely & Elms, who kept tavern at the Corporation house. It was closed when Comfort Sands became the owner of the square between Fisher street and the said road, and by him and the corporation it was kept closed, and so remains to this day. Rapalje, in 1776, "fenced in a part of his land, and turned the travel on this new road into the Mill road (now Front street), and along the same into the Jamaica road (Fulton street), near his *old* brick house."

Adjoining this old house was a shed (formerly a habitation), but now a mere adjunct to Edward Coope's blacksmith shop, which stood next (No. 3, Guy's picture, his residence being at James street, No. 8, same picture). Then we come to George Frickes' carriage shop (No. 4, Guy's picture). Then, directly opposite Hicks street, was a small brick building (Guy's picture, No. 5), at one time, the residence of Diana Rapalje, without some notice of whom no history of Brooklyn would be complete.

She was the daughter of Garret Rapalje and a descendant of the first white female child born in New Netherland. In early life a favorite in the presidential circles at Washington, she was, in her later days (we will not say *decline*, for her bearing was erect and firm to the last), a stately exhibitor of the fashions of '76; and, as was natural, from her earlier associations, considerable of a politician in her peculiar way. Her erratic doings, from middle age to the close of life, indicated that moderate form of insanity which is termed eccentricity; and which, in her case, manifested itself in many absurd, amusing, and (to those concerned in litigation with her), troublesome forms. It was said that she had loved and had been disappointed, and that, from that time, pride and self-reliance drove her to seclusion and made her disrespectful of the customs and usages of society, in many minor points. Yet, in certain matters of etiquette, no queen could be more haughty.

"Her house," says Alden J. Spooner, Esq., in a pleasant chapter of reminiscences in the *Evening Post*, June 27th, 1868, "passed for haunted. It was a great trial-point of courage to pass by this house, and few boys were bold enough to stand over the way at night and look up at it. The utmost expected from small boys of reasonable pluck, was, that they should race past in a close huddle for mutual protection, and look back furtively over the shoulder. When at some distance, the frightened herd would stop and fearfully look back. Almost all saw something floating over or around the the house, shadowy and peculiar, of the traditionary white, and it bore the form of a woman. On one or two occasions I would be sworn I saw the spectre sitting on the top of the house, and I am willing to swear it now, but I came, afterwards, to know that the ghosts which frightened the boys and me were Diana's self, who had a habit of sitting on the roof on summer nights for the sensible purpose of cooling herself. The ancient and respected family of the Rapaljes long enjoyed the reputation of having produced the first-born white child on Long Island; and by boys, who care nothing about dates, Diana was supposed to be this very person. To be sure, this supposition would make her upwards of two centuries old, but, to the boys, there was nothing impossible with Diana. She had always been about the same person in the memory of the oldest inhabitant.

"She traversed the then village of Brooklyn, here and there picking up now a chip to light her fire, and then a codfish from the cheapest store to replenish her kettle. These she would deposit in her ample Dutch pockets, and march through the streets with the tail of the fish waving in the rear.

"Once, in crossing the Brooklyn ferry some ladies were excessively startled, and sprang from their seats in frightful apprehension. A snake was seen wriggling upon the floor. Diana witnessed the alarm with supreme contempt and soon relieved it. 'It is only one of my eels,' said she, pulling some others from her pocket, which she had bought in Fly Market, and whose comrade was attempting an escape. It is needless to say she restored him to her eelymosynary receptacle.

"At another time the clarion tones of chanticleer came from the bosom of the same dignified lady sitting smoothly erect in the same cabin. Lest people might suppose she was exercising her own lungs upon the chromatic scale, she opened her shawl and exposed a roystering bird of the genus rooster, which she informed the company was intended for chicken soup.

"To save the expense, she laid down the cobble stones in front of her residence with her own fair hands. To a friend who afterwards reproached her with 'How could you do it?' she replied: 'Nobody recognized me; *I did it with my back to the street.*' This seems to be a recognition of the fact that most persons passed on the other side of the way."

Her sister married John Fisher, and a few months after her decease, in March, 1824, he married Diana. Both sisters had been distinguished, in early life, for their beauty and accomplishments, and were recognized belles, not only on Long Island, but in the best circles of New York and Washington. John Fisher was a Hessian "redemptioner,"[1] who came to Brooklyn soon after the close of the revolutionary war, in such an abject condition of poverty that, it is said, the supervisors seriously discussed the propriety of allowing him to remain in the place lest he should become a burden on the town. Their fears, however, were groundless, for John was industrious and shrewd, and, little by little, amassed considerable money and with it a better social position. He was a communicant in the Episcopal church (St. Ann's) of which he was said to be the politest member, his pew being ever open to strangers. He, also, erected the three brick buildings in Front street (Nos. 9, 11, 13), at a time when such erections were a noticeable improvement in Brooklyn. At the time of his marriage to Diana Rapalje, he was old, paralytic and imbecile, and some occurrences took place afterwards, which constitute a part of the romance of the Kings Co. Surrogate's office, and Chancery reports. After his decease, in June, 1827, she married the Hon. Lemuel Sawyer, of North Carolina, and who represented that state in congress. He was a man of considerable literary ability, the author of "Wall street, or a Quarter before Three," an excellent farce which met with much success at the Old Park Theatre in New York; but possessed neither means, health, nor business tact. The marriage, however, was one of those which are regulated more by prudential considerations than by affection. Sawyer was in much need of money; so he matched his family against her wealth; while Diana's avowed reason for her choice was that "Sawyer was a lawyer and she wanted a man to match James B. Clarke."[1] The parties subsequently maintained merely the outside appearance of diplomatic courtesy, seasoned occasionally with litigation concerning bits and scraps of property. They lived apart, she residing in one of the Fisher houses (No. 13), on the corner of Front and Dock streets, and on its doorstep frequently sat the "Virginia Honorable," her husband, clad in a dilapidated and faded plaid cloak, having been driven out of paradise by the angel who sometimes appeared at the door, waving her flaming—tongue. She died, January 30, 1849, in her eighty-second year, and was buried in Greenwood.

---

[1] A name applied to those emigrants who, being too poor to meet the expenses of their transportation to America, were bound out to service, for a specified time, after their arrival, to those persons who were willing to defray the indebtedness.

Diana Rapalje's house was afterwards purchased by Col. Alden Spooner, who occupied it as a residence and as the printing office of the *Star*.[2]

---

[1] One of her first husband's (John Fisher's) sisters, Eleanor, married James B. Clarke, Esq., and another, Marie, married Peter Clarke. Upon the death of Fisher his will was contested by the Clarkes, although without success.

[2] In one of these buildings, nearly opposite Hicks street, it is said on credible authority, that Talleyrand, the eminent French diplomatist, resided awhile, during his stay in America. It is related of him that he frequently jumped into the market-wagons as they passed along the road on their way home and thus made excursions into Flatbush, Gravesend, and the other county towns around Brooklyn. He is, also, said to have been the introducer, into this country, of the Russia turnip.

Next above stood an old yellow frame dwelling, its stoop furnished with seats on either side of the front door, occupied by John Doughty, so long and honorably known as town clerk and chief of the village fire department.

De Voe (*Historical Magazine*, Second Series, ii, 342) says "he had received a liberal education, and began business with his father in the Fly Market, about the period of the revolution."[1] When, in 1785, a fire company was formed in Brooklyn "John Doughty, Jr., who was of an active turn of mind, with his time not wholly occupied with business, was elected one of its seven members. This fire company afterwards became known as Washington Company, No. 1. In this company he served eight years. In 1790, he appears to have been one of the three assessors for the town, and continued in this office three years in succession. In 1796, he was placed in the responsible position of town clerk, which office he held year after year, for the space of thirty-four years, and gave general satisfaction." On the 4th of March, 1797, John Doughty manumitted and set free his negro-man, Cæsar Foster, aged about twenty-eight years, the first recorded act of manumission from which dated the movement of practical emancipation which resulted (by about the year 1825) in the removal of the entire institution of slavery from the city of Brooklyn.[1] As town clerk he witnessed and recorded more manumissions from slavery than any other person in the town, "and, in fact, the duties of his office about this period required a greater portion of his time," as the "act for the judicial abolition of slavery," was passed in the month of March, 1799, after which time all the births and names of the children of slaves were ordered to be recorded in the books of the town clerk. The various duties imposed upon Doughty continued to increase very fast, and as the public duties could not be neglected, it occasionally became quite onerous to him, as his daily business at the market called him before daylight and usually ended at noon; then the crossing of the ferry, followed with a hasty meal, when official or other duties began, which sometimes kept him constantly employed, even unto the midnight hour. Four hours duty, from ten to two, did not then, as now, constitute an official day's work; but the business daily presenting itself, was daily attended to; and Doughty performed all the required services satisfactorily. In 1812, the duties of overseer of the highway was placed upon Doughty; and again, in 1819." In 1812, he was a "fire engineer," being also clerk and treasurer of the fire department; and when the office of chief engineer was established, in 1816, was chosen the first incumbent, which he resigned the next year. From 1821 to 1823, he again occupied the position; and when an act was passed incorporating the department, he was unanimously chosen president. In 1801, he was one of the school committee for "the Ferry district," and held the office several years, becoming clerk of District School No. 1, upon its organization in 1816.

---

[1] "He was a small meat butcher, having a stand in the Fly Market, New York, opposite that of his friend and fellow townsman John Garrison; and he, also, had a stand in the old village market, at the foot of Fulton street.

"Concerning his ancestry, we find, about the year 1760, John Doughty, *Senior*, with several other Brooklyn and New York butchers petitioning the corporation of the city of New York, 'to oblige Mr. Nicholas Bayard (the lessee of the public Slaughter-house) to keep it in order, as well as to arrange the regulations that all could be accommodated, or else to indulge the petitioners with the privilege of erecting their own buildings, in such places as they shall provide and which this corporation shall approve of.'" The latter clause, at least, was not granted to them.

"The object of the Brooklyn butchers in signing this petition, at that period, appears to have been, that Long Island did not wholly produce a supply of live stock for the markets of New York; besides, in certain seasons, the East river became closed with ice, or heavy fogs, or storms, when it was as much as they could accomplish to get passengers across; to say nothing of cattle or teams, which occasionally were waiting for weeks before they could be passed over the river with safety. Again, a scarcity of cattle would sometimes send the butchers traveling through the other counties of the province, to purchase stock — this was before drovers were in existence — which were driven down to the city, where in this objectionable public building, the butchers were obliged to prepare their meats.

"Doughty continued in the Fly Market during the revolution, assisted by his son, John, where, for a period, we lose sight of him.

"I am inclined to suppose that John Doughty, Senior, was a member of the Society of Friends and a son of Charles Doughty, Senior, who joined the society about the year 1730. This Charles Doughty was proposed by some friends in a document, now in my possession, which reads as follows: 'And at ye request of Robert Murrey, a liver in this place I have to say that he has exprest his desire to come under ye notice of Friends for near twelve months in and before which time he hath frequented our meetings, and been of a pretty orderly conversation, as far as we know, which we refer to your consideration, also there are two men at *York Ferry* who have in like manner behaved and desire to come under Friends notice if Friends think proper, their names are Charles Doughty and Samuel Hicks.'" De Voe (*Hist. Mag.*, Second Series, ii, 342).

---

[1] An interesting list of manumissions by the citizens of Brooklyn, from 1797 to 1825, taken from the records of the city clerk's office, is given by Hon. T. G. Bergen, in *Manual of Common Council of Brooklyn*, for 1864, pp. 153, 165), from which "it would seem that a very large proportion of the inhabitants of the city owned slaves at this time. From the manner in which manumission was effected, it would seem that precautions were taken by the local authorities against the slaves liberated under the act becoming paupers and chargeable upon the public, beyond any prescribed in the act itself. Thus the manumission of any slave must be approved by the Overseers of the Poor, who specified in their certificate that the slave was under fifty years of age, and was likely to be self-supporting. It is to be inferred, therefore, that the manumission of slaves over that age, or such as were decrepit or incapable of providing for themselves, was not permitted. Under the provisions of the act (of 29th March, 1799), as carried out without any apparent reluctance on the part of the citizens interested, the institution gradually and almost imperceptibly disappeared."

In that year the village of Brooklyn was incorporated; and among the trustees named in the bill we find Judge Garrison and John Doughty. In 1819, Doughty was again selected as a trustee; and this office he held until 1829, a portion of the time as presiding officer. One year after this, the responsible duties of "collector of the village" were performed by him. In fact, it may be said that through a long and well-spent life, Doughty held nearly all the various positions of a public and private character that belonged to the town and village; and the manner in which he performed these various duties was amply illustrated by the confidence reposed in him by his fellow townsmen, who so persistently showered upon him so many services as to bewilder the intellect of any but an extraordinary man.

In all the various public offices and professional attention to his business for a period of over fifty years, he never thought of *gain to his coffers*, but was ever anxious to be a public benefactor, as well as an honest, faithful, Christian man; and with this character, he yielded his spirit to his Maker, on the sixteenth of May, 1832.

The authorities, in consideration of his great public worth, attached his name to one of the streets in this place.

As chief of the fire department he displayed much energy, and the wide hall of his house was always kept well hung with fire-buckets — for, in those days, householders were compelled by law to keep a certain number of buckets in their houses, and when an alarm of fire was given every man snatched down his fire-buckets from the pegs whereon they hung and scampered away with all haste; or, if he could not go himself, pitched them out into the street for the use of the first comer who might pass on his way to the scene of conflagration.

One of his sons, John S. Doughty, was, for many years, treasurer of the village and city, and at the time of his death was cashier of the Atlantic Bank of Brooklyn.

Mr. Doughty was portly, dignified and peculiarly neat in personal appearance; always dressing in the old fashioned style, with shad-bellied coat, vest with pocket lappells, etc.

Then, with a vacant lot intervening, were the two brick buildings erected by Losee Van Nostrand, brother of Mrs. John Middagh, and agent for the Middagh estate; then passing another vacant lot we come to Mrs. Middagh's house, a two-story frame, with double pitched roof, depicted (No. 6) in Guy's picture.

We next come, on the same side of Fulton street, where Market street now enters it, to a quaint and ancient, oak-framed, scallop-shingled, frame house, standing with its gable end to the street and shadowed by two large and venerable locust trees. Tradition, probably, does not err in attributing its erection to Rem Jansen van der Beeck, the ancestor of the Remsen family and an early settler here, where he married, in 1642, a daughter of Jan Joris de Rapalje.[1] This old house, however, was destined to acquire an additional and peculiar interest in connection with the history of the village and city which subsequently grew up around it. As the residence of Jacob Patchen, "the last of the leather-breeches," it was the scene of a memorable conflict between individual obstinacy and old fogyism, on the one part, and the imperative necessities of public convenience and improvement on the other, with the usual result in favor of the latter. And, as a veracious chronicler of Brooklyn history, we cannot venture to overlook the amusing episode of "the Patchen difficulties" which for so many years alternately annoyed and diverted the inhabitants of the village.

Jacob Patchen, the hero of our tale, was a native of the village, and was bred to the business of a tailor. This, however, he relinquished, about 1785, for the more healthful occupation of a butcher. "Shortly after the year 1790," says Col. De Voe (in *Historical Magazine*, second series, ii, 345-6), "he was found attending the Old Fly Market, some two or three times a week, as a *shirk* or shark butcher; although, in a petition dated August, 1795, he states that he 'is by trade a butcher,' and has 'for a number of years been employed in that business in the city of New York, and has long been solicitous to procure a license for a stand in the Fly market. To obtain that, your petitioner presented a petition upwards of two years since, but has not yet been able to procure the said license.' The following persons 'certify they are acquainted with him, and know him to be an industrious and sober man,' Cortland V. Bueren, Wm. Treadwell, Wm. C. Thompson, Benj. Gatfield, Townsend & Nostrand, and Wm. Post."

---

[1] See *Furman's Notes* (1824), page 7. The statement given on authority of a manuscript note by Gov. Jer. Johnson in note E, of the "Faust Club" reprint of *Furman's Notes on Brooklyn,* is evidently incorrect, both in names, date and fact.

This petition came before the authorities, who upon examination, became satisfied that he had not served a regular apprenticeship, so as to thoroughly understand the business, and, therefore, was not a competent person to hold a license from the mayor, as a butcher; but he was permitted to sell *small meats*, by the quarter, in the country market; and thus he continued for two years.

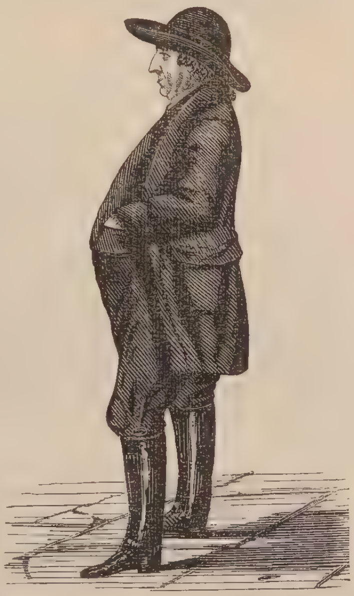
After this delay, Patchen came to the conclusion to out-general the authorities by introducing a stall in the lower Fish market, where he was found one winter morning, with a well furnished stall, ready for business. The records state that the mayor, in the month of December, 1798, announced: "that he had removed Jacob Patchen from the market, because he refused to remove a stall by him set up in the Fish market, when required by the clerk of the market; which was approved of by the board:" and it was only some time after, that he was permitted to sell meat again in the Fly market.

An old friend yet living, who became intimately acquainted with Mr. Patchen, at an early period of his life, thus speaks of him: "Jacob Patchen was a most remarkable man; and although strictly honest, industrious, and punctual, he was strongly self-willed and persisting, which, through the course of his life, often brought him in opposition to the laws; especially when they did not conform to his peculiar ideas of right, he invariably resisted their power with his whole force. In person he was quite tall, straight, and well-formed, with a somewhat expressive face, although it usually bore a stern, rigid, and selfish expression.

"He well understood the business of a small meat butcher, being an excellent judge of small stock, more especially calves, which, after handling, he could almost invariably guess their live weight within three pounds; and he thinks he was the first butcher who introduced the system of buying calves, which came from Long Island, by weight; in fact he would seldom buy in any other manner.

"When casting up accounts, either in buying or selling, the greasy right knee of his leather breeches was raised, upon which an abbreviated rule of arithmetic was satisfactorily performed.

"His dress was seldom varied or replaced; each article — a part of which he made himself — always bore the same appearance. The round-crowned felt hat, with a broad brim rolled up all around, sat firmly down upon his head much lower behind than before; and this at times was ornamented with a well smoked pipe, secured under the band. Then he presented the short kersey coat, cut in a sort of semi-quaker style, covered with metal buttons the size of a Spanish dollar; a single breasted waistcoat, buttoned up to the throat, containing two pockets large enough to shelter his doubled hands, clutching and guarding their sterling contents, the sinews of his business. Glancing downward, your eyes met his stout formed nether limbs, encased with ancient buckskin, remarkable for its high polish, by an adhesive grease and other matter, which had rendered it waterproof; while below it appeared *stockings* usually gray in color, and stout in texture; and Patchen fastened them below the knee by the compression of the ties of those famous leather breeches. A broad and thick pair of cow skin shoes, fastened on the top with large steel buckles, completed his attire." "And this was his dress," says one of my informants, "when I first saw him, and the last, after an acquaintance of some twenty years." His dress, however, was partially modified at a later period, when corduroys occasionally changed place with the leather breeches, and high boots took the place of shoes.



JACOB PATCHEN.

From a sketch by Dr. J. K. Northall.

He was thus humorously described by Alden J. Spooner, Esq.: "Every observer of 'men and things' has doubtless noticed in the village of Brooklyn, a thick set little gentleman, in broad brimmed hat, brown bob tail coat, vest half way down his thighs and leather breeches shining with a lustre which they had been many years in acquiring. * * * *

"Although very obdurate, yet his temperament was happy, and his rotund form gave evidence that he was in the regular habit of *living well.* *Music*, to him, was the bleating of calves and sheep, in the cellar under his bedroom, where their nightly serenadings lulled him into undisturbed slumbers. *Odor*, to him, was the effluvia of his slaughter house, adjoining his dwelling. Mynheer was social in his feelings, and nature had made him an *orator.* He would talk profoundly on natural philosophy, but nevertheless *law* was a theme to which he particularly inclined, and wherein he considered himself to excel! He generally held forth in the public streets, and his audiences, from small beginnings, would always become 'numerous' and sometimes 'respectable.' His manner, no less than his matter, had a peculiar attraction and rendered him popular as a speaker. Like the schoolmaster so well described by the poet Goldsmith, he dealt largely in

> Words of learned length, and thundering sound,
> To maze the gaping listeners gathering 'round.

He had noticed for fifty years the steady inroads of modern improvements around his neighborhood. He had watched the progress of *innovations*, whereby the fair face of nature had been marred. The farms had been cut up into streets — the sheep and cow-paths had been straightened, the hills had been laid *low*, and the valleys *exalted.* But none of these things moved *him.* His little domain of fifty by one hundred feet remained in its original loveliness — the mansion was rather distinguished for strength than elegance, and the huge timbers had been discolored by an hundred annual smokings, and an equal number of white-washings. It was a house altogether unique, and the bipeds and quadrupeds formed a happy family." Such then was the *man*, and such the house upon whose covered "stoop" he might be seen, any afternoon, after the day's work was done, seated with pipe in mouth, enjoying the grateful shade of the old locusts, and stolidly surveying the passers-by who traversed the cobblestone side-walk in front of his domain. That *sidewalk* was an eyesore and a stumbling block to every inhabitant of the village; it hurt their feet, it offended their sense of convenience and of cleanliness, and it brought down upon its owner's head maledictions more numerous than the little round stones of which it was composed. It was not strange, therefore, that Jacob's "sweet dream of peace" was at length disturbed (in December, 1816) by an official notice from the board of trustees of the newly created village, requiring him to put down curbstones and make a gravel walk in front of his premises, in compliance with an ordinance recently passed by them. But Jacob flatly refused, although the expense was but trifling, alleging that the old cobblestones had been good enough to walk upon for many years, and were good enough for *him*, and therefore, for others, for many years to come. Thereupon he was sued, tried by jury, before Justice Nichols, and fined five dollars. Louder and vehement now became his denunciations of the "*copperation*" and their persecutions, while the uncleanly cobblestones remained, a nuisance to every footsore wayfarer. It is even creditably affirmed that Jacob, in the height of his righteous indignation, abjured the village sidewalks and betook himself, in his daily perigrinations about town, to the middle of the streets. But the trials of the redoubtable leather breeches were like those of a puppy—before him. In 1826, the trustees having determined to build a market on James street, wished to open a short street (since named Market street), leading to it from Fulton street, (there being, at that time, no street running north-east from Fulton street, between Front and the junction of Maine and Fulton streets), and taking in two lots belonging to Patchen. A jury of award assessed his damages at $6,750, but he evinced so much dissatisfaction, that the trustees purchased, for the sum of $6,000, two other lots a few feet east of his land, proposing to make the street at that place. Finding, however, that Jacob's land was much better suited to their purpose, they reverted to their original plan, and offered him the two lots, together with two houses thereon, and $750 in cash as an equivalent for his two lots. But leather breeches declined to sell, on any terms, and preferred to try the law. It availed him nothing. He studiously avoided any tender of the cash, and the trustees as studiously sought for an opportunity. At length, in the gray dawn of an early April morn, Jacob was aroused from his slumbers. He opened his doors, and there stood the officers of the hated "copperation," and a cart full of hard silver dollars, which were again officially tendered to him. He was cornered, surprised, but not dismayed; he asked the momentary indulgence of the gentlemen to put on his breeches. It was a reasonable request, for Jacob, in his haste, had not donned his full costume, and the morning air was sharp. He retired, put on his breeches, and leaving his house by a back door, ran to the ferry, as fast as his legs could carry him, and besought the ferryman to put him safely across the East river. The diddled functionaries soon discovered the "sell," dismissed the cash to the bank vaults, and returned to their breakfasts "sadder and wiser men."

The workmen commenced, however, to open the street, his domains were invaded, "his hogs ran snorting into the street, his sheep and calves gazed wildly on the intruders, and sent forth doleful bleatings for the return of the man in leather breeches." He did return, "brimful of wrath and cabbage." His mansion was sold at auction, and ordered to be removed, the workmen began, the bricks rattled overhead, yet the obdurate old Dutchman sat calmly (?) in his chair. Friends advised him, his wife and daughter besought him to remove, but he heeded them not. At last the furniture having been all removed to a cart, the last of the leather breeches was carried out bodily, still seated in his chair, and carefully deposited on top of the load, and thus wheeled slowly away, amid the derisive laughter of village boys, and the pity of those who saw in him, the melancholy spectacle of "gray hairs without common prudence." The old house was purchased by Matthew (father of Ex-Mayor George Hall), and removed to the south side of Jackson street, about one hundred feet from Prospect. Fortune, they say, favors the brave. It was so in Jacob's case. Several years of litigation at length terminated in his triumph. In 1832 he was legally put into possession of his lands, now a street, paved and occupied by sundry stoops, cellar doors and one dwelling house fronting thereon, together with four stores whose corner doors opened upon it. Straightway he proceeded to erect a fence across each end of the street, and built a small house of rough boards, into which he removed with his family, and again reigned "sole monarch of all he surveyed." In announcing this forcible closure of Market street, the *Star* of that date says: "As this was the principal avenue to the market, the direct means of redress adopted by Mr. Patchen will oblige most of the citizens to take a circuitous course for their dinner." In addition to its being a public nuisance, it placed the occupants of the houses which fronted on, or opened into the street, in a very humiliating position; and Jacob took pleasure in playing the tyrant, by refusing such persons "right of way" on his land, thus rendering their property valueless, while it did not benefit him. He further manifested his malice by nailing up and fastening the windows and doors overlooking him, by which he got into personal collision with some of the inmates, and became involved in several petty law-suits.

Wearied out with this unreasonable man, the corporation again commenced active measures to open Market street, which was contested inch by inch by Jacob and his lawyer. Meanwhile, the property had increased in value, and the commissioners now awarded Patchen the sum of $16,000 which was again refused, on the plea of its being insufficient. At length, in 1835, the corporation again obtained legal possession of the street, and after several repetitions of the farce of offering the cash, and being as often refused, they opened it once more, to public travel.

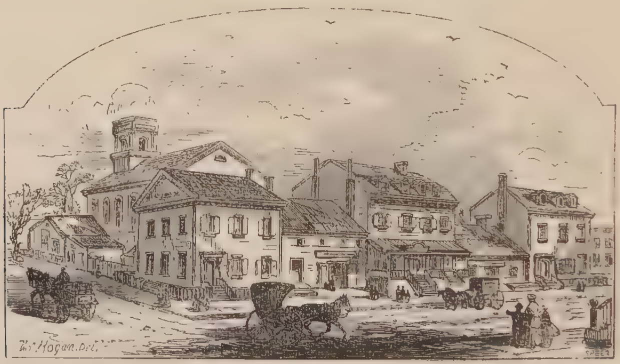
Jacob, however, was one of that sort who never know when they are whipped, and continued to litigate the matter against the corporation until the day of his death, which occurred on the third of February, 1840, at the age of eighty years. The money, which he had so long held at arm's length, was then awarded to his widow and family; but the "lion's share," of course went to the lawyer, who, for so many years, engineered Jacob's hopeless suit through the twistings and windings of the courts of law.

Mr. Patchen always had a desire of being distinguished in the community, but was never elected but once, and that probably by way of a joke, to the office of trustee of the only public school, at that time, in Brooklyn. In 1817, he was an unsuccesssful candidate for assembly; and Furman, in his *Manuscript Notes*, gives an amusing "glimpse behind the scenes" in relation to this nomination. "At a time," he says, "when there was quite a lull in politics in the village, and the electors had held a public meeting and made their nomination for an assemblyman to represent Kings county in the ensuing legislature, myself and other lads, none of us having the right to vote, or to interfere in political affairs, but prompted by the mischievous spirit inherent in all boys, determined to run old Patchen as a candidate for the office. Therefore, keeping our own counsel, we clubbed together a few shillings, drew up a flaming hand-bill, with an immense eagle at its head; followed, in large capitals, with the words '*People's Nomination*,' and representing the proceedings of a large meeting presenting Jacob Patchen as the people's candidate for assemblyman. We went to New York and had the hand-bills printed, and after cutting off the printer's name at the bottom, so that we might not be traced, we pasted them up, in the night, about the village; sticking one, also, under Patchen's door. The next day we were much amused by the stir and excitement which this movement occasioned. A meeting was at once called and a committee appointed to wait upon Mr. Patchen, and induce him to decline 'the previous nomination' as they termed it. The committee, however, found Mr. Patchen in a state of high dignity; and, upon informing him of their mission, he replied that in his judgment, 'the people had a right to make their own *numaticals;*' and, as they had thought proper to nominate him for assembly, he would not decline. And, to our great astonishment, he polled *nearly one hundred* votes in Brooklyn."

Mr. Patchen, aside from his eccentricities, had the credit of being a conscientiously honest man.

A little beyond Patchen's, was Mrs. Coope's (mother of David Coope) cheap crockery and earthenware store; where were also to be found pies and cakes, of surpassing excellence, made by her own hand. Above her, were the stores of old Joseph Fox (see vol. I, page 310), Wilson (baker); Wynant Bennett (shoes), afterwards enlarged by him; Mrs. Earles (thread and needle), and on the corner formed by the junction of Old and New Ferry roads, a confectionery store which changed owners about every year.

Crossing the head of Main and Prospect streets we come to the block between the latter street and Sand street. By the courtesy of Mr. John C. Philip of this city, we are enabled to present our readers with a view of this block as it appeared fifty or "sixty years ago." Several of these buildings yet remain, and are more or less recognizable, despite the changes which they have undergone.



FULTON STREET,

(Between Prospect and Sands streets).

On the corner (present No. 99), was the residence of Theodosius Hunt, one of the proprietors, with Mr. William Furman, of the New or Catharine Ferry. He was a large, Quakerish looking man, retired in his manner of life, and an estimable citizen. In the small building adjoining Allan Lippincott (afterwards Jenkins & Lippincott), kept a grocery. The next high-stooped, double-pitched, dormer-windowed house is well remembered by all old residents as the bakery of William Philip, *the* baker, *par excellence*, of the village.

WILLIAM (Godfrey) PHILIP, born at Samradt, a Prussian hamlet, in 1783, lost his father in early life, and in 1797, at the age of fourteen, was apprenticed to a baker, to learn the art of baking, brewing and confectionery, in which he became, after four years service, an expert, and followed his craft as a *wanderschaft*, or traveling apprentice. In 1803, to avoid conscription, he followed his brother Charles, who, for the same reason, had gone to America a year before. On his arrival he found employment at first in New York. In 1804, he removed to Brooklyn, established himself in business as a baker, in James street, near Fulton street; and, in 1811 married Maria Marks, of Monmouth Co., N. J. About the same time he built a bakery in the rear of No. 103 Fulton street; and, during the war of 1812, baked the bread for the government troops stationed here in defense of New York harbor. In 1828 he purchased in partnership with Philip Reid, the mills known as Cornell's Mills, and continued the distillery business for three years. In 1830, he met with severe pecuniary losses, although not sufficient to impoverish him, and he died April 13th, 1846. His children, whom he left in comfortable circumstances, are nearly all yet identified with Brooklyn.[1]

---

[1] LOUISA A., married Benj. W. Davis of this city; Sophia M., married A. S. Pratt, of Jersey City, N. J.; Caroline, married Dr. Outerbridge, of Bermuda; Frederick (an artist) married Julia Bach; George A., a tin and coppersmith in Brooklyn and New York; John C., a graduate of the College of Physicians and Surgeons of New York city, and connected for many years past with the Brooklyn and Montauk Insurance Companies; Jacob, in the grocery business with his brother-in-law, B. M. Davis, in Brooklyn; William H. (the sculptor); Joseph D., a minister of the Protestant Episcopal church; Charles, superintendent of the Ridgewood Water Works; and Benjamin who was a member of the 14th Regiment New York Volunteers, in the war of the rebellion, was wounded at the first battle of Bull Run, and died in 1868.

FREDERICK A. PHILIP, son of William Philip, was born in Brooklyn, November, 1812. He early manifested a decided genius for painting, and was placed as a pupil with Wier in New York city. In 1832 he went to England, where he remained nine years visiting the best galleries, studying the best works of British art, and availing himself of the instructions of Harrison, then an artist of high repute. He then visited Italy, Germany and other fields of art. He was for a time in the studio of Baron Vogel, of Dresden, whose portrait he painted, which now adorns one of the galleries of that city. After returning home, he married, in January, 1841, Miss Julia Bach, daughter of Robert Bach, one of the most respected citizens of Brooklyn, who died about three months after in April, 1841. Many of his best pictures are in the possession of this lady, now Mrs. McMasters. His other pictures and drawings

Mr. Philip possessed fair business qualities, and good common sense; amassed considerable wealth, and was liberal but unostentatious in his living. Although a quiet man, he was of a kindly and sociable disposition; pleasant, and sometimes witty, in conversation. His disposition, perhaps, is well exemplified by the answer he has been known to give to those who, from time to time, informed him of sundry petit larcenies committed on his bakery wood-pile, "Well, if they didn't want it, they wouldn't take it." He was a member of the Masonic order in the village, and in religion was originally a Lutheran; he afterwards joined St. Ann's church, but subsequently left the connection.

Several of the best bakers which Brooklyn ever had, graduated from his bakery, and have nearly all succeeded well in business.

Memories of Christmas and New Years' holidays are indissolubly connected, in the minds of most of our old residents, with Philip's bakery, for each of his customers were then presented with "New Years' cakes," vary-

---

are distributed among the other members of his family, by whom they are highly valued, and are admired by artists for skillful drawing and a style of color, carefully derived from the old masters. Of his designs, those remaining are three figures illustrating the Christian, Jewish and Mohammedan religions, the Dead Shepherd Boy, and the Prisoner of Chillon. He was devoted to his art, and, if he had lived would have conferred additional honor on the city of his birth.

Wm. H. Philip, sculptor, also a son of William Philip, is now living and was born in Brooklyn, August 15, 1829. He began, while quite a child, to show an aptitude for modeling, and became a pupil in the art department of that excellent institution, the Brooklyn Institute, by which he was sent to Italy. There he entered the studio of Crawford and availed himself of the works of Thorwaldsen, Gibson, and other masters. On his return home he executed a group in marble, entitled "The Surprise," showing two figures startled by a snake, for Rollin Sanford, Esq., who also employed him for other works. He also executed a beautiful medallion of a child of his brother-in-law, Benjamin W. Davis, Esq. His works have been various and all of them exhibit delicacy, power of expression, and remarkable fidelity to nature. Among his works are a figure of Isaac, made at the age of eighteen, and owned by Mr. Leverich, of Montague street, Brooklyn. Busts of Keokuk (owned by Silas Ludlam, Brooklyn), and Black Hawk, sons of the elder chiefs of the same name. Casts, from the life, of Lincoln, Seward, Chase, Grant, Farragut. The two latter have been rendered into marble, and that of Grant was presented by the Christian Commission to Mr. Stuart of Philadelphia; a beautiful medallion of Meeta, his daughter, owned by James Cassidy of Brooklyn; a fine bust of John D. McKenzie of Brooklyn; a bronze medallion of Gabriel Winter, deceased, of Georgia, etc. Mr. Philip is held in deservedly high estimation, and having great enthusiasm and industry in his art, needs but the opportunity to execute for his native city some work of high character and expression, for which he has eminently the ability.

ing in size somewhat according to the amount of their patronage, but all of the finest quality. Some of the cakes were about as large as a small boy could conveniently manage ; indeed, they were frequently to be seen carrying home these "toothsome" gifts on their heads, in the fashion of a Spanish *sombrero.* Nor were the poor forgotten, or the children of both "high and low degree." Their half timid, half expectant Christmas and New Years' greetings to the worthy baker and his family, were sure to be rewarded with sweet bread largesses, which sent them away rejoicing.

Next was the shop of Peter Prest, who had moved up from his old shop. In the rear part of the same house was a small dry-goods and thread and needle store, kept by Mrs. Williams, an Englishwoman. It was, *par excellence*, the gossip place for the Brooklyn village dames of that day ; Mrs. Williams' *repertoire* being constantly replenished with the most diverting tit-bits of scandal, which were here retailed to every customer or caller — and to each in *strict confidence.*

Adjoining, was the residence of Cyrus Bill, the father of our esteemed and wealthy fellow citizen, Chas. E. Bill. The old gentleman kept a school and a dry goods store, the latter being attended by his daughter (who subsequently married George Hicks), and his son Charles. Mr. Bill's school, which was opened in November, 1818, was the successor of one kept by a Mr. D. De Vinne who sold out and removed to Natchez, Miss. In 1819, the school was removed to the school house in Middagh street, nearly opposite to Mr. Harmer's new factory.

On the corner of Sands street (not shown in our view), was Drs. Ball and Wendall's office.

Dr. Matthew Wendall came of an old and highly respectable family of Albany county, studied under Dr. Hyde, of Bethlehem, N. Y., and was a thoroughly educated physician of the real old fashioned sort, who relied on calomel, jalap and blood-letting. Mild mannered, gentlemanly and altogether unexceptionable in his social standing, and, in a high degree, possessing all the qualities essential to a "good family physician," he enjoyed a large practice in Brooklyn, which he retained to a very late period in his active professional life. He died only a few years ago, at an advanced age, retaining to the last the warm regard and confidence of all his old friends, as well as of the many who had grown up, with the city, around him. His second wife was a daughter of John Doughty.

Dr. Charles Ball was for many years his partner; he was licensed in July, 1806, was an ambitious and stirring man, and esteemed a good practitioner. Drs. Ball and Wendall succeeded to the practice of Dr. Osborne, an excellent and talented physician, who removed to New York city. They were both among the founders of the Kings Co. Medical Society, in 1822, of which Dr. Wendall was the first vice president; president in 1836, and frequently a delegate to the state society. Dr. Ball was president of the society in 1833 and '34.

Westerly side of the Old Road (Fulton street) from Middagh to the present Montague street.

On the southerly side of Middagh street, after passing two small frame buildings, we come to the low one-story house (Map B, 78), of Marvellous Richardson, shoemaker. It was built by the Hessians, during the Revolutionary war, as a guard-house, and here, also, for a short time, during the rectorship of Rev. Mr. Wright, the Episcopalians worshiped in a hired room, rudely fitted up for the purpose, with pulpit, reading desk and seats, and here gathered the few churchmen of the village and, indeed, of the county, among whom was Aquila Giles, Esq., and his family, from Flatbush. Furman (*Manuscript Notes*), says that Judge John Garrison was also an original member of this church; but that, having become dissatisfied with the distribution of the pews (no unimportant matter in those days), and not getting so eligible a one as he deemed himself entitled to, he seceded, taking with him several others with whom he was instrumental in forming the Methodist church. Marvellous Richardson (whose name in common parlance, was generally either shortened to Marvel, or lengthened to Miraculous Marvel), was perhaps one of these seceders, as he figures among the earlier Methodists of Brooklyn, and the schism may have been the cause of the very short stay which the Episcopalians made in this spot.

After Marvellous Richardson, this old building was occupied by Ithial Smead, as a school; and, in June, 1824, was leased from the heirs of John Middagh, by Thomas Kirk, who remodelled the front and converted it into three stores.

We next notice the dwelling of Richard H. Cornwell, cabinet and coffin-maker, and a man of considerable ability. He was, in 1832, surrogate of the county, to which office (so grimly humorously appropriate to his business) he was elected by the Methodist influence which then largely controlled local politics.

Just opposite to the lower corner of what is now High street, was the wheelwright shop of George Smith, (Map B, 77), father of Mr. Crawford C. Smith, president of the Nassau National Bank of this city. It was a long, two-story frame edifice, originally erected on Sands street, and occupied by the Methodist church. When, in 1810, they determined to build larger, it had been purchased by Mr. Smith, moved into this spot, and converted to a shop. It had a long flight of stairs on the outside, leading up to Judge Garrison's *Court Room*, on the second floor.

John Garrison, pleasantly remembered by all our oldest inhabitants as intimately connected, for many years, with the interests of the earlier village of Brooklyn, was born at Gravesend, L. I., August 25th, 1764. When he was quite young, his parents removed to Brooklyn, and his father dying soon after, John was left to the care of his mother. Under the instruction of Matthew Gleaves he became a butcher, commencing business on his own account, about 1785; and, for many years, had a stand in the Fly Market, New York. In November, 1793, he experienced religious convictions, and when the first Methodist church was formed in the village in 1794, he was chosen one of its board of trustees, which office he continued to hold for thirty-six years. He was a staunch Methodist, attentive to church duties; and it is related of him that when the first house of worship erected by that denomination had been raised and enclosed, but before it was finished, Mr. Garrison and his excellent wife, after the labors of the week were ended, used to go at a late hour on Saturday evening, and perform the duties of a sexton in clearing away the rubbish and otherwise preparing the church for the reception and accommodation of the congregation. In politics Mr. Garrison was a violent democrat, of the old school, and was naturally regarded, by some, as a man of bitter and vindictive feelings; while, in fact, a kinder-hearted man never lived. He was a fireman in 1787, 1790, 1791, 1793, 1794; overseer of the poor in 1803 and 1804; one of the committee of the board of health in 1809; a school commissioner in 1806 and 1807; was a village trustee in 1816 and 1826, and for the larger portion of his life time, a judge of the common pleas, or justice of the peace. Indeed, he, in connection with Squire Nichols, dispensed nearly all the justice that was needed to keep the Brooklynites straight in those primitive days; and, though his legal attainments were not extensive, his strong common sense, his shrewdness in judging character and his straight forward way of getting at the *justice*, if not the law, of the cases brought before him, rendered him, in the opinion of all who knew him, one of the best justices Brooklyn ever had. In person he was six feet two inches high, remarkably large, and weighing three hundred pounds. Towards the close of his life he inclined towards corpulency, but always retained his early activity and erectness. He was invariably dressed in a suit of "pepper and salt" mixed clothing, cut very loose. Many pleasant stories are yet told of his queer ways and sayings, by those, who as boys, intent on fun and excitement, were wont to frequent his court room, in the upper story of George Smith's wheelwright shop. A characteristic one is the following. On one occasion, a trial was going on before Judge Garrison, the case being a suit for money. The long, warm summer's day had been almost entirely occupied by the arguments and pleadings of the opposing counsel, and judge and jury gave indubitable signs of weariness. The lawyer who closed the case, requested the judge to "charge the jury," a proceeding somewhat unusual in the simple routine of the justice's court. Thereupon, the judge rising with great deliberation and with some evident hesitancy, turned his burly figure towards the jury, and delivered himself thus: "Gentlemen of the Jury! You have heard the learned counsel on both sides, and the last lawyer who spoke has asked me to charge the jury. My charge shall be very short," and turning to the contesting parties in the suit, he exclaimed, "I think that *that* man (pointing to one) owes *that* man (pointing to the other) the money, *and he ought to pay it!*" Again, M. T. sued G. T. before Judge Garrison, for the sum of ten shillings and got a decision in his favor. G. T., however, contumaciously refused to pay, whereupon, M. T. complained to the judge. "What," said the judge, "won't he pay you? Well, I'll issue a summons and I'll *guarentee* he'll pay you, then." Accordingly, the summons was issued, and judgment obtained, but the money didn't come. Whereupon, M. T., meeting the judge soon after, said to him, "Look here, Squire, you *guarenteed* that debt, and now, if *you* don't pay it, I'll *sue you.*" "Oh, well," said the judge, "that debt must be settled," and forthwith paid M. T. *five shillings* out of his own pocket.

In 1828, Judge Garrison was chosen one of the Jackson electors, and while in Albany upon that business, was attacked with dysentery, from the effects of which he never fully recovered; and, in June, 1830, having seen in a Methodist paper, some notice of the grave of that holy and distinguished man, Benjamin Abbot, and feeling, as he said, desirous to perpetuate the memory of so good a man, he visited Salem, N. J., for the purpose of erecting a monument over his grave. While there, however, he was prostrated by the heat, and his health, from that time, rapidly declined. He died on the 22d of January, 1831, his remains being interred under the Sands street Methodist church, of which he so long had been a useful and devoted member. Judge Garrison's residence, during the early portion of his life, was in Doughty street; afterwards on the south-east corner of Washington and High streets. His portrait is preserved in Guy's Brooklyn picture.[1]

Next the wheelwright shop was a house (Map B, 76) occupied by two excellent Methodist people, Joseph Moser and wife, known to every one in the village, as "Uncle Josey," and "Aunt Rachel."

JOSEPH MOSER, like his friend "Poppy" Snow, with whom he was associated in "every good word and work," was one of these quiet public benefactors which every community needs. Peculiar in gait, clean shaven, round shouldered and dressed always in drab colored clothes, he was never missed from his place in the Methodist church on the Sabbath. His ministrations to the sick, and the heavy laden; his labors in the Sabbath School; his untiring interest in the youth of the place, counselling them and originating entertainments for them, in which instruction and amusement were most judiciously blended, endeared him to the hearts of both old and young. He was, at this time, established in a lucrative business, as a builder, and amassed, what in those days, was an independent fortune; and many of Brooklyn's most prosperous citizens owed their welfare to his unsolicited aid. His purse was ever open, and it probably never entered his head to say "No!" when called upon. Especially in the establishment of the churches of his own beloved denomination, was his liberality unbounded. But this was a trait which exposed him to the cupidity and ingratitude of his fellow men, and, through losses entailed upon him by others, he became deprived of his hard earned property, and dependent upon the charity of relatives. Within a few years of his death which occurred on the 8th of

---

[1] For some of the biographical facts here given, we are indebted to a memoir of Judge Garrison and the Methodist Church in Brooklyn, in the *Methodist Magazine and Quarterly Review*, XIII, *New Series*, II, 258, 1831.

February, 1854, in his seventy-eighth year, he occupied for the brief period of a few months, an inspectorship in the New York customs, and an inspectorship of pavements in Brooklyn, both of which were bestowed upon him unsolicited, and by his political adversaries. Honored and respected by all, he, probably, was without an enemy, and his life and death alike proved him a devoted, active and useful Christian.

Passing a very old one and a half-story house (Map B, 74) on the corner of the present Cranberry street, afterwards occupied by Peter Cowenhoven's grocery, we come to a carpenter's shop subsequently the paint shop of old Matthew Hall, from Flatbush, the father of (ex-mayor), George Hall.

A little beyond, on about the line of the present Orange street, was an old house (Map B, 75) occupied by Cortlandt Van Buren, an old citizen, who died about 1820, and whose son, Samuel, was the first husband of Mrs. Edward McComber, now residing in the city of New York. It was afterwards the residence of Losee Van Nostrand. Next to this was "Biddy" Stephenson's liquor saloon and "Ice Cream Garden." Her husband, William, had formerly kept a bar and billiard room on the opposite side of the road, well known as the "Auld Lang Syne," or Washington Inn, the sign bearing a portrait of that renowned personage; and, after his death, his widow removed to this side and continued the business under the old sign. "Biddy" was a smart woman, and her place was much resorted to for the holding of town, village and public meetings. Her "Garden" extended out to meet the property of James B. Clark, Esq., who occupied a large piece of land (some 200 feet front) leased from the Middagh estate, through which Pineapple street has since been opened, leaving the old "Clarke pump" out, on the corner in front of the present "*Standard* Office." The dwelling (Map B, 81) a large two-story frame, still exists, having been moved back and faced around on Pineapple street (Nos. 108, 110), near Fulton. "Lawyer" Clarke, as he was called, was an industrious, plodding attorney, for many years district attorney of Kings county, and dabbled considerably in real estate. His wife, a sister of John Fisher (*ante*, page 62) was a stately, handsome woman, who always wore a turban, and aimed at taking a leading position in the social circles of the place.

Two pretty and lively daughters graced the house, which is naturally associated with very pleasant remembrances in the minds of some who will read these pages.

Next to Mr. Clarke's grounds, was the parsonage building (Map B, 73) occupied, at the time we are describing, by the

REV. JOHN IRELAND, rector of St. Ann's from 1798 to 1807, and subsequently chaplain in the United States navy, a commission which he held until his death, in March, 1823. English by birth and education, he possessed fine qualities both of intellect and heart, but with little control of his passions which were strong, and it was probably owing to this serious defect in his character that he transferred his clerical relations to the navy yard. He was, however, an attractive speaker, and had the genial, finished manners of a perfect gentleman. Although a high churchman, Parson Ireland was remarkably free from narrow sectarianism, either in faith or practice, and was much interested in Sabbath Schools, being the secretary of one established in 1816, and the founder of another in the navy yard. He was, also, an eminent member of the Masonic order, being among the founders of Fortitude Lodge, in Brooklyn, and, for many years chaplain of the Grand Lodge. As might have been expected, he was an ardent politician, and was, in various ways, intimately connected with the organization, and civil interests of the village, especially as one of the committee who drew up the bill of incorporation, in 1816.

The old parsonage which stood with its gable to the road, was replaced with a new one in 1826, which in turn was sold to Losee Van Nostrand, in 1834, and by him removed.

Next to the parsonage, just on the lower side of the turn of the present Clinton street into Fulton, was the pretty two-story frame dwelling (Map B, 72) of

SAMUEL SACKETT, who was of a Newtown family and a most excellent man. He was for many years overseer of the poor, in Brooklyn, to which as well as to the duties of a trustee of the only public school, he gave his undivided attention. He was a man of polished manners and agreeable address, and was highly esteemed by his cotemporaries. He died in 1822, leaving a daughter (Mrs. Thos. W. Titus), now living; two sons, Clarence D., and Grenville A., both lawyers and deceased. The former was a village trustee in 1826, and a member of the state legislature; while the latter, although a diligent and competent lawyer, was possessed of more than ordinary poetical genius, and, under the signature of "Alfred," wrote some of the best and most widely circulated of the fugitive poetry of the day, in *The New York Mirror*, *New York Times* and *Long Island Star*.

Here we may mention that along the westerly side of the old road (Fulton street), from Orange to Clinton streets, extended a row of magnificent old elms; the largest in size, perhaps, being those along in front of Lawyer Clarke's grounds. Elm, mulberry, locust, cedar, and willow trees abounded in the village at that day, to a greater extent than the promenaders of the present city can realize.

The next house (Map B, 70) on this side of the road, and very nearly opposite to the present Johnson street, was the residence of

JOHN VALENTINE SWERTCOPE, one of those Hessians who had been left (perhaps not unwillingly) upon our shores by the receding wave of British domination, after the declaration of peace in 1783. With his long gray beard, his soldierly tread and strongly marked features, he was certainly the quaintest and most original character in the village. In the British service he had been an armorer; and, very naturally, found some employment in furbishing and repairing the guns, pistols, etc., of his neighbors in Brooklyn. Although his income from this source could have been but slight; yet by industry and thrift he gradually amassed a very snug little property, so that he was commonly reputed to have found a buried treasure. Be that as it may, he was able, in course of time, to purchase from the De Bevoise brothers, a strip of land off from the end of their farm, upon which he erected a dwelling house, and, adjoining it on the north, a gunsmith shop, which was mostly used by his son John. Old Swertcope, among other contrivances, invented an air-gun, the balls of which were clay pellets, and this weapon was an object of great curiosity, and of no small fear, to the boys especially, in their predatory excursions into the old man's orchard. A story is still extant, of an English cockney sportsman, who while hunting around the remains of the old fort on the Heights, raised his gun to fire at a robin, which, to his surprise fell dead before his eyes, 'ere he had even time to aim at it; and when old Swertcope's gaunt and grizzly figure emerged from among the bushes, the amateur sportsman incontinently took to his heels, firmly convinced that the apparition was none else than "St. Nick" himself. Two of these curious guns were sold among Swertcope's effects, after his death, and one was purchased at a pretty high figure by a gentleman who did not understand the secret of its management. Swertcope's son offered to impart the method for a price which the purchaser was not willing to pay, and so "Swertcope's air-gun" must henceforth be remembered among the "lost arts." Much of Swertcope's time was occupied in attending to his fine garden and orchard, where he used to prowl about, in apple season, with whip in hand and a dog at his heels, ready to pounce upon the boys who were skirmishing around his trees. He also did a considerable business in the distilling of *rose-water*. Roses, at that time, were raised in great abundance in the gardens of Brooklyn; and many persons were accustomed to send their annual crop of rose-leaves to Swertcope, who returned to each customer one-half the yield in rose-water; reserving the other half as payment for services in distillation.[1] Having procured from the De Bevoises' some of their fine strawberry plants, of which fruit they had previously held the monopoly in the New York market, he very soon, by his good management, succeeded in dividing with them the reputation and the business of the best berries. In addition to these, he derived no inconsiderable income from the sale of a superior kind of bitters, which he manufactured; and he might be seen almost every morning, wending his way to the ferry, with a basketful of bottles of these bitters, which he peddled off in New York, before his return to Brooklyn.

He was said to be somewhat of a miser, and the large amount of money which he amassed, all in specie, was kept in a heavy iron bound box, under his bed; and its key during his last illness was always placed under his pillow. The late George Hall used to relate that having occasion to visit him, a little before his death, some one called at the house to obtain payment of a small bill, and the sick man directed his daughter to get the necessary amount out of the trunk. As she was engaged a little too long in searching for a coin, the sick man became impatient and suspicious, and raising himself up in bed, exclaimed, "Come away! Come away! vat you doin mit your tam money-rousin?"

Furman relates (*Manuscript Notes*, dated 1824), in regard to Swertcope's property, the interesting fact that, "eight years since," while digging his well, "near the junction of Fulton street and Love lane, on some of the highest ground in Brooklyn, at a depth of thirty feet, a hemlock board was found; and, again at the depth of seventy-three feet he met with oyster and clam shells, which crumbled on being exposed to the air."

---

[1] Furman (*Manuscript Notes*) says, "Among the Dutch farmers in Kings county, L. I., *roses* have always been raised in great abundance, and not a few tulips. Mr. Rynier Suydam of the town of Brooklyn, had sold, during the summer of 1823, up to June 20, three hundred pounds of rose leaves, from off his place, at 18¾ cents per pound, and expected to sell one hundred pounds more before the close of the season. Mr. John Cowenhoven, of the same town, had sold from his garden thirty pounds, but had not given any particular attention to the business.

In the rear of Swertcope's land, just behind the present Presbyterian church, on west side of Clinton street, was the old private burial ground (Map B, 71) of the Middagh family. Along the southerly side of Swertcope's land, was "Love lane," leading down the De Bevoise place on the heights, and a little distance beyond the lane was Lawrence Brower's tavern (Map B, 69) called "Mount Pleasant Garden." The house first occupied by Brower was a smaller house on the other side of the road, about where the present new assembly building stands in Washington street, near Fulton. This house, however, was originally hired by him from the brothers De Bevoise, whose property afterwards (in 1816) was purchased by Mr. H. B. Pierrepont. In 1824 he purchased the house and a few acres surrounding, from Mr. P. and built a larger house, in which was a dance room, etc., and kept a "beer and meat garden," or house of entertainment, where public and political meetings, principally of the whig or federal party, were often held. "The elections," says Furman, "were then held for three successive days, but the polls were only opened in the afternoon of the first and second days, and on the whole of the third. On two out of the three days, the polls were held either at the "Black Horse" tavern, then kept by Devoe, or at Duflon's "Military Garden." Brower's was not esteemed quite as respectable as Duflon's, in consequence of the gambling which was carried on there pretty extensively, and which, together with hard drinking, ultimately brought ruin to "Larry." Brower held the office of sheriff of Kings county in 1815.

Beyond Brower's, and a little to the north of the present Mechanics' Bank, on the corner of Montague street, was the "Bee Hive," kept by Mrs. Wells, the mother-in-law of the late lamented Capt. Hudson, United States Navy. It stood back a little from the old road, with its "bee hive" sign projecting over the walk and was subsequently occupied by Dr. Hurd.

The easterly side of the Old Road (Fulton street) from Sands street to Myrtle avenue.

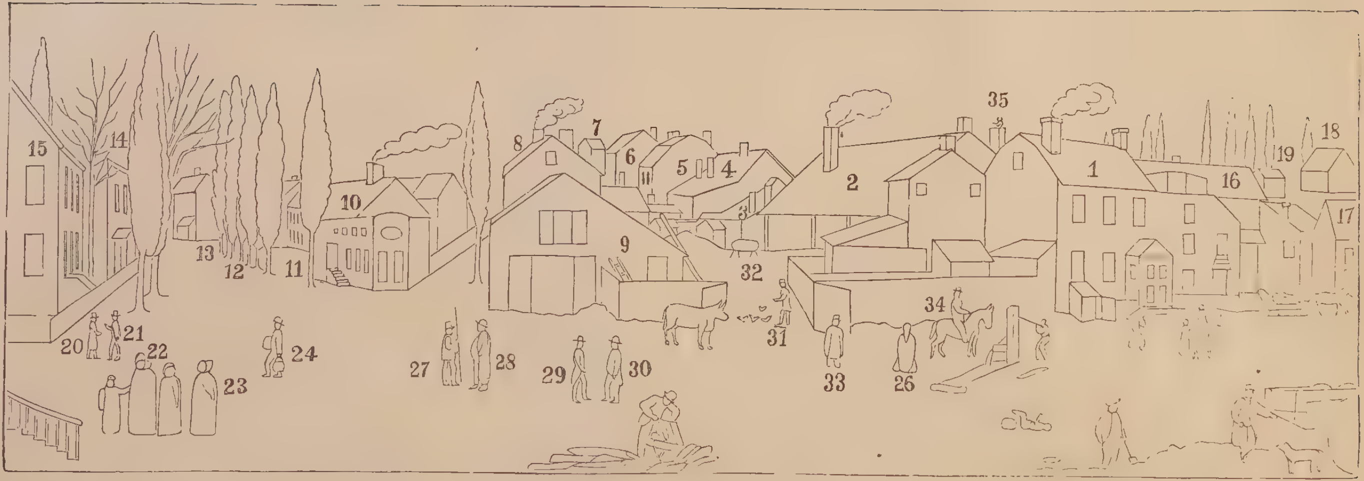
On the southerly corner of Sands street, was John Harmer's patent floor cloth factory. Subsequently, about 1819, he erected a new factory in Middagh, near Fulton street. Harmer was an Englishman, a singular genius, and a great infidel, always talking and boasting about his infidelity. He was a friend and great admirer of Thomas Paine, author of *The Age of Reason;* and, in the latter portion of that writer's life he had him to live with him in Brooklyn. Harmer was a man of considerable property, and was the means of inducing Francis Guy, the painter, to come to this place. His daughter, Mrs. Lavinia Smith, is one of the figures represented in Guy's picture. Next to Harmer's was the residence and grocery store of high sheriff John Dean, father of Col. Joseph Dean. He was a prominent politician in the county, was appointed sheriff in March, 1813, and "Dean's Corners," as it was generally called, was to the male portion of the village, what Mrs. Williams' shop was to the female, a great rendezvous for (political and business) "chit-chat." Adjoining Mr. Dean's grocery, with an intervening space, was his extensive shoe shop. Passing this, we come to two small old buildings; then the residence of George Smith, whose wheelwright shop was on the opposite side of the road; and, then, the two-story frame dwelling house and grocery store of Isaac Moser, brother of "Uncle Josy" Moser, of whom we have already spoken.

This brings us to High street, crossing which, we pass a bakery shop; Mr. John G. Murphy's house; "Gus" Back's, with his whip factory in the rear; some vacant lots, and then, a little north of the corner of Nassau street, a long, one-story and a half edifice, built of small brick said to have been brought from Holland. This venerable building had been honored by having been the seat of the New York provincial congress, in 1746 and 1752, when driven from New York city by the prevalence there of the small-pox, and many important acts were passed here. It was, also, Gen. Putnam's headquarters, previous to the battle of Brooklyn, in August, 1776 (*ante*, I, 216). It stood some fifteen or eighteen feet above the level of the road and was, for many years, occupied by old

Squire Nichols, a cabinet maker by trade, and for thirteen years previous to 1822, a justice of the peace. His shop adjoined the eastern end of the dwelling. Subsequently it was occupied by Samuel E. Clements, as the post office and the office of his paper, *The Long Island Patriot.* On the second floor old Mr. William Hartshorn (who died in December, 1859) kept a little stationery shop, and cases where he set type for the *Patriot.* When, in 1832, in consequence of the widening of Fulton street, the old house was condemned to demolition, it was purchased by Mr. John G. Murphy, who had its venerable oak timbers sawed up into flooring for some new three-story brick houses he was erecting on Fulton near Nassau street, to the great discomfiture of his carpenters who complained that their tools were dulled by the excessive hardness of the wood.

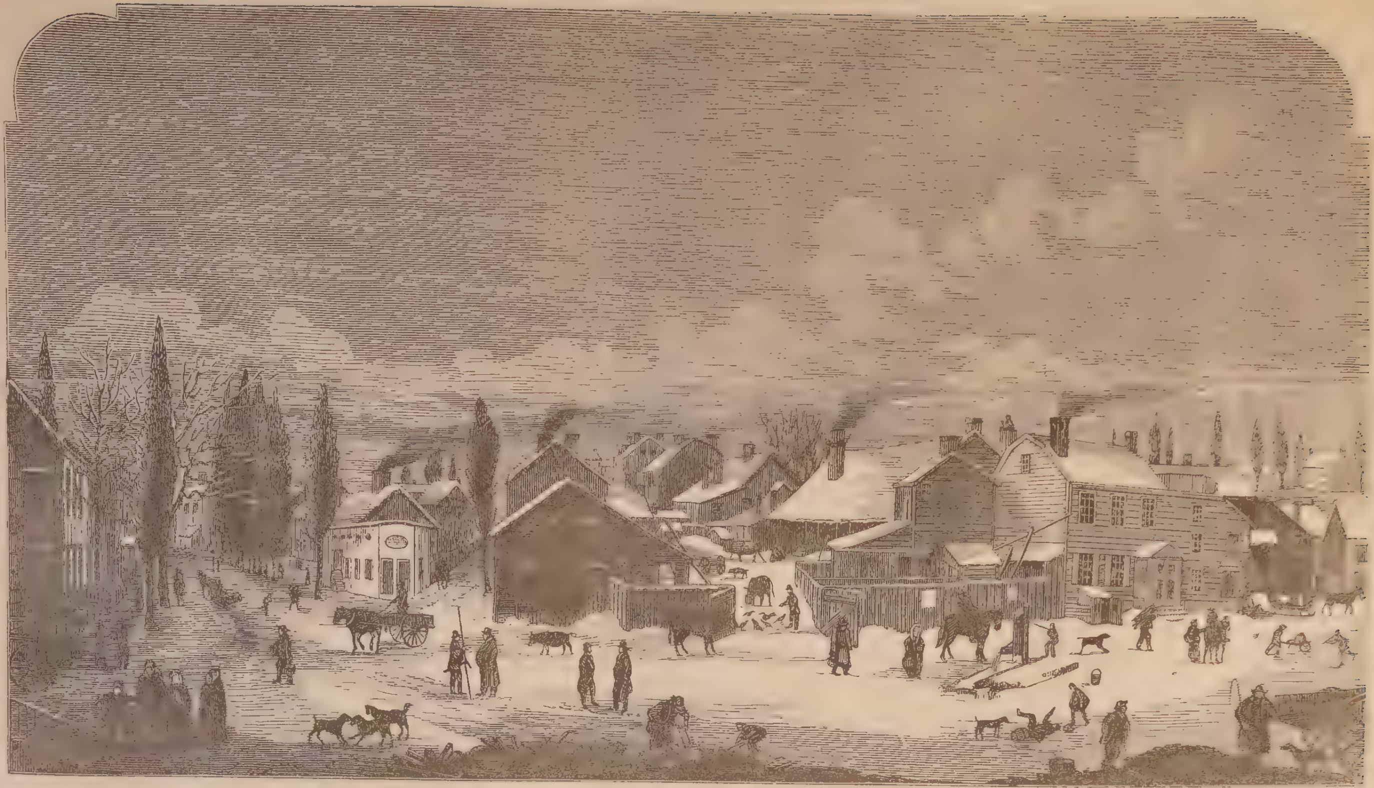
Of Squire Nichols, abovementioned, we know less than we could wish. Though far from rich, he was an honest man and universally respected. He was a native of Newark, N. J., and had seen considerable service during our Revolutionary war, having entered the American army as a private in 1775, was in the whole of that wonderful and unfortunate expedition of the northern army, under Gen. Arnold, against Quebec, and was appointed adjutant of the 4th regiment, commanded by Col. Holmes. In 1776, he was a lieutenant in Col. Nicholson's regiment raised at Quebec, was at the siege of Fort Schuyler, and the capture of Burgoyne's army. Also, in the actions of September 19th and October 7th, and other skirmishes; and, at the battle of Rhode Island, October 14th, 1778, where he commanded his company, in the absence of its captain, was twice wounded. He was short and stout in stature and very active and energetic in mind, although somewhat crippled in his feet; and, even, until within a few years of his death, was one of the most active justices of the peace which Brooklyn ever had, although he would drink, and not unfrequently swear, even "while on the bench;" still these were faults which were attributable probably to his early army associations. He died on the 23d of November, 1835, and his remains were escorted to the tomb by the mayor and civil officers of the city, by four military companies of Brooklyn, and two from New York, forming the largest funeral which was ever known in Brooklyn, and Capt. Brower's Infantry company fired a volley over the grave of the old veteran.

Crossing Nassau street we notice on the southerly corner the large square house occupied by Capt. John O'Sullivan, a re-



Key to Guy's Brooklyn Snow Scene.

1. Dwelling and store of Thos. W. Birdsall (still living, 1869).
2. House of Abiel Titus—see page 59.
3. Edward Coope's blacksmith shop.
4. Geo. Fricke's carriage shop.
5. Diana Rapelje's house.
6. Mrs. Middagh's house.
7. St. Ann's Church, corner of Sands and Washington streets.
8. Residence of Edward Coope.
9. Abiel Titus's barn and slaughter house.
10. Benjamin Meeker's house and shop.
11. Mrs. Chester's "Coffee Room."
12. Robert Cunningham's.
13. Jacob Hicks's woodyard, corner Main street.
14. Joshua Sand's residence.
15. Augustus Graham's residence, corner Dock street.
16. Burdet Stryker's house and butcher shop.
17. Selah Smith's tavern.
18. Morrison's, on the heights.
19. Dr. Ball's house, opposite Morrison's.
20. Augustus Graham, conversing with
21 Joshua Sands.
22. Mrs. Harmer and daughters.
23. Mrs. Guy (the artist's wife).
24. Jacob Patchen.
26. Mrs. Burnett.
27. Benjamin Meeker, talking with
28. Judge John Garrison.
29. Thos. W. Birdsall.
30. Jacob Hicks.
31. Abiel Titus.
32. Mrs. Gilbert Titus.
33. Abiel Titus's negro servant "Jeff."
34. James (son of Abiel) Titus, on horseback.
35. Samuel Foster (negro).



Guy's Brooklyn Snow Scene, 1820.

tired shipmaster, and father-in-law of Dr. R. S. Thorne and Dr. Hazlett.

Then Willy Stephenson's "Auld Lang Syne" Inn, before referred to, and the gardens attached to its southerly side. On the site of these gardens afterwards stood the old theatre. Next, on the corner of Concord street, was the residence of

Dr. Joseph Gedney Tarlton Hunt. He was a native of Westchester Co., N. Y., where he was born in 1783; studied medicine with some of the leading practitioners of New York at that day, among others with Dr. Whitehead Hicks and Dr. Bard. As a student he was highly esteemed, and being placed at one time, in charge of a public hospital, during a season of epidemic, displayed such fidelity and skill as to attract the attention, and merit the approbation of the common council of the city, as expressed in a formal vote of thanks. In 1804 he was licensed to practice, and appointed an assistant surgeon in the United States Navy; being promoted, in a very brief period, to the rank of full surgeon, in consequence of surgical skill displayed by him; and for fifteen years thereafter served both his country and his profession with assiduity and credit. He was a surgeon in the American fleet during the Algerine war, under Decatur; was on board the Chesapeake, when she surrendered to the British ship Leopard, and was an intimate friend of Capt. James Lawrence, of "Don't give up the ship" celebrity. For many years he was on duty at the Brooklyn navy yard, and carried on at the same time a considerable practice in the village. Finally, about 1820, he resigned from the navy, and settled on the northerly corner of Concord and Fulton streets; removing subsequently to the opposite corner, now occupied by the Brooklyn Savings Bank. He was one of the earliest members of the Kings County Medical Society, of which he was president from 1825 to 1830 inclusive; and, during the same years, health officer of the village. The estimation in which he was held by his *confreres* in the society, may be judged from the fact that, in January, 1829, they unanimously recommended him to the regents of the university of the state of New York, for the honorary degree of doctor of medicine (he having previously practiced on the old "license" system) "in consideration as the records say," of the service he has rendered to the United States, while he had the honor to belong to the navy, and for the endearment he has merited in all classes of society, since his retirement from that official station." In addition to his professional attainments, he possessed fine conversational powers and agreeable social qualities which endeared him to all who came in contact with him. He left three children, all now living and honored residents of Brooklyn, viz: Wilson G. Hunt, M. D.; Benjamin T. Hunt, and Maria, widow of Thomas B. Downing.

The southerly corner of Concord street was then a vacant lot, adjoining which was the residence of Rike Reid, hatter, and for many years a constable in the village. As such he was literally "a terror to evil doers," to whom a doggerel rhymster once addressed the following warning, in the columns of the *Star:*

Do you not fear the terrors of the law,
The direful energy of Justice Nichols?
Or lest *Rike Reid* let fall his mighty paw,
And put you all in very pretty pickles.

Then, the house of Joseph Sprague (afterwards mayor) who had in the rear of his ground, a factory for the making (by dog power) of "Whittemore cards" used in the manufacture of woolen goods.

A little above stood an old meeting house originally erected for the use of the "Independent" society, in 1785, (see page 377, first volume), and which afterwards came into the hands of the Episcopalians of Brooklyn. It adjoined the northerly side of the old Episcopal burial ground belonging to St. Ann's congregation, and which is now covered by the handsome block of stores, known as "St. Ann's Buildings." It gradually fell into decay, but was patched up and occupied as a school room, by Rev. Samuel Seabury and John Swinburne, who kept here a classical and English school of great excellence, at which many of our oldest citizens, now living, received their early education. Mr. Seabury, who had been an assistant to Mr. Evan Beynon, in his school on Concord street, until the death of that worthy pedagogue, was a fine scholar, a strict disciplinarian and a thorough teacher. He has since been widely known as an accomplished editor and theologian of the Episcopal church, and is still living. His assistant, John Swinburne, was a conscientious, methodical teacher, a good disciplinarian, and in all respects, a faithful teacher and worthy man. He is, at present, a resident of White Plains, N. Y., where for many years, he conducted a classical seminary of high reputation. The graveyard was for many years disused, being finally removed in 1860, and "St. Ann's Buildings" erected on its site.

Adjoining the southerly side of the Episcopal burying ground was the Matthew Gleaves' property, extending along the road to a point about midway between Tillary and Johnson streets, and back from the road to a point nearly midway between Washington and Adams streets.[1] On this (subsequently known as the Tillary) property, and on the site of the present extensive dry goods store of Walter Lockwood, stood the head of Norris L. Martin's rope walk, which extended back to the Wallabout meadows. The next building was Dempsey's hotel, "The Village Garden," where the gay young fellows used to go to "shoot turkey." Then, with an intervening vacant space, the residence of Capt. Samuel Angus, United States Navy, originally built by old Matthew Gleaves. Then, the home of old Mrs. Miller (mother of Mr. E. G. Miller), of whom *Furman's Manuscript Notes* preserves the following pleasant mention: "When I was quite a small boy, Brooklyn was the residence of one of the most extraordinary females I ever knew. It was Mrs. Miller, a highly respectable, well educated lady, who had an energy of mind, and force of will possessed by few men. In her active days, when anything of importance was to be done, and lagged in its performance, it was

---

[1] Furman (*Manuscript Notes*) in noticing the rapid rise of value of real estate in Brooklyn, says (in 1856) "About fifty years ago, my father was offered the 'Matthew Gleaves property,' at Tillary street, for $1,000, and he then thought the price too high. It was afterwards purchased by Dr. Tillary who laid it out into lots," and our readers can estimate its present value.

Matthew Gleaves is mentioned by De Voe (*Historical Magazine,* second series, II, 341), as being in Brooklyn as early as 1755, "at which time he appeared to be serving, or was engaged with, one of the Horsfields. The preparation for war with the French and Indians, at this period, demanded an express rider from Brooklyn, to convey the necessary papers to the magistrates at the east end of Long Island. Gleaves became thus employed by the government officers, and for the service he received the sum of five dollars. Soon after, as one of the butchers of the old Fly Market, he became engaged in a large and profitable business. In 1760. he married Miss Margaret Rote, and purchased a fine property in Brooklyn, just on the rise of the hill, and lying near the old Ferry road. At the commencement of the Revolution, Gleaves, with John Carpenter, was supplying the Continental troops with beef. After the Revolution, Gleaves was again found in the old Market, and residing in Brooklyn, with a handsome property." In the description of the property belonging once to Alexander Colden, it is said to have joined, "The land lately sold by Timothy Horsonly necessary to enlist the sympathies and aid of Mrs. Miller, and it was almost certain to be accomplished. Her public spirit and desire to serve and assist her fellow creatures was unbounded. I have known her, in those dreadful fires which so often devastated Brooklyn, when I was a boy, to go down upon the ferry stairs and form a line and then stand in the salt water up to her knees, in the night, passing along buckets of water to supply the engines employed in extinguishing the flames." This property, in 1834, was purchased by Henry Waring, who built thereon the house where he lived and died.

Near Mrs. Miller's, was Moses Montgomery, originally a gardener with Isaac Riley, the printer and bookbinder at Flatbush, and who subsequently served Mr. H. B. Pierrepont in the same capacity. He was a large powerful man, and his garden was called "Shamrock Hall." From this garden, the Johnson estate extended up to the line of the Duffield estate, about the corner of Adams and Willoughby streets, where was the head of a rope walk which extended along the line of the estate, and was leased by James Engles.

---

field to John Kingston," which was on the south side of Fulton street, from high water mark, up, over the hill. Another plot was said to have been "granted to John Tallman, by the said Timothy Horsfield, in a deed bearing date the third day of October, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and fifty-three." One other piece of land was said to be "lying to the south-east of a dwelling house, about five or six rods distant, bounded on the north, by the land belonging to *Matthew Gleaves;* south by the land of John Carpenter; and on the west by a road leading to the highway." In the year 1786 or 1787, he was one of those who organized an Episcopal church, now "St. Ann's."

Matthew Gleaves is described by those who knew him well, as a finely formed man, as well as a finished gentleman, and one of the best dressed in the profession. He regarded personal appearance with particular care and precision. One of his associates says: "He invariably looked as if he came out of a *band box,* when he arrived at the Fly Market for daily business. He usually wore silk breeches, with buckles to match, which also fastened up the pearl-white silk stockings which covered his well formed limbs, and in addition to these, another pair of large silver buckles garnished the highly polished shoes which completed this portion of his *understanding.* Above, on his cranium, he wore a well powdered wig, which fell in a curling roll around his shoulders; while on the top of all, gracefully rested his neat three-cornered hat. He died about the year 1800; a true gentleman of the olden school."

WALK THE SECOND, *over that portion of the village lying north and east of the Old Ferry road (Fulton street), and along the streets at that time opened through it, viz: Water, Front, Main, Prospect, Sands, High, Concord and Nassau streets.*

Water street. On the *north* side of the street, between Old Ferry road and Dock street, were but six buildings, of which only two challenge any especial notice, viz: Townsend & Cox's (afterwards Richard Mott's), tavern on the spot now occupied by Marston and Power's extensive coal yard; and the large brick and stone distillery not far from Dock street and fronting the river and said to have been built by John Jackson. It was here that the Brothers Graham commenced their Brooklyn career as distillers, about 1816, and were succeeded by old Cunningham, the Scotchman;[1] and he in turn by Robert Bach, who after a while erected a distillery on Furman street. After his removal the old distillery was used for storage, etc., and gradually fell into shabby condition and repute.

On the *south* side of the street between Old Ferry and Dock streets, we notice on the corner, Barnum's Hotel, now succeeded by the "Franklin Hotel;" vacant lots; the livery stables belonging to the Townsend & Cox tavern opposite; the tanyard of Losee Van Nostrand (afterwards of Talford & Van Nostrand); and some vacant lots (extending nearly to the corner of Dock street) upon which Alexander Birbeck subsequently erected his blacksmithery.

At the foot of Dock street, a few years later, was David Anderson's[2] stone yard, and, from this point there was nothing on the north side of the street, which was washed by the tide, except a few tar sheds belonging to Mr. A. H. Van Bokkelin, until you came within fifty or sixty feet of Main street, to a small blacksmith's shop, and next it, on the corner, a large frame building used for storage of salt, and at present occupied by the pump and block factory of the Murdock Brothers.

---

[1] William Cunningham was a tall, powerfully built, "canny" old Scotchman, a man of very positive opinions, and unblemished reputation. After he left this place he built a distillery on the corner of Front and Washington streets (seen in Guy's picture, No. 12) and amassed a large fortune. He left two sons, George and William, and two daughters, one of whom married Mr. William M. Harris, president of the Nassau Fire Insurance Company of Brooklyn.

[2] David Anderson, a native of Scotland, came to Brooklyn about 1809; was trustee of the village in 1825, a worthy man and a much esteemed citizen. He died in May, 1839.

On the east side, between Dock and Main streets, were the rears of Augustus Graham's and Joshua Sands' gardens; the dwelling of William Cornwell, the tailor and a vestryman of St. Ann's, of which church he was, also, for many years, the treasurer; and, on the south-west corner of Water and Main streets, a tavern and livery stable kept by Whitehead Howard, and in which one of the Bownes was interested.

At the foot of Main street was the "New," or Catharine street Ferry, and a small public market, bearing a close resemblance to that at the Fulton Ferry, and commonly known as "Titus' market" from the fact that Abiel Titus kept a butcher's stand there.

On the north-east corner of Main and Water streets was Van Winkle's tavern and grocery, and a little beyond, a cooper's shop; and on the south-east corner, a grocery kept by Peter Snyder, who was also a ferryman upon the New ferry; and from this point to near the line of the present Bridge street, was an open sand-beach,[1] upon which the ship and dock builders of New York were accustomed to moor their timber rafts, which had been floated down the North river, and were sold and delivered from this spot. From the beach the land rose gradually into hills, and near the foot of one of these eminences, about eighty feet eastward of where the present Adams street comes to the river, stood the famous "old Tulip Tree," described on page 390 of our first volume. It is said to have measured thirty feet at its lower and twenty-five feet at its upper, circumference, having, according to tradition, been brought to this spot from the woods in the pocket of the person who transplanted it.

On a high hill near the line of the present Bridge street was a large establishment called "Mount Prospect Tavern," a great resort of the New York rowdies who used to come over in rowboats from the city, accompanied by their girls, and hold high carnival here. Drunkenness, fighting, noise and profanity had "full swing" here, unchecked by any fear of the New York authorities or village constables.

---

[1] Main street was between high and low water mark, until it reached the corner of present Pearl street; then, the water lines ran out to the corner of the present Gold street and thence, along the line of the present Marshall street, to the navy yard.

On the north-east corner of Water and Bridge street was a large frame building known as "the Red Stores" used as a hay press by the Messrs. Thorne, with a dock in front, upon which the bay sloops discharged their cargoes. From this point to the present Little street, were only high sand hills, with here and there a shabby house.

Upon the south-west corner of Water and Little street was an old tavern, kept by one Scott, and torn down, after his death, by his widow, who erected a new house upon the spot, which was kept as an inn for many years after. In 1817, Capt. Evans then commandant at the United States navy yard, opened, mainly for his convenience, a gate into the yard, on the line of Water street; and, in connection with John Little, established a ferry from the foot of Little street to Walnut (near Jackson) street, New York, (as they said) for the accommodation of the mechanics and others employed in the yard. The establishment of the ferry was speedily followed by the erection of a number of dwellings, on the eastern line of Little street, up to the navy yard wall. On the opposite side of the street and against the navy yard wall, Little set up a tavern; and, adjoining him, Barney Henrietta, a Irish sawyer in the yard, purchased a house and lot which he occupied until his death in 1825. Grog shops arose in all directions in the neighborhood and real estate commanded a better price than it then did at the Fulton ferry. Upon the hill, immediately in the rear of Henrietta's house, was erected a building, the first floor of which was occupied as a "Shooting Gallery," and, in the upper part which overlooked the interior of the navy yard, was placed a "shuffle board." This building overlooking the navy yard was a great place of resort for those who wished to obtain a view thereof; the principal attraction, at that time, being the building of the United States line of battle ship, Ohio, by Henry Eckford, which was launched in May, 1820.

Front street, west side. We commence our walk through this street at the Remsen house which stood upon the site of the old Rapalje house (vol. I, 78, 79, 312). Next to this building, during the years immediately succeeding the Revolutionary war (1784–1815), there had been an old two-story frame dwelling occupied by Dr. Barbarin, the first settled physician of Brooklyn; while, next beyond, with an intervening space, was a small frame dwelling belonging to the Rapalje estate. It will be remembered, by the readers of our first volume, that this estate, comprising about one hundred and sixty acres,[1] had been purchased, from the commissioners of forfeiture by Messrs. Comfort and Joshua Sands, who paid for it, it is said, in soldier's pay certificates which they had bought up in large quantities at a rate of discount which made the operation a very good speculation for them. Old Mrs. Rapalje, the mother of John Rapalje, by virtue of some right in the property, refused to give possession, which necessitated the official interference of the sheriff, who put the old lady out into the street, in her arm chair.

The Sands Brothers were from Cow Neck, since called Sands' Point, Queens County, L. I., at which place their great grandfather was an original settler.[2]

Comfort Sands, the eldest, was born February 26th, 1748, served during his early life as a clerk in a store of his native village; and went to New York, in 1762, where he entered the employ of a merchant in Peck Slip. In 1769, he commenced business on his own account and also married; was successful and had amassed a considerable fortune before the opening of the Revolutionary war. In March, 1776, he purchased a small farm at New Rochelle, but, upon the approach of the British troops, removed his family to Philadelphia, thence to Rochester, Ulster county, N. Y., where they remained until 1778; thence to Poughkeepsie and again to Philadelphia, where they remained until the Declaration of Peace, in 1783, when he settled permanently at New York.

---

[1] Bounded on the north, by a line drawn about one hundred feet northerly of Gold street, on the east by a line about one hundred feet westerly of Tillary street, on the southerly side by Fulton street to its junction with Main, and thence by James street and through Front to the corner of Fulton and so, in a straight line, to the East river, which formed its westerly bounds. (See, also, note 3, p. 78, vol. I).

[2] *Thompson's History of Long Island,* II, 463–469.

During the whole of this trying period, he sustained the character of an active and useful patriot. He served, from November, 1775, to July, 1776, as a member of the New York provincial congress, and was then chosen, by the New York convention, as auditor-general of the state, at a salary of £300. This office he resigned, in October, 1781, and, with his brothers Richardson and Joshua, took a contract to supply the northern army with provisions for the year 1782. In the following year, he formed a partnership with his brother Joshua, and carried on an extensive and lucrative mercantile business, until 1794. During this period he represented the city several times in the assembly. He was twice married, and died at Hoboken, N. J., September 22d, 1834, aged eighty-six years. As a merchant; one of the first directors of the old bank of New York and president of the Chamber of Commerce, he held a high position in the mercantile circles of his day.[1] Yet, he lived to see his large property pass away from his hands and himself reduced to comparative poverty. He, also, outlived all his children, the greater part of whom died without issue. By his second wife, he was the father of Robert C. Sands, whose varied attainments and fine intellectual powers rendered his early death a serious loss to American literature.

His younger brother, JOSHUA SANDS, who became more intimately identified with Brooklyn, by the purchase of the Rapalje estate, was also born at Sands' Point, October 12th, 1757. At the age of fifteen, he commenced his business life as a clerk; but, in 1776, was invited by Col. Trumbull, of Connecticut, to accept a position in the commissariat department of the American army, with the rank of captain. He is said to have contributed very material aid in facilitating the retreat of the American army from Long Island, after the battle of August 26th, 1776. The inactivity of so quiet a position in such threatening times little accorded with his active habits, and therefore, in 1777 he together with his brothers Richardson and Comfort, tendered proposals for the supply of clothing and provisions to the northern army. These were accepted by Robert Morris, and were faithfully carried out on their part; but the scarcity of means at the command of the treasury department not allowing of a fulfillment of the contract on the part of government they became great sufferers, although afterwards partially reimbursed by a special act of congress. At the close of the war, he became a partner with his brother Comfort in mercantile pursuits, and, in 1784, they became the purchasers of the Rapalje estate, as already stated. In 1786, he removed his residence to Brooklyn and built for himself, on his new purchase, a handsome frame mansion, about fifty feet square and furnished with remarkable elegance for that day. This house, situated on the north side of Front street, about a hundred feet east of Dock street (his coach house and stables being on the opposite side of Front street), was the largest in the village at the time, and was surrounded by a fine garden which extended to the river. The mansion subsequently came into the possession of John B. Cazeaux, Esq., who in July, 1824, converted it into two dwellings, one remaining as No. 25 Front street. About this time, also, Mr. Sands made another addition to the material interests of the town with which he had become identified by residence. Conceiving the idea of manufacturing the cordage and rigging for his own vessels, he imported both machinery and workmen from England, and established here extensive rope walks which became the beginning of a new and most important branch of industry. Mr. Sands rapidly became a man of mark in the community; represented this district in the state senate, from 1792 to 1798; was made a member of the council of appointment for the southern district of New York, in January, 1797, and was judge of the county of Kings. In 1797 he was, on the recommendation of Gov. Jay, appointed collector of the customs of the port of New York, from which office he was removed by President Jefferson in 1801. He was, also, president of the Merchant's Bank; and, in 1803–1805, represented this district in congress, to which he was again sent in 1825–1827. In 1824, he was chosen president of the board of trustees of Brooklyn, with which village he was always prominently connected in political, religious and social affairs, and which he lived to see an incorporated and thriving city. He died September 13th, 1835, universally respected, it having been justly said of him, that "no man enjoyed more fully the esteem and confidence of the inhabitants, without distinction of party, and all his official duties were performed with singular ability, and fidelity. To an amiable disposition and great goodness of heart he united a high-toned spirit of independence and an indomitable tenacity of purpose which never swerved when he thought he was right." He had twelve children, some of whom are yet living.

---

[1] See, for further details, *Thompson's History of Long Island,* II, 466, 467.

Of his amiable wife, we purpose to speak more at length, in connection with St. Ann's church, with which her memory is indissolubly connected.

We have thus described Front street as it appeared during the first few years succeeding the revolution. The visitor of 1815,

---

[1] His popularity may be judged from the fact that in February, 1793, when nominated for congress, he received in Kings county 425 votes (228 in Brooklyn) against 32 received by Henry Peters, and 12 by Thomas Treadwell, his competitors.

however, would have found the appearance of the street somewhat changed. Passing by the brick Remsen house, and two vacant lots, he would have come to a modern brick house owned by Mr. John Cox, a merchant of New York, and an estimable citizen, whose sudden death, being killed in attempting to jump aboard the ferry boat as it was leaving the dock, was among the first of those ferry accidents which have since unhappily grown so frequent; then to John Fisher's three yellow brick houses.[1] John (whom we have already mentioned in connection with Diana Rapalje, his second wife) lived in the corner house (on Dock street), his garden extending back to Water street. On the other side of Dock street was the substantial brick house, yet standing, and occupied as the office of the Brooklyn and Newtown Rail Road Company. This was built by Augustus Graham, in 1814 or 1815, on land which originally formed a portion of the Joshua Sands' garden, and which he purchased in 1806, at the sale of the Messrs. Sands' real estate under foreclosure of a mortgage held by the Bank of New York. On the rear of this property (corner of Water and Dock streets) Mr. Graham subsequently erected his white lead manufactory. Then passing Sands' mansion and several vacant lots, he would notice an old-fashioned two-story house said to have belonged to the Rapalje family and afterwards occupied by Mr. Adrian H. Van Bokkelin, merchant, whose tar-sheds on the rear of this lot, we have already noticed in our walk through Water street. Then Robert Bach's house, afterwards occupied by John Benson; and, with another interval, the two-story frame dwelling of William Cornwell, the tailor. This brings us to the north-west corner of Front and Main streets, which was occupied by a two-story frame grocery, in which, we believe the late Edward Copeland, mayor of Brooklyn, commenced business.

The *southerly* side of Front street, from Old Ferry to Main streets is well represented in Guy's Picture.[1] First, on the corner of the Old Ferry road was the Thomas W. Birdsall house and store (Guy's Picture No 1) then Abiel Titus' yard and his slaughter house (Guy's Picture No. 9) on the corner of the present James street, which, however, at the time of which we speak, was simply a passage way up from Front street, containing a few small

---

[1] Present Nos. 9, 11 and 13 Front street.

[2] Guy's "*Snow Scene,*" representing the most important and compact portion of Brooklyn as it stood in 1820, will forever be invaluable as exhibiting the architectural character of the village at that period; and, in some degree for half a century

---

previous. It was taken from a second story window of the artist's residence, the middle one (present No. 11 Front street), of the three Fisher houses.[1]

In order to properly understand this picture (a reduced copy of which is herewith presented) the modern observer should place himself near the corner of Front and Dock streets, and look up James street on the opposite side. He will, then, look along Front street, on his left as far as the eye can reach, to Main street, indicated by horses and teams passing up from the Main Street Ferry; and, on his right, to Fulton street, which is indicated by the horse and sleigh passing down to the Old or Fulton Ferry. A confusion of ideas is generally produced in the mind of the modern observer by mistaking the rears of the old buildings directly in the front of the picture, for their fronts. But it should be remembered that the fronts, which are on Fulton street, are invisible. Tracing, however, the line of roofs and rears by the aid of the *key* which we have appended to this picture, the reader will be able to follow Fulton street up as far as Sands street. The high grounds on the right of the picture have been levelled and streets graded, so that nothing of their original conformation is now visible.

Of its merits as a work of art, our readers can judge for themselves, by visiting it at the Brooklyn Institute; of its accuracy and value as a historic painting, we have the united testimony of all our oldest inhabitants, in its favor. The following interesting cotemporaneous notice is from the *New York Columbian:* "It is a winter snow scene, taken from Guy's paint room window, in Front street, Brooklyn. The sky is grand, a bright glow of warmth in the east is finely contrasted by a cold, dark towering cloud in the west; under which the snow-clad buildings receive a blaze of light from the morning sun; and from the breakfast cooking fires the smoke ascends from almost every chimney, and on one (with fine effect) a sweep-boy sits singing to let his employers know he is at the top. As to the view in general, as some perhaps would term it, the composition of the picture seems as if it had been contrived and formed for the pencil; for, although the painter has a view upon three different streets, not two buildings are to be seen alike, either in size, shape, or color; and the stables, barns, and old back buildings of Mr. Titus stand well contrasted with the handsome buildings of Messrs. Sands, Graham, Birdsall, etc.

"As to the likenesses introduced, most of them are very striking, and the accuracy with which their faces are painted (the small size of the figures considered) is wonderful. Mr. Titus is represented standing in his gateway feeding chickens, and a good likeness of his cow feeding in the yard, and a fine red bullock standing outside the gate, waiting for admission. Near this is a likeness of a negro skin-dresser going to the swamp for water; this figure seems to be alive. At the pump a genteel country lad, on horseback, is requesting a girl to give his horse a drink of water out of her

[1] Fronting the wood pile where the sawyers, in the picture, are engaged.

buildings, mostly occupied by negroes. On the opposite corner of the alley was the carpenter's shop and dwelling (Guy's Picture, No. 10) of Benjamin Meeker, who came to Brooklyn from Springfield, N. J., probably in 1809, in July, of which year he commenced business in Main street (firm of Meeker

---

pail. On the ice near the pump, a negro boy has tumbled down with his pail; another boy stands by laughing at his misfortune. On the foreground is the likeness of a wood sawyer in the act of sawing, and the cordwood around him is surely one of the best deceptions ever painted. On the same line lies a chaldron of pit coal just delivered, and the carman, as if waiting for his money, is leaning against the tail of his cart holding a laughing conversation with another negro, whose business (if he would mind it) is to shovel in the coal. On the foreground pavement is seen Mrs. Guy, and several other ladies who would be known by their correct and striking likenesses. In the street, by the side of a sleigh track, stands Mr. Birdsall in conversation with Mr. Jacob Hicks, and near them Mr. Garrison and Mr. Meeker.

"On the pavement near their own dwellings stands Mr. Sands with Mr. Graham. All this with dung carts, sleighs, wheel-barrows, capering boys, grubbing swine, barn door fowls, and quarreling dogs form one of the most natural, lively and fascinating pictures I ever beheld. Thus have I given a brief description of the picture, and quite forgot one of the most striking productions in it, namely, Mr. Patchen, the butcher, who is crossing Front street with a fore-quarter of mutton in one hand, and a basket in the other."

Francis Guy was born at Burton, in Kendal, England, in the year 1760. His father was a farmer and his mother was a daughter of John Lolly, of Kirby-Lonsdale, an eminent glass painter and stainer, and reputed to be, in his day, the only person living in England or Europe who possessed the ancient secret of glass-staining. William, at an early age, developed a strong taste for the beautiful in art and nature; but his father was very unwilling to have him become an artist; and, finally, by force and much against the lad's will, apprenticed him to a tailor of Burton. Here he was so cruelly used that he was frequently obliged, from hunger, to dig out a cabbage from under the snow to obtain a scanty breakfast. To these miseries, also, were added the pangs of an unrequited affection, and the disappointment which he felt at being unable to follow those nobler pursuits towards which all his aspirations tended. Finally, however, he cut loose from this bondage and wandered around, in many places, supporting himself by tailoring; until, in November, 1778, he entered London, tired, hungry and utterly friendless. For awhile, he suffered extremely from hunger; but, fortunately obtaining a place as a foreman in a tailoring establishment, he managed by industry and rigid economy to secure a slender capital, with which he established himself in business. About the same time, also, he married a most excellent woman, of whose companionship, however, he was soon after deprived by death. Being of an inventive turn of mind he devised machinery for calendering or glazing silks and calicoes, which secured him a large trade in London; and, at length, brought him to the notice of Lady Mary Howe, by whom he was introduced to the patronage of the Queen, and he was shortly after

& Colles), as house carpenter and cabinet-maker, but the partnership was soon dissolved in 1812. He was a quiet, unassuming man; a "good Clintonian" in politics; originally an attendant at the Methodist church, but afterwards a Presbyterian; was a member of the Mechanics Association, and died in 1849, much

---

appointed dyer and calenderer to Her Majesty. Getting into trouble with a gang of swindlers who intruded themselves upon his confidence and finally threatened his life, he left England and came to New York, in September, 1795. Soon after his arrival, he was seized with symptoms resembling those of the yellow fever (then prevailing in that city) and strolled through Brooklyn and Flatbush, vainly seeking shelter and repose. At length, a kind tavern keeper and his wife named Ailesworth (Ellsworth) living near the toll-gate, took him in, and (despite the remonstrances of neighbors and others, who believed that he had the dreaded fever) nursed him through his illness with a fidelity and tenderness which he narrates with the most affecting gratitude, in his manuscript autobiography. In November, 1796, he formed a partnership, for the prosecution of the silk dyeing, scouring and calendering business, with John Harmer, who erected a factory in Brooklyn for the use of his machinery; but, failing to receive expected funds from England, from the lawyer employed to settle up his affairs, Guy was obliged to dissolve the partnership, and removed to Philadelphia. Here he painted a picture of the Tontine Coffee House, New York, which won the admiration of President John Adams and others, none of whom, however, purchased it; and it was finally disposed of by a raffle which yielded barely sufficient to pay for paints and canvas. He then went to Baltimore, where he resided for several years, enduring much hardship and many misfortunes, working occasionally at dyeing, but overcoming all trials by good principles and energy. During his whole life he worked, at intervals, at landscape painting, which was the subject of his bent and genius, and which claimed his undying devotion. When, in Baltimore, his dye works were burned, leaving him penniless, he contrived to establish his wife in a small business, and gave his own attention, thenceforth, exclusively to his darling pursuit. He began to prosper; and, at the time of writing his autobiography, (about 1808) he says "the principal connoisseurs in America approve and recommend my pictures. Last spring, in Baltimore only, I disposed of paintings to the amount of $1,500. For several years past, I have labored to imitate the ancients in their method of coloring and effect, and I hope I have not labored in vain. Many of my pictures, which have been recently finished, have been taken by the best judges to be one hundred years of age." Guy returned to Brooklyn about the year 1817, took the Fisher House (No. 11 Front street) and devoted himself mainly to his chief work which undoubtedly is his "*Brooklyn Snow Scene*."[1] Previously to this it is known

[1] To show the nature of the matters which also occupied his mind during this time, and which are curiously illustrative of his peculiar mechanical talents, we subjoin the following advertisements, from the *Star*, of March 8, 1820:

PROPOSALS FOR PUBLISHING BY SUBSCRIPTION, A TREATISE ON DOMESTIC DYEING; ALSO A TREATISE ON LANDSCAPE PAINTING; WITH AN ACCOUNT OF THE AUTHOR'S LIFE; BY FRANCIS GUY, LANDSCAPE Painter, and *formerly Dyer, Orris cleaner, and Calenderer to the late Queen and* respected. His portrait is one of those given in Guy's Picture. Next, with an intervening vacant lot, was Mrs. Chester's (Guy's Picture No 11)[1] memorable as the "Cradle of the Drama," in Brooklyn, a two-story house with a long stoop in front; and then (Guy's Picture, No. 12) a large brick house, old Mr. Cunningham's

[1] See *Chapter on the Drama in Brooklyn.*

---

that he indulged, at intervals, in the habit of drinking, even to excess; although against his full and clear knowledge of the results of such practice, and despite the deep repentance and remorse which always followed such indulgence. Yet, we learn, that, while engaged upon this picture, he was abstemious and sober, the excitement of his work being sufficient for him. Mr. Thomas W. Birdsall relates that Guy, as he painted, would sometimes call out of the window, to his subjects, as he caught sight of them on their customary ground, to stand still, while he put in the characteristic strokes. Mr. Birdsall was in the daily habit of riding on horseback and kept his horse in a stable on James street. Guy seized him just in the position shown in the picture. So, also, Jacob Hicks, whose house is just visible on the corner of Main street, was "brought to a halt" goose in hand; and, after he had been sketched, politely sent the goose as a present to the painter, that he might "sketch the fowl more deliberately, and eat him afterward."

Mrs. Guy, a second wife, and some ten years older than her husband, was a good religious woman, and a member of the Methodist church. They had no children, and

Princesses of England, and Her Royal Highness the Duchess of York, at No. 10, *Lower James street, Golden Square, England.* The treatise on Domestic Dyeing is intended to instruct families in the most simple, plain and easy manner, how to Dye and Dress all kinds of silks, mohair shawls, etc., whether formed into gowns, cloaks, bonnets, shawls, coats, etc. Also how to Scour woolen garments, and remove from them spots of *paint* and *grease;* and also to Dye calicoes, linens or muslins, colours suitable for gowns, bed furniture, window curtains, etc. * * *

"The History of the Author's Life abounds with an uncommon variety of amusing facts, and in a moral point of view, may be rendered extremely useful, it shows the different kind of stratagems, that deceitful men make use of to ensnare the unsuspicious, sets a mark upon the covered pits into which the unwary travellers through life are in danger of falling; and a number of melancholy instances of the sad effects of *Deism*, and the lives and awful deaths of some of its professors, etc.

"Plain directions will also be given at the conclusion of the work, how to make Durable Carpets of common *Hanging Paper*, the author having received a patent for the discovery, but will, in this way, give it to the public." This work was to be published as soon as a sufficient number of subscribers could be obtained, at a price "not more, and probably less, than $1.50 per copy." With the *Patent Paper Carpet*, above referred to, Guy covered the floor of the room 68 William street, New York, in which, in July, 1819, he opened to public view a collection of one hundred and twenty "Landscapes, Sea and Harbor Paintings."

Also, "To whom it may concern: Be it known, that as pins are fixed in the cylinder of a hand organ, to touch the respective keys, and play a tune according to the gamut, on the same principle the subscriber has discovered a method of weaving any pattern that ever was or ever can be wove, and has long since given notice of the same to Dr. Thornton, at the patent office in the city of Washington. Francis Guy, Landscape Painter, Brooklyn.

"N. B.—The above discovery will enable the American manufacturers to weave the most intricate patterns, such as Marseilles quilting, all kinds of carpeting, damask, knotted counterpanes, etc., etc., with as much ease and nearly as cheap as the plainest fabricks. F. G."

(*Star*, April 12, 1820).

residence, still standing; then an alley, which is now called Garrison street. Between this alley and Main street, (Guy's Picture No. 13) were about six lots of ground occupied as a wood and lumber yard, by Jacob Hicks, who lived on the corner. "Wood Hicks," as he was called — the better to distinguish him from several others of the same name — was a clever jolly, old man, with a

---

her husband was much attached to her, and did much to secure her good opinion; while she, at times, was obliged to submit to his foibles and humor his faults.

The picture was, at length, completed and exposed to public view, visited by all, and much admired. The scene then stood precisely as represented upon the canvas, and every actor in it was then alive. With the completion of his work, however, the strictness of his resolution of abstinence was relaxed, and he began to send his wife out for brandy. On the morning of the 12th of August, 1820, he had been out, and on his return home sent her to a neighboring store for the desired stimulant, which she procured, and of which he continued to drink freely, until some extraordinary demonstration on his part led her to rush into the street and call in the neighbors. Ralph Malbone, Thos. W. Birdsall, Jerome Schenck and others were present when it became evident that he was near his end. He was entirely wild, babbled confusedly, and quoted Shakespeare. Guy was of medium size, with a sallow complexion and black eyes. He possessed an ardent temperament and a social and convivial disposition. His talents were of a high order, and with little elementary instruction he had much improved his mind by general reading. Shakespeare was his favorite author, and constantly quoted by him. He was, like many of his profession, reckless of money, and it is told of him by one who knew him well, that on one occasion having, after some persuasion, succeeded in borrowing $5 of his friend John Harmer (who had come to distrust him in money matters), he met a boy on the street carrying a canary bird in its cage. He straightway purchased the bird and cage, with the just borrowed money, and shortly after meeting Mr. Ralph Malbone, presented them to him. Mr. Birdsall says of him that Guy was inclined to be disputatious, but generally in good temper. When not able to agree with Mr. B. in discussion, he would say, "Well, you differ and I differ, and that's all the difference there is between us." After his death Mrs. Guy disposed in 1824, of sixty-two of his landscape paintings, by auction, in Wall street, New York, the proceeds amounting to $1,295.50, an average of nearly $21 a piece. The "Snow Scene," had, however, been previously bought (1823) at private sale by Mr. James Parshall of New York, from whom it was subsequently obtained for $200 by contributions of friends of the Brooklyn Institute where it can now be seen by those of our citizens who are curious in such matters.

At the sale of Guy's pictures we find mentioned on the catalogue "No. 39, Winter Scene in Brooklyn," and "No. 40, Summer View in Brooklyn," both of which were purchased, the former for $30 and the latter for $26, by Mr. Henry. "No. 39," we presume is the one now hanging in Phil. Grogan's New Bank Oyster House in Fulton street, Brooklyn, and was undoubtedly, the first sketch of the scene, being entirely without figures.

"horse laugh," that might be heard a mile off—always clad in a roundabout, and carrying in his hand the measuring stick, with which he measured his stock-in-trade. He had two children, Charles and John M. Hicks, who inherited the ample fortune which their father's industry had accumulated. Charles died in early manhood; John M. is still living, one of our most respected citizens. He married Maria, the daughter of old Selah Smith, the tavern keeper; held the office of county clerk from Nov., 1843, to Nov., 1849; and, represented the second ward of the city in the first board of aldermen, 1834 to '35.

Upon the north-east corner of Front and Main streets was a grocery, and upon the south-east corner a large frame tenement house; but, although Front street was opened for travel for some five hundred yards farther from this point, northward to where the sand hills again presented themselves, yet there were no buildings of any importance on its north side, and only a few miserable ones on its south side.

Main street. Omitting a repetition of the buildings already mentioned, as on the corners of Water and Front streets, we will notice simply those of importance on this street from the river to Prospect street.

On the westerly side of the street, and south of Hicks' wood-yard, were a few small wooden dwellings, and then David Anderson's house, whose stone yard we have already mentioned as being at the foot of Dock street. There were no other houses of note on this side until you come to those near the junction of Fulton and Main, all of which extended through from street to street, as they now do.

Along the easterly side of Main street, were but few buildings. On, or near the present corner of Main and York streets, was John Moon's house, and his next neighbor, was the house and garden of Capt. John O. Zuill, master of the good ship Gleaner, in the West India trade. He married a daughter of Bishop Roorback, of New York; was a hearty, sociable man, of some note in Brooklyn society, and an estimable citizen. Next him, was James Cornell, butcher, his slaughter house in the rear, and adjoining his house an *ice-house*—he being, it is said, the first man in Brooklyn who put up ice for summer use. Then, we notice the house and paint shop of Capt. John Allen, commander of one of the uniformed military companies of the village.

Then some small tenements, and, on the north-east corner of *Prospect street*, a large frame building, where James Burtis kept a grocery and feed store. Along the *north* side of Prospect street, next to Burtis's — there were, on either corner of Stewart's alley, a small two-story frame house. The north-east corner of Prospect street and Stewart's alley, is most pleasantly associated, in the mind of early Brooklynites, with a famous restaurant kept there for many years, by John Joseph, otherwise better known as Johnny Joe, and, who as "a character" of the olden times deserves to be sketched. He was a native of Martinique, West Indies, from whence he was brought, about 1795, by a Frenchman, who left him in New York, to serve for a time as a waiter in several families. At the commencement of the war of 1812, he accompanied Capt. Alexander Hamilton (son of the great statesman), of Col. Bogardus's regiment, to Governor's island, which was then occupied as a recruiting station. From there he went to Canada with Capt. Jeremiah Hayden, and was with Generals Brown and Scott, in 1814, soon after the battle of Chippewa. Returning, he lived awhile with Com. Renshaw, of Brooklyn, then, in 1817, with Col. Thayer at West Point, where he remained until 1821, and then accompanied Beaufort T. Watts, secretary of legation, to South America. He returned here in 1825, with a snug little fortune of some $1,600 in gold, the result of diligent industry and careful economy; married a West Indian mulatto woman, then living in the family of Capt. John O. Zuill of Brooklyn, and taking a lease of the building on Prospect street, opened a restaurant which he continued for some twenty years. He expended considerable money in the repairs of these buildings, and was not fortunate in his tenants. In the end, although his immediate business had been popular and successful, the expenses of his real estate swallowed up his earnings. He surrendered his lease and retired upon a small piece of land in Queens county, near Jericho, at a place called Bushy Plains, where he resides with his wife in a settlement of colored people, working very diligently for a living. Johnny Joe's was the favorite place for the symposia of the Hamiltonians, and many of our citizens will remember that he took especial pride in keeping the best Heidsick and in preparing a quality of fried oysters, which they all agree were never equaled since the world began, and which are duly celebrated in the favorite Hamiltonian song ending in

> "Where we all ate the oyster fries,
> Down there at Johnny Joe's."

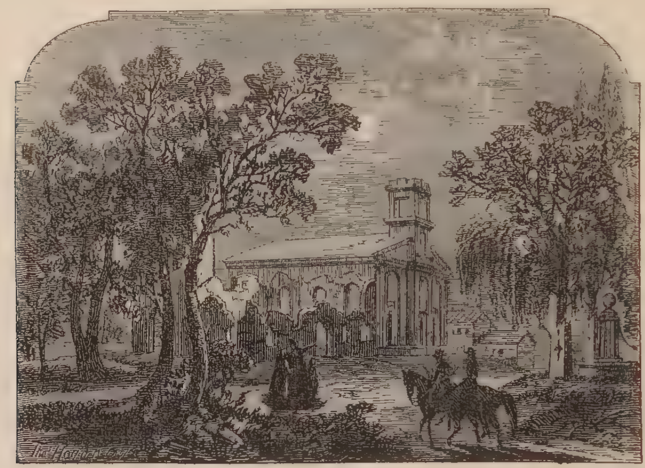
Then Mr. Stewart's comfortable double house, and a frame dwelling adjoining. Then were hills, about as far as the present Jay street, where there was a two-story frame house, with a dairy establishment attached. Beyond this, Prospect street, although open, did not contain more than ten small tenements. At or near the present Gold street was a gate, from which a pathway, or lane, led up to King's hill, as it was then called, to a large mansion situated on the highest part of the hill, and occupied by Robert Morris, who had purchased a large tract of the adjoining property at the sale of the C. & J. Sands property, in 1806, under the foreclosure of the mortgage against the Sandses by the Bank of New York.

At about the termination of the present York street, were the United States Marine Barracks, which could only be reached (for York street was not then open or used as a street), "across lots" from Sands street, or *via* Jackson street, at that time, a mere crooked lane. These barracks, substantially built of brick, were occupied in front as the residence of the commandant of the corps, and the rear (which extended into the Navy Yard) by the inferior officers and privates. The southern entrance to the yard was some fifty feet west of the present one.

Sands street, from the Old Road (Fulton street) to the Wallabout toll bridge.

Passing Drs. Ball and Wendell's office and drug store, on the northerly side of Sands street, after leaving the old road we pass vacant lots until we come to old St. Ann's church, which then fronted on Sands street, with its side doors on Washington street.

It was, at the time of which we speak, the new St. Ann's, the first permanent home which the Episcopalians of Brooklyn had attained, after nearly a quarter of a century's buffeting about among private houses, barns, and old barracks. It was erected in 1805, during the rectorship of the Rev. John Ireland. Heavy in form, constructed of rough stone, overlaid with a coat of plaster and painted of a dark *blue* color, it would probably be considered, now-a-days, as a miracle of ugliness. Even then, the smallness of its windows and the *tout ensemble* of its exterior gave point to the jocular remark of an irreverent wag of a rival denomination, that, he "had often heard of the *church militant*, and its *canons*, but he'd never before seen its *port holes*." The ground upon which it stood had been given, for the purpose, by Mr. and Mrs. Joshua Sands, whose benefactions ceased only with their lives, and it was a deserved as well as graceful compliment to the latter, which combined her name with that of an ancient saint, in the naming of the edifice.



NEW ST. ANN'S, AND THE RUINS OF OLD ST. ANN'S.[1]

---

[1] This picture, representing the ruins of the old church of St. Ann's, and the newly completed edifice, erected in 1824, is from an unfinished water color sketch, made by Mary Ann Wetmore, afterwards Mrs. Alden Spooner.

Mrs. Ann Sands, the wife of Joshua Sands, was born in New York, January 5, 1761. Her father, Dr. Richard Ayscough, was a surgeon in the British army, and her mother was a Langdon, while a still more remote ancestor was a Cuyler, one of the original Dutch settlers from Holland. She was married to Mr. Sands, March 9th, 1780; and proved herself, by education and disposition, as well suited to the affairs of the church and the offices of charity, as her husband was to public matters and the details of business. Nature, indeed, had fitted her well for the functions of a lady abbess, if her affections could have been cloistered in any abbey smaller than the world, or her sympathies narrowed to any number of nuns short of the whole female sex. In 1813, she was the principal founder and the first directress of the *Loisian* School (*ante*, 11, 12) and therefore, indirectly, was the founder of the first public school ever established in Brooklyn. She was, also, the president of the Brooklyn Dorcas Society. In short, she went about paying a large internal revenue tax upon the liberal estates of her husband, in deeds of charity; and was known in the dark places where other rays of sunlight never strayed, and some knew of Providence only through her ministrations. She survived her excellent husband for many years, and died, of a pulmonnary affection, on the 17th of July, 1851, at the ripe old age of ninety years. She had twelve children, six of whom preceded her to the grave, and six survived her.

Akin to Mrs. Sands in spirit, and a foundation to the pillars of this church, was Mrs. Sarah Middagh, the wife of John Middagh, and who died in 1837 at the age of ninety-two. Like St. Ann, she bent toward the lowly, and considered no duty more sacred than the religious instruction of her domestics. It is said that she took to the baptismal font more than twenty persons of color, at different times in her service, eighteen of whom were servants born in her own house.

It was, indeed, a goodly company which assembled within the cracked[1] but hallowed walls of old St. Ann's in those days. There was Joshua Sands, tall and commanding, and with the air of one whom no amount of business could perplex; Major Fanning C. Tucker, still taller in figure, and adding to the strict performance of every church duty the graces of the highest breeding; gentlemanly John Moore; the dignified and courteous Gen. J. G. Swift; the Pierreponts; the Treadwells; the Clarkes; Sacketts; Ellisons;

---

[1] In 1808, three years after its erection, the walls of St. Ann's were badly damaged by the explosion of a powder mill (see vol. I, 390).

Coleses; Petits; Smiths; Van Burens; Van Nostrands; Sullivans; Hudsons; Worthingtons; Stewarts; Gibbses; Cornells; Middaghs; Hickses; Warings; Marches; Carters; Spooners, etc., etc., indeed the catalogue would embrace a history of Brooklyn! This old church also had its peculiarities, (as what church has not?) not unworthy of a passing notice. Among these was Losee Van Nostrand, the ferryman, whose ringing cry of "Over!" answered all the purposes of a bell at the ferry, for many years, and who filled sundry church offices, such as passing the collection plate, etc. It is related of him, that, at a communion service having to wait a little, he attracted the amused attention of the whole congregation by the absorbed air, with which, in a fit of abstraction, he was balancing the plate upon the chancel railing, forgetful of all else except its nice adjustment. Again, being off his guard and napping in his pew, one Sunday, at the proper moment for response to the prayer, he woke up suddenly, and blurted out his accustomed "Over!" instead of the solemn "Amen!" to the irrepressible merriment of the most devout. Speaking of inappropriate responses, reminds one of Rem C. Cornell, whose curt and sharp response of "*eight men!*" (Amen!) rarely failed to capsize the slender self-possession of the watchful urchins. An object of never ending wonder to these self same urchins, many of whom, to manhood grown, are yet in our midst, was the great chandelier, the gift of Mrs. Ann Sands, which hung from the centre of the ceiling of Old St. Ann's. To their youthful imaginations, it seemed, when lighted, the realization of the diamond tree of Aladdin's cave, and the ever changing brilliancy of its prismatic rays was a marvel of delight. To say the truth, the boys were not alone in their admiration; the whole congregation were proud of it. It chanced, one week day, that a notorious wag of the village (who, while his parents were praying decently and devoutly, was himself always engaged in some special worship of the Old Boy), perpetrated a huge *sell* on the village to the effect that the great chandelier of St. Ann's had fallen from its place and was dashed to atoms. Great was the dismay among the gossips, great the running to and fro; how bereft the church! how irretreivable the loss! As soon as the sexton, old

John, could be hunted up and the doors unlocked, how eager the rush to behold the ruin; when, lo! "much ado, about nothing." There, unharmed and unmoved, like a queenly bride, robed in lace work of twinkling pendants, and with a hundred Kohinoors for her diadem, was the chandelier! Verily! a miracle, worthy of the two St. Anns!

The music of St. Ann's, in those days, was worthy of notice. The fine voice of Miss Julia Duncan (afterwards Mrs. Worthington): the Misses Miller and Stanton, Major Tucker's deep bass, and the skillful hands of S. P. Taylor at the organ[1] combined to render the music of this sanctuary captivating and soul-enthralling. From this choir, also, sprang the St. Cecilia and Euterpian societies, whose concerts formed a prominent feature in the early social life of the village, and which did so much to cherish and develop that love of music for which Brooklyn has ever been noted.

On the opposite, or north-east corner of Sands and Washington streets, was the residence of Fanning C. Tucker, which is still standing in a good state of preservation. After Mr. Tucker, it became the house of Mr. Robert Carter. This gentleman was the son of a chairmaker in Broad street, New York, and engaged in the ship chandlery business, firm of Tucker & Carter, corner of Pine and Front streets; a firm still retaining its identity, under several changes, as Tucker & Cooper, and Tucker & Carter; later still, it was the home, for many years, of the late Gen. Robert Nichols, and at present it is occupied by the widow and family of the late Hon. Moses F. Odell.

Next beyond, on the same side of the street, was a very neat and handsome two-story frame house occupied by old Mr. John Moore, and his two maiden sisters, and attached to the house was a very fine garden. "Jack Moore, as he was more generally called," says Furman, "was a bachelor and a *bon vivant*, but never guilty of any of the excesses of which that class are too often justly chargeable." He seemed to understand the art of good living to considerable perfection, took no part in politics and manifested no interest in public affairs; but he and his sisters were very regular attendants at St. Ann's church.

---

[1] The organ was first introduced into St. Ann's church, March 29, 1810.

On same side of Sands, below Pearl street was a large, two-story brick house, still standing, in which, after about 1818, resided Purser Wise.

GEORGE S. WISE, Jun., purser in the United States Navy Yard here, was of Irish descent and a native of Virginia. He came to Brooklyn in 1812, and quickly identified himself with the interests of the place and its inhabitants. Eminently social in disposition, and agreeable in manners, his influence was extensively felt in the best social circles, while his warm, impulsive nature was ever seeking opportunity to relieve the wants of the needy. During one season of scarcity of labor and of food for the poor, he established in connection with some of his brother officers of the navy and the charitable ladies of the village, an ordinary where many little children were daily fed, instructed and clothed; and from this originated the *Loisian School*, of which he was secretary. He was also one of the almoners of the Brooklyn Dorcas Society, and a principal founder of the Erin Fraternal Association, of which he was president at the time of his decease. As president of the Roman Catholic Society, he was largely instrumental in the erection here of their first church edifice. He was an active member of the Masonic order; of the Kings County Agricultural Society, and was a trustee of the village in 1822 and 1823. November 20th, 1824, he died and was buried with appropriate military and masonic honors, leaving behind him the memory of a life distinguished for warm benevolence and an activity devoted to the interests of his fellow-men.

Between Purser Wise's and the present line of Jay street, was the residence of Josey Herbert.

JOSEPH and JAMES, sons of Richard Herbert, shoemaker, came with their father and family to Brooklyn, from Middletown Point, N. J., shortly after the revolution. Mr. Herbert built a residence in Main near York street; and, dying soon after, his son James took up the business, and brought up his brothers, Joseph, Daniel, and Samuel, to the shoemaker's trade.

JOSEPH, about 1806, set up in business, married Miss Fanny Hand, a sister of Capt. Clarke's wife, and built the house (62 Sands, afterwards 69), which he subsequently occupied as residence and shoe-shop, until his death. His quiet disposition did not lead him much into public life; yet no name is more uniformly to be found as identified with every important social, religious and educational movement in the early history of the village, than that of Joseph Herbert. In the Apprentices' Library; the Sabbath School and the Methodist Church of which he was an early and life-long member and a trustee, he was always a working man. He was, also at one time, the captain of the uniformed company known as the Katydids.[1] In person he was of medium size; stout, verging on corpulency; with a fresh, clear complexion, and white hair. His portrait hangs upon the walls of the Sands street Methodist Sabbath School, of which he was so long the revered superintendent.

With the exception of a few small tenements, Wise's and Herbert's were about the last buildings upon the north side of Sands street. From the end of Sands street, extended the Wallabout bridge (vol. I, 387), to about the junction of present Flushing and Portland avenues, where the toll-gate controlled the travel of the Newton Pike road, by Sands street, and also by the road running past Fort Green, across to the Flatbush turnpike. Near the Wallabout bridge, was Sands' ropewalk, extending from the south side of Sands street, all along the Wallabout meadows, to about the foot of the present Tillary street, in some places being built upon piles. Around this walk were several tenements occupied by the employees in the walk.

Returning, along the *south* side of Sands street, until we come to what is now Bridge street, was nothing but sand hills, among which nestled a few negro shanties. On the corner of Bridge street was a substantial frame dwelling with a large garden attached; the next most noteworthy house being that of Fanning C. Tucker, which he occupied after he sold his other house to Mr. Carter. It had a fine large garden, and is still standing.

Passing by the present Pearl street, we come to Thomas C. Spink's cottage (still standing, though modernized), and which, like all the residences on Sands street, was furnished with a large flower and vegetable garden. A large two-story dwelling stood on the south-east corner of Sands and Washington streets, fronting on the latter, and with stables in rear; and, on the opposite corner, was Dr. Chas. Ball's house, with a fine garden attached. This building was afterwards removed to Washington street, and is yet standing.

---

[1] See note to page 396, of first volume.

Then the Methodist church, commonly known as the "Old White Church," occupying the site of the present Sands street Methodist Episcopal church.

Next door to the church was the residence of one of the "fathers" of the village, "Poppy" Snow, whose biography we have already given (on page 20). Then passing Harmer's residence (*ante*, 87), we find ourselves at "Dean's corner," on the corner of Old Ferry road.

After the date of our sketch (about 1816), Sands street began to fill up rapidly, and was for many years quite a fashionable avenue of residences. Among these later comers we may mention, on the *north side*, Mr. Cunningham, the distiller, who built next to John Moore, between Washington and Adams; Josiah Bowen, a printer (of the firm of Pray & Bowen), and subsequently a Methodist preacher, next west of Purser Wise's house; below Jay street, Mr. Jehiel Jagger, a hatter, doing business in the city of New York. Mr. Jagger took the house, about 1820, from its previous owner, a Capt. Clarke. On the *southern side* James B. Clarke, Esq., and Thomas Kirk, between Washington and Adams; between Adams and Pearl, Aime J. Barbarin, father of Mr. George Barbarin, Capt. Angus of the navy; John C. Bennett, tailor, James Herbert, grocer, etc.

High street, although opened nearly to the present Bridge street, had but few buildings. Upon its *north* side, near Fulton, was Isaac Moser's grocery store, a brother of "Uncle Jo" Moser. Then, vacant lots up to an alley, on the easterly corner of which lived Richard V. W. Thorne. Next him was the Methodist parsonage house, and, then, a building used by that congregation for "class meetings," and, adjoining, the rear entrance to their burial ground and church. Beyond this point, on the north side of the street, were but few houses, the land being mostly occupied by the grounds and gardens of the residences on the south side of Sands street. Along the *south* side of High street, between Fulton and Washington streets, were only three or four houses, and, beyond the latter street, not over six or seven. About on the line of the present Bridge street, in front of the African Methodist church, was a splendid grove of poplars. From 1813 to 1818, there was a great mania in Brooklyn for this kind of tree, and scarcely a place of any pretension, that did not have its poplar. On this spot a nursery of these trees was established by an enterprising citizen, to his ultimate loss.

Nassau street. Beyond Justice Nichols' place, on the *north* corner of Fulton street, were but one or two houses before reaching Washington street, on the north-west corner of which was Mr. John Green's house, still standing, and a large garden, and next him Evan Beynon's school house. Beynon was a freethinker, a great admirer of Thomas Paine, but an excellent scholar and good teacher, although he possessed a hot temper, and not much suavity of manner. He was the pedagogical predecessor of Mr. Samuel W. Seabury. Beyond this were but few houses of any note.

On the *south* side of Nassau street, adjoining Capt. Sullivan's on the corner of Fulton street, was Mr. Samuel Vail's neat two-story frame house, and between that and Washington street two or three houses. On the south-east corner of Washington street, was the large frame house built by an Englishman, and now occupied by J. Fletcher Garrison, Esq., son of old Judge John Garrison. Adjoining his garden, was the residence of Mr. William Wallace, a cloth merchant in New York. Beyond, on the south side of Nassau, were only some ten or fifteen houses occupied, mostly, by mechanics and laboring men. The only noticeable building was the old "Alms House," a large frame edifice, about one hundred feet from the present Jay street, and surrounded by about two acres of ground. A lower room in this building, also served the purposes of a "lock-up" or police station, wherein the village constables confined those committed to their charge for safe keeping. The old Alms House building was subsequently purchased in 1825, by Mr. Josiah Dow, who converted it into a dwelling-house for his own use; and, in order to rid it of the odium attaching to the name of a "poor house," erected upon it a large sign of "Wakefield House." The sign, however (while it gradually effaced from the public mind, the stigma of the old name), provoked numberless calls from strangers, who very naturally mistook the place for a hotel, so that, as soon as practicable, Mr. Dow was glad to remove the sign. This house is still standing.

Josiah Dow, born at Wakefield, N. H., December 27th, 1782, was the son of Richard and Mary Dow, who were among the first settlers of that town, and descended from Henry Dow, who came from England about 1646, and was a prominent man at Salisbury, N. H. They possessed a good education for their circumstances; religious principles and frugal habits. Josiah, in early life, was placed in a country store at Hampton Falls, Mass., where his fidelity and enterprise won the esteem of his employer, upon whose death, and before arriving at age, he found a position at Boston. Subsequently, he opened a retail dry-goods store at Salem, Mass., where he married Maria Phippen, and, in 1810, removed to Boston. He there embarked upon a larger dry goods business, and his place, called "The Long Room" became a famous resort for the Boston ladies whenever he opened his bales of new goods; the expression "one bale more," as originating in his store, becoming a bye word and a subject for "hits" upon the stage. He sent to India the first parcel of cotton fabrics exported thither from this country. During the war of 1812, he served as an officer in Salem and Boston. About this time, also, when but little more than thirty years old, deeming himself independently rich, he established an academy in his native town (Wakefield) at a heavy expense. It was known as "Dow's Academy" and was, for many years, one of the most flourishing institutions of learning in that part of New England. Upon the occasion of its dedication, Mr. Dow delivered an address, which was full of sound and progressive views. After the proclamation of peace, goods became so depreciated in value as to ruin Mr. Dow, in common with many others who had purchased largely at war prices. He returned to his farm at Wakefield and, a few years after, went to Boston where he became a broker and commission merchant. Being frequently at New York, in the way of business, he finally established himself in business in that city (at 63 Wall street), in 1824. In 1825 he purchased the "Alms House property" in Brooklyn, of which place he became a resident in October of that year; and he also took a pew in St. Ann's church. His old Boston friends consigned goods to him; and, in 1826, he formed a partnership with Mr. John Currier, under the firm name of Josiah Dow & Co. Upon the expiration of this he formed a new connection with his twin sons Richard and Josiah, under the same style. The last named subsequently removed to Illinois, where he died in 1833, and some of the younger sons were added to the firm, whose principal store was at 157 Pearl street, New York. His business was now prosperous and extensive, and his genial nature expanded in hospitable and liberal enterprises. To Brooklyn he was as much attached as if he had always lived here. For years he was a director of the Brooklyn

Insurance Company, the Brooklyn Savings Bank, the Apprentices' Library, the Brooklyn Collegiate Institute for Young Ladies and the Brooklyn Lyceum. To this latter institution he once advanced about $25,000 when money was three per cent a month, in the market. Though liberal to all sects and creeds, he was in religious belief a Unitarian, and one of the most prominent originators of the First Unitarian church of this city. In politics he was a whig, and entertained Harrison, Webster, Davy Crockett and other prominent statesmen, upon the occasions of their visits to Brooklyn. He was temperate in habit, averse to the use of profane language, remarkably agile, and fond of dancing and other social amusements. It is related of him that, once, on board of one of the old New York and Providence steamboats, of which line he was a director, he reproved a smoker in the ladies' cabin, by pointing him to the printed prohibition, "Gentlemen are requested not to smoke, etc." The offender, however, declined to desist. "Ah!" said Mr. Dow, "I see. The card applies to *gentlemen!*" Mr. Dow was preparing to extend his business connections to London and St. Petersburg, when the commercial revolution of 1837 overtook the country, and he failed. Making a full assignment of his property, "wearing clothes alone excepted," he received a full discharge from his creditors, and attempted to rebuild his fortunes. Further losses, however, ensued; his health began to fail, and he suffered from a weakness of the lungs, and the loss of his son Richard, in 1840,[1] by the burning of the "Lexington" was a blow severely felt by him. He shortly after retired, with his admirable wife, to his farm, relying to some extent upon the aid of his children. There, for ten years, he devoted himself with his accustomed energy, to agricultural pursuits and the instruction of several orphan boys taken from the asylums in Brooklyn, of which Mrs. Dow had been a manager. The surplus products of his farm were disposed of in the Boston market, where he was well known as "the commodore." But his asthmatic difficulty increased upon him to such an extent that he was obliged to avoid the city entirely. Against his disease he bore up cheerfully, but the sudden death of his daughter, the wife of Abiel A. Low, Esq., was a severe affliction to him, four children, only remaining to him of the fourteen (ten sons and four daughters) which God had given him. Mr. Dow was methodical in his business, kept his books carefully posted up; corresponded extensively, and preserved a constant record of farm matters and atmospheric changes.[2] He died suddenly, on the evening of November

---

[1] For memoir of Richard Dow, see *Hunt's Merchant's Magazine*, for June, 1840.

[2] The above facts have been gleaned from a full and well written manuscript memoir "written by a merchant in his leisure evenings at home."

2d, 1850, in his sixty-ninth year. In personal appearance, Mr. Dow was about five feet seven inches high, rather corpulent, broad shoulders, light and rosy complexion, forehead large, sandy hair and small, dark and penetrating eyes.

Concord street. On its *northern* side, at its junction with Fulton, was Dr. Joseph J. G. T. Hunt's office and drug shop, with stable adjoining. Then we come to an alley, the present Liberty street. Beyond, on north-west corner of present Washington street, was Dr. Osborne's residence and garden. On the north-east corner of the present Washington street, was the large frame house of Adam Treadwell a New York merchant. This house, handsomely modernized and surrounded by ample grounds, is now occupied (as No. 171 Washington street), by Mr. William Burdon. Between the house and the present Pearl street was a considerable hill upon which were no improvements. From thence to the line of the present Gold street were only a few small houses chiefly occupied by laboring men and mechanics, and the same may be said of the opposite or *southern* side of the street, on which the school house of District No. 1 (where Public School No. 1 now stands), was the only noticeable feature. Concord street, " sixty years ago" was the last public street, within the village limits, which was opened eastward from Fulton street.

WALK THE THIRD, *through that portion of the village lying south and west of the old highway* (Fulton street), *now known as " The Heights ;" and the streets which had, at that time been opened in that direction*, viz: the *Shore road* (now Furman street), *Joralemon's Lane, Everit, Elizabeth, Hicks, Aert* (now Henry street), *Middagh, Doughty and McKenney streets, etc.*

Elizabeth street, so named, it is said, after the wife of one of its old residents, still exists between Fulton street (just above Carli's stables) and Doughty street. In the olden time it was the only means of access to the ferry from the road along the beach, now Furman street.

Doughty street, into which Elizabeth street opened, extended from Hicks street to the East river, at which was a public landing used by the butchers of Brooklyn from time immemorial. On the southerly side of Doughty street were four or five dwellings; one of which, a brick and stone house, directly opposite to the head of Elizabeth street, was originally the residence of Israel Horsfield; and, during the revolutionary war was occupied by the Hessians as their main guard room.

At the period of which we write, it was owned and occupied by George Hicks, commonly distinguished as "Ferry-master Hicks." He was originally a Fulton market butcher, but afterwards ferry-master at the Old Ferry, after the introduction thereon of steamboats. He tended the ferry until about 1817; and, then had the fortune to find favor in the sight of old Sam. Jackson (they both being *quasi* Quakers), from whom he purchased, on very reasonable terms, property upon Love Lane, Hicks and Willow streets, upon which he built a large frame house, still standing, and had a fine garden, etc. George Hicks' children were: John; Betsy (who married Capt. Cooper); William, who died young; George (married Miss Caroline Bill); and Jackson who was named after his father's friend Samuel Jackson, and died in early life.

A large frame building somewhat westerly of the last named was probably also a Horsfield house; and, at a later period, was occupied by John Carpenter.

ISRAEL and TIMOTHY HORSFIELD were men of mark in their day and deserve some notice at our hands. They were the sons of Timothy Horsfield, of Liverpool, England, where they were born, according to the record in an old family Bible, Israel, on the 4th of January, 1696, and Timothy, on the 19th of April, 1706, old style. Israel came to this country in 1720, and became a freeman of New York, on the 13th of December, of the same year. About three years after, his brother Timothy arrived and entered into business with him, as butchers. Their trade, which was principally with the shipping, increased, in the course of a few years, to such an extent that they were obliged to seek other accommodations, than could be obtained in the city of New York, for the prosecution of their business. Long Island, which at that time furnished the New York market with most of its live stock, presented advantages; which, together with the offer by the corporation, in

1734, of a favorable lease of a portion of the Brooklyn shore, near the ferry, induced them to remove there. They immediately built a wharf at the foot of the present Doughty street, together with a slaughtering place and the necessary buildings for residence.[1] The next year they leased the two best stands (Nos. 1 and 2) in the Old Slip Market, at the lower end of the present Hanover Square, in the city of New York; their dressed meats being brought over daily, in rowboats by their own slaves, directly to the "Old Slip," whence it was carried, in wheelbarrows, to their stands in the market. Israel Horsfield, in 1738, had a family of ten persons, three of whom were colored men, and *slaves*. He and his brother afterwards had the misfortune to lose some of their "chattels," who were put to death for complicity in the "Great Negro Plot" of 1741. The Horsfields accumulated a large property and owned a considerable amount of land on the Heights, near the ferry.[2]

Timothy removed, in 1750, to Pennsylvania and became a Moravian. Of him, more anon.

ISRAEL, after his brother's departure, continued the business until his son Israel, Junior, became of age, when he transferred it to the young man, erected a brew-house near the ferry (Map A, and B, 18) and engaged in the brewing of ale and beer. In 1765, Israel, Sr., returned but one slave, named *Tight;* and, in 1767, he advertised, in addition to two negro men (*ante*, I, 218), "several lots of ground, bounding on the river, convenient for store houses or slaughter houses, also, several dwelling houses, with their lots adjoining, and two slaughter houses; likewise several *up lots* of very excellent ground, fit for pasture or garden, with a small, pleasant summer house, commanding a most agreeable and extensive prospect."[3] He died in 1772 and his property was advertised to be sold by his son Thomas "near the premises." He left three sons, Israel, Jr., Thomas, and William.

Israel, Jr., as we have seen, succeeded his father in the business of a butcher, but not with the same enterprise or success. In 1755, he had one slave, *Chalsey;* and, in 1757, supplied Jacob Brewerton, of the ferry, with meat to the amount of £3 18*s.* 6*d.*, for the use of the French neutrals who were then lodged at Brewerton's, in Brookland. His property, consisting of a house, lot of ground, slaughter-house and barn "at the ferry," was advertised for sale in 1769; and two years later, there appeared for sale "five lots or parcels of ground, at Brooklyn ferry, adjoining the house of Israel Horsfield, Jr., situated on a rising ground which commands a prospect of the city of New York, and very commodious for gentlemen to build small *seats* on, or for gardeners or butchers." In 1772, his "large new brick house," "very convenient for a butcher," in which he then lived, was advertised "*to let;*" and he was shortly afterwards engaged in the brewing business with his brother Thomas. Perhaps he discontinued business before or during the Revolution, but appears on a list of Brooklyn inhabitants in 1783, became a communicant of St. Ann's church, in 1790, and died in October, 1805, aged sixty-one years. His brother *Thomas* formed a partnership, in 1764, with James Leadbetter, advertising barley and oak bark for sale, and in 1765 they opened a brewery in Brooklyn, (*ante* I, 217). The partnership, however, soon after dissolved, and we find Thomas advertising his "excellent ship and table beer, from the *Long Island Brewery*," which was kept on sale at his brother *William's* store, opposite to Lot & Sons, in the city of New York. In 1770 (*ante* I, 219), his malt-kilns were burned; and in 1778, Captain Thomas Horsfield, as he was then styled, had some three thousand weight of excellent fresh ship bread, for sale at Brooklyn Ferry.

---

[1] In doing this they (probably unwittingly) overstepped their bounds and got upon the property of the corporation of New York, but, on the 26th of February, 1735, fortunately secured from that body, the lease "of that part of the wharfe and slaughterhouse he has lately built and put upon the land of the corporation, near the Ferry at Brooklyn, at the annual rent of *five* shillings"—and subsequently purchased it and it came into the hands of Israel, Jr., who offered it for sale in February, 1769.

[2] See vol. I, 74, 217, 218, 219.

[3] See Horsfield Map, referred to on page 74 of our first volume.

Timothy Horsfield (*ante*, 119), at the time of his coming to America, was in his seventeenth year, and learned his business of his brother Israel. In 1731, he married Mary Doughty; in 1739, was awakened by the preaching of the celebrated Whitfield, then visiting in America; and, in 1741, became acquainted with the Brethren (*Moravians*), who came from Georgia with their pastor, Peter Bochler; and joined their church. In 1745 (during the French and Indian war, he was appointed colonel of the Brooklyn militia, but resigned his commission on account of much jealousy, which was felt and expressed in certain quarters. Soon after he was made the executor of the estate of an intimate friend, Thomas Noble, a merchant and zealous Moravian; and, in 1750, removed with his family, to Bethlehem, Penn., where he resided in a *stone house*, built for him by the brethren, which is still standing. His children were educated at Bethlehem, before his own removal there; and his ample means enabled him to live among the Moravians without any business cares, except such as pertained to the office of justice of the peace, which he held among them for twelve years. He stood deservedly high among them, being a man of unblemished character, and was of much assistance to the brethren in their intercourse with the provincial government and with the Indian tribes in that part of the colony, while his acquaintance with business matters rendered him a kind of legal adviser to his German friends, who were unacquainted with the modes of transacting matters in this New World.

John Carpenter (or Carpender), whom we have mentioned (*ante*, 44, 119), as occupying one of the old Horsfield houses, was also a butcher. From what we can learn of him, he and his brother Benjamin were sons of George and Elizabeth Carpenter, who came from Long Island, about 1718, to the city of New York, of which the father became a freeman, entering into business as a butcher, which he continued until his death, about 1730. His widow then carried on the business, with the help of her sons, and became a very successful butcheress. In the Negro Plot of 1741, she lost two of her most valuable butcher slaves, one of whom was burned at the stake, and another transported; while in 1756, she lost one by running away, and again in 1759. Mrs. Carpenter died in April, 1776, aged 85 years, and the press of that day says, "she had been a very respectable inhabitant." Her son *John*, in 1743, leased for one year all the stands and standings in the public markets of the city, for the sum of £98; and shortly after, was induced, by the inconvenience and danger of crossing the river with cattle, and the many objections found in the public slaughtering house of the city, to move over to Brooklyn, near the ferry. In the years 1748, '50, and '51, he was returned from this place as a grand juror; in 1755, was the owner of three slaves, and, the same year, had a house to let, "within half of a quarter of a mile of the ferry, on Long Island." In 1757, he offered for sale, "a good dwelling house and lot of ground at the ferry, opposite Mr. John Rapalje's." In 1763, he was one of the butchers, who defied the authorities in regard to the enforcement of the obnoxious assize law of that year; and the complaint against him specifies that he "hath openly and contemptuously declared, that he would sell his beef for four-pence half-penny per pound, in spite of all the *wise-heads* that made the law could do." For this he was ordered to appear before the board, and the mayor was requested to remove him from the market. Carpenter appeared and claimed the freedom of the city; but the charge was proven against him, his license was taken from him, he was turned out of the market, and also, disenfranchised. In 1769, he had property to let near the ferry; and, in the following year, he announced that the Jamaica stage would set out to and from that place, on Mondays, Thursdays, and Saturdays, or oftener, if required — passages one shilling and six-pence each way — and the next year he notified passengers from New York, to apply at Mrs. Fish's, at the ferry stairs, or that side. In June, 1776, he was engaged in supplying meat to the Continental army, and in consequence of the scarcity of cattle, which were prevented, by the troublous times, from coming to the city, he was obliged to send a drover into Dutchess county to purchase stock. The cattle so obtained, were, on their return, taken by another butcher, who refused to give them up, and Carpenter appealed to the Continental congress, who directed that they should be restored to him. During the war, Carpenter remained on Long Island, occasionally attending the New York markets to obtain stock. He was indicted for adherence to the loyal cause, but no witnesses appearing against him, he was unmolested. In 1785, he was the treasurer and one of the trustees of an Independent congregation, which was incorporated in the town of Brooklyn, and which erected a frame church edifice in what was afterwards St. Ann's burial ground.[1] Furman says, in his *Manuscript Notes*, that "disliking the proceedings of his associates, and the church being very much indebted to him, Carpenter locked up the church building, put the key in his pocket, refused them admission, and afterwards sold the church and ground to the Episcopalian congregation, which he joined," and from which he was a lay delegate in 1788, '90 and 91. He probably died in 1796, at which time the Widow Carpenter, was living "near the Old Ferry."[2]

His brother *Benjamin* removed to Brooklyn about the same time with him; but, in 1761, appears as an inhabitant of Jamaica. He was a butcher, and, after the Revolution, removed to Brooklyn again, changing his business somewhat, by dealing in the smaller animals, "which were invariably dressed with much taste and cleanliness." Although obliged to walk with a crutch from youth he continued to be quite active in business, until quite aged.

Resuming our walk, after this biographical digression, we find that, from the southerly side of Doughty street, about one hundred feet west of George Hicks' house, commenced a lane or road extending south-westerly, along under the edge of the Heights, till it met the beach of the East river, at a little distance beyond the foot of the present Poplar street. This road, originally opened, perhaps by the Horsfields; was, about 1816, paved from Doughty street as far as Caze's factory, and rendered more passable than it had previously been, by Thomas Everit, Jr., and Caze, whose property fronted upon it, on either side.

---

[1] Now covered by St. Ann's buildings, Fulton street, opposite Clinton street (see also, *ante*, 90).

[2] Vol. 1, 450. *Furman's Manuscript Notes*, also mentions him as living in a frame house in Doughty street, "one of the best built houses in Brooklyn, having a fine cut freestone cistern attached."

On the westerly side of the road (Maps A and B, 10, 11, 12), was Everit's tan yard, a wooden storehouse for hides, and slaughter-houses; and next to them (Maps A and B, 13), were John Doughty's. On the easterly side of the road, was the old Everit house, (Maps A and B, 14), where Thomas Everit, Jr., was born. By the side of the house, was the famous Whalebone gate from which a lane led up the hill to Mr. Cary Ludlow's residence.[1]

Beyond the house and opposite the slaughter-houses already mentioned, were the residences of Mike Trappel (Maps A and B, 15), designated in some old maps, as house of Sarah (widow of Isaac) Hicks, and Burdet Stryker, their entrance being on an alley which led into the hill. On the other side of the alley was a large, old fashioned building (Maps A and B, 16), at one time occupied by Caze & Richaud's distillery, afterwards purchased by Robt. Bach, for the same purpose,[1] and then, with an intervening space, was a large brick edifice (Maps A and B, 18), known, from the name of its occupant and owner, as "the (John) Sedgfield mansion."

Continuing along, on the same side of the street, we pass three or four small houses, in one of which, about where the road *debouched* to the river beach, resided a man named Coombs, who once had the audacity to impede the public's right of way, by erecting a gate across the road, in front of his place, and allowing no one to pass without paying toll. This obstruction, however, was speedily removed, *vi et armis*, by Hugh McLaughlin, a stalwart Irishman who lived a few doors below; and, fortunately for the peace of the neighborhood, was never replaced.

---

[1] Vol. I, Map of Brooklyn Ferry, No. 8.

[1] See "Draft of Israel Horsfield's land at Old Ferry," 1763 — referred to on page 74 of our first volume — a most interesting map in connection with this part of the Heights. Both No. 16 and 18 are put down as Horsfield's houses on said map. If 16, as we think, was the old Horsfield brewery, it was partially destroyed by fire, in 1818, being at that time occupied as an oil refinery, by Messrs. Cooper, Houston & Co.

The road which we have been describing, as passing by Everit's and the distillery, was obliterated, or rather superseded by the opening of Columbia and Furman streets to the line of Doughty. A portion of it, however, on which the Bach distillery is located, still exists between Furman, Columbia, Poplar and Doughty streets, being entered by a gate and stairway from Columbia street.

In 1823 or '24 travel was opened from the northerly end of Columbia street into Fulton street, by the opening of a short and narrow street called *Everit street;* and, on the easterly corner of its junction with Fulton, Obed Jackson built the substantial brick building now occupied by Alderman D. D. Whitney's store.

In *Historical Magazine*, *December*, 1867, Col. De Voe gives the following sketch of the worthy family of butchers with which the name of this street and locality is associated.

THOMAS EVERIT, SEN., who appears to have come from an old stock of butchers, as we find early in 1798, Edward Everit, butcher, obtained a freemanship to commence business within the city of New York. Soon after, he removed to Long Island, from which place he attended the New York markets, irregularly.

Afterwards appeared in the same line of busines, a Richard Everit, supposed to be his son, who, 1730, built or repaired a slaughter-house, on a small creek, which put up from the East river, in the town of Brookland. The location now would place it at the intersection of Columbia and Doughty streets. In this building, about 1720, Thomas Everit, Sen., commenced his profession, as it appears, without the assistance of negro slaves, his help being the white servants, whose time he had purchased, and his apprentices, with whom he attended the New York markets almost daily.

In 1763, the *Press* says, " There was killed by Thomas Everit, a cow raised and fattened by Col. Ben. Treadwell, of Great Neck, whose weight was (meat, hide and rough fat), 813 pounds. This perhaps exceeds any killed in this province." In 1769, we find Everit in receipt of the property of Samuel Skidmore, a butcher, previously noticed, who " gave notice to his creditors to show cause why an assignment of his estate should not be made to Thomas Everit, also of Brooklyn, on Nassau island, butcher, and he be thereupon discharged." On the breaking out of the Revolution, " a meeting of the Company of Light Horse, of Brooklyn, was held on the 15th of September, 1775, at Adolph Waldron's, inn holder, at Brooklyn Ferry, when

Thomas Everit was elected second lieutenant. In the month of March following (1776), he signed the declaration and took up his commission."

Onderdonk informs us, that the members of this troop were first in service under Gen. Greene, who ordered them to seize all the fat stock of the disaffected for Commissary Brown. They next drove off stock under Gen. Woodhull; and, after the defeat at Brooklyn, in August, 1776, as they were proceeding eastward to join Colonel Livingston, they were ordered off the island by Colonel Potter. Everit, however, returned; and, in the month of November, following, renewed his allegiance to King George. He was a man of considerable talent, strictly honest, and possessed a very kind heart. His sons, Thomas, William, and Richard, were also butchers, and will be noticed in their proper order.

THOMAS EVERIT, JR., was born in Brooklyn, in 1764. When a boy, he was remarkable for his quiet and studious habits; and, for those warlike times, he became an excellent scholar. He served with his father until he mastered his profession, when he took charge of his father's stall and business in the old Fly Market, in New York, where he continued until about the year 1796, when he quit the market; became engaged in farming, near Hempstead; and joined the Society of Friends. After the lapse of a few years, he returned to Brooklyn. Here, with his old bosom friend, John Doughty, he formed a partnership in the tanning and wool business, and established a successful and extensive trade; after which his partner retired from the firm.

Mr. Michael Trappel, yet living, once a Brooklyn butcher, informed me that he worked for Everit during more than twenty years, in this hide and wool business; and that he always knew him to be the same honest, unpretending, good man, whose simple habits, dress, and speech were fully and faithfully carried out, in his new faith. He was always seeking to do his fellow man some service, either by advice or assistance, and this, too, in the most unassuming manner; as many will bear testimony, even at this late day. He continued business, many years, in Brooklyn, from whence he afterwards removed it, to No. 32 Ferry street, New York, where yet remains his son Valentine, continuing his predecessor's business. Thomas Everit died in the year 1841, leaving many relatives and friends, the latter of whom yet speak glowingly of his many virtues.

His brother WILLIAM, in 1775, joined the troop with Thomas, as a private, and continued with it until it left Long Island; and afterwards, it is stated, he was engaged in the commissary department of the American army. We do not, however, find him again, until the year 1786, when he appeared in the Fly Market, and was a resident of the city of New York.

Richard Everit, another brother, also attended the same market, and resided with his father, at Brooklyn, until his marriage, when he removed quite near the ferry. He afterwards became one of the first board of trustees of the First Methodist Episcopal meeting house, established here, in 1794. In 1796, we find advertised at private sale, a large plot of ground and several houses, in Brooklyn, besides three or four rooms to let, in a house fronting on the East river. "For particulars enquire of Richard Everit or John Doughty, in the Fly Market, No. 47." He did not, however, remain long after this in the old market, as he was stricken with the yellow fever; and died in the calamitous year 1798.

We have now fairly got upon the beach road, which extended along the river, under the heights, on the line of the present *Furman street.* First, we come, on the *west* side, to a long wooden building used as a slaughter house; then to Thomas Goen's house, who carried on, at this place, the manufacture of salt by evaporation from salt water. Then, the residence of William Thompson, the waterman, who supplied the New York shipping with fresh water, and a tavern kept by an Englishman, whose sign was a swinging gate projecting over the street; bearing on its bars, the following inscription:

"This sign hangs high,
It hinders none,
Come, take a nip,
And travel on."

On the *east* side of the road, a little beyond the line of the present Middagh street (Map B, 20) were Thompson's pumps. The appearance of the beach well strewn with water butts and lined with water boats awaiting their cargoes, and the waterman's shanty, are all well preserved in a fine painting in the possession of Mr. Charles E. Bill, of Columbia street, Brooklyn.[1]

---

[1] William Thompson, a boat builder (but whether the one mentioned above we are not certain), is thus mentioned by Furman in his *Manuscript Notes* (IX, 167), under date of 1837. "Twenty-five years ago, [1812] and before the introduction of steamboats on our waters, the building of small boats was carried on much more extensively than it is at present; and then afforded a decent and comfortable subsistence to double the number of persons that it now does. Then, New York was famous for the small, light, swift boats built in its harbor. John Chambers of

Further along, on the *west* side, between the lines of the present Cranberry and Orange streets, were the dock and extensive storehouses belonging to Jonathan Thompson, one of the pioneers of the warehousing business in Brooklyn. In 1797, the firm of Gardinier, Thompson and Co. purchased a water lot here and erected a bulkhead and warehouse for storage purposes in connection with their business as West India merchants. In 1800, the partnership was dissolved and the storage business was continued, thenceforth, by Jonathan Thompson, until his death. For a long time, his warehouses (Map B, 28) were known as the White Cotton Stores; and it is worthy of remark that a large number of the cotton bales used by Gov. Jackson, at the battle of New Orleans, were there repacked and stored.

JONATHAN THOMPSON was born in the town of Islip, Suffolk county, L. I., December 7th, 1773. His father was Isaac Thompson, one of the judges of the court of common pleas, and his mother, a daughter of Col.

---

the city of New York, and William Chambers and William Thompson of Brooklyn, were among the most noted of these builders. John Chambers built a boat twenty-seven feet long, which when entirely finished, with her thwarts in, weighed but ninety-six pounds, and could easily be lifted out of water by one man. She was built of cedar plank so thin that the rays of sun-light shone through, and on trial proved a very fast boat.

"Chambers in Brooklyn had his boat building yard between the Old and New Ferries; of him I have not much recollection. Of Thompson, however, I have a distinct remembrance, and recollect how delightful it was to sit in his long, low shop, on a clear warm summer afternoon, toward sunset, and feel the soft breeze as it swept in under the shed (which in warm weather, was open on all sides), from the river; and hear him tell his stories, for he was full of anecdotes, both of this and the old country, having come from Whitby in England during the Revolution. When I look back it seems to me that the shores as they then appeared in their almost natural state, with large rocks and gravel beach, were much pleasanter than, as now, covered with wharves and stores. We may add, in this connection, that Jeremiah Johnson says that previous to 1788, the principal business of the town was carried on by small boats and perigauas, carrying furniture, manure, boards, etc., to different parts of the township. In that year, however, docks were erected, and sloops for firewood, lumber, and other articles to vend arrived here. After that, brigs with West India and Southern produce, tar, wine and tobacco arrived, and carried away staves, plank, flour, etc. The first ship that ever landed and took in a cargo at this town was the *Sarah*, owned by Messrs. C. & J. Sands, about ten or twelve years ago (1788 or '90). The first Indiaman built on the island was that under the supervision of Mr. John Jackson, in the year 1798. In 1799, the United States frigate *John Adams*, thirty-two guns, was launched at the Wallabout."

Abraham Gardener, of East Hampton, L. I. As a politician, previous to and during the war of 1812, Mr. Thompson was prominent in the old republican party of that period, favoring the war and officiating for ten successive years as chairman of the Republican General Committee, at that time an important position. As such he presided at the first public meeting held in old Tammany Hall. In consequence of his long service as presiding officer, he received the appellation of Everlasting Chairman. On November 24, 1813, he was appointed by President James Madison, collector of direct taxes and internal duties, under the Act of July 22d, 1813, and continued as such until the closure of the office in 1819. On December 5th, 1820, he was appointed by President James Monroe, by and with the advice and consent of the senate of the United States, collector of the customs for the district of New York, to which office he was reappointed by the same chief magistrate, January 13th, 1825, and again reappointed by President John Quincy Adams, January 27th, 1829, and removed by President Andrew Jackson, April 25th, 1829, in order to award the office to his (the president's), particular friend Samuel Swartwout.

During the official connection of Mr. Thompson with the government, his fidelity and accuracy were so remarkable that with all the rigid scrutiny exercised by the examiners at Washington, no error was found in his accounts, excepting the memorable *ten cent* defalcation discovered during the administration of Mr. Adams, about the time that strenuous efforts were being made to effect his removal from office on political grounds, he having favored the election of Wm. H. Crawford to the presidency. Mr. Adams had so much confidence in the integrity of Mr. Thompson, as proven by the correctness of his accounts, that he declined removing him, and at an interview in New York, personally narrated the whole story. From 1829, Mr. Thompson was in no public position, but continued his warehouse business on a more extended scale, by adding to the river front, and erection of buildings. In 1840, he was chosen president of the Manhattan company, at the time of its financial embarrassment, and by his prudence and able management, it was reinstated among dividend paying institutions. He continued in this office until his death, December 30th, 1846.

Mr. Thompson was unostentatious in manner; he courted no popularity, and although he never filled or desired to fill any exalted station among the great ones of the land, yet carried with him no stinted share of that respect, which belongs to genuine worth, and dying, left behind him a name which relatives and friends have never heard, and never will hear, connected with aught but expressions of approbation and esteem.

Opposite to Mr. Thompson's stores, and on the east side of the way, was the little house occupied by his foreman; and behind it, half way up the bank, was a notable spring of excellent water.

Between this point and Pierrepont's distillery, at the foot of Joralemon's lane, five or six small dwellings nestled along under the Heights on the eastern side of the road, four of which were coopers' shops, and one near the line of the present Clarke street, a tavern kept by the Widow Vanderveer.

On the west, or river side of the road, we notice next beyond Jonathan Thompson's stores, at about the foot of the present Orange street, a dock (Map B, 29) known as the Milkmen's dock. Here, every morning, "rain or shine," came the vendors of "lacteal fluid," stabled their horses in a row of sheds erected for the purpose, under the shelter of the Heights; and, clubbing together in the hire of boats, were rowed with their milk-cans over to New York, encountering, not infrequently, during the severe winter months, much suffering and even serious danger from fierce winds, and floating ice. Their cans were suspended from yokes across their shoulders, and thus accoutered they peddled off their milk in the city and returned in the afternoon, wind and weather permitting, to the Brooklyn side where they "hitched up" their teams and started for their homes. Next we come to Treadwell & Thorne's stores; then to a storehouse owned by Robert Black, and which, during the war of 1812, he converted into a manufactory of salt, produced from the water of the East river, by evaporation;[1] the large wooden Red stores, as they were called, belonging to Messrs. Kimberly & Waring (afterwards to Mr. Henry Waring); then a row of tar sheds, and another large wooden store belonging to the same firm, and near the adjoining slip, stood Tony Philpot's little ale shop, with its sign representing two flagons of ale, one emptying into the other. Tony was an Englishman, and his place, well furnished with nine pin alley, shuffle board, etc., was a great resort for the long shore men and lower classes, to whom its semi-secluded position afforded free opportunity for the exercise of unrestrained and often uproarious jollity. In the slip near by, Mr. William Niblo, the well known caterer of New York, had a floating crib in which he kept the turtles, which, from time to time, he served up upon the tables of his hotel; not forgetting to give his friend Mr. Henry Waring, at least once a year, a fine green turtle, by way of rent.

---

[1] The embarrassments consequent on the war — the great natural deposits of this saline commodity in this state, having not then been discovered — gave rise to many expedients for its artificial production.

Beyond this, was open shore to a point about half way between the lines of the present Clarke and Pierrepont streets, where was located a public landing called the Kingston lot.[1] After this property was purchased by Samuel Jackson, this lot was enclosed by him for his private purposes; and thus another of the public landings belonging to Brooklyn has disappeared.

Next to the Kingston lot, and north of the line of Pierrepont street, if continued, was Samuel Jackson's large dock (Map B, 46) upon which were erected three wooden stores.

From this dock to Pierrepont's distillery at the foot of Joralemon street, was an open sandy beach, along which the tide ebbed and flowed to such an extent as to render it, at times, impassable.

Pierrepont's Anchor gin distillery was on the site of the old Livingston brewery, at the foot of Joralemon's lane.[1] Mr. Pierrepont had rebuilt the old brewery building (Map B, 64) a large, wharf, a windmill, which was exclusively used for the purposes of the distillery, and several large wooden storehouses, in which he kept the gin stored for a full year after it was made, by which it acquired the mellowness for which it was peculiarly esteemed. The distillery was discontinued about 1819; was sold to Mr. Samuel Mitchell who used it as a candle factory for a time, and, subsequently, was occupied, as a distillery, by Messrs. Schenck & Rutherford; and having since been raised and enlarged is now (1869), occupied as a sugar house. The old windmill (Map B, 64*b*), remained until about 1825, though unused. *Furman's Notes* assert on the excellent authority of old Mr. John Cole, the carriage maker, that "during the Revolution, an English ship-of-war was driven ashore near the foot of Joralemon street, where she was abandoned; and that, after the war, he made from a piece of her keel, a pair of wheel hubs, for a man who was going by wagon to Kentucky."

---

[1] See Map B, 44; also, mention of the John Kingston lot on page 92, note.

[2] Vol. I, 307, *note* 3.

Joralemon's lane was a miserable rutted country road between the Joralemon and Remsen farms; and, towards its lower portion (from Hicks street to the East river), preserved much of its original character of a ravine, along under the southerly edge of the Heights. At the time of which we speak it was little traversed, except by carts bearing distillery swill, or grain going to be ground into gin. It was originally laid out by Hendrick and Peter Remsen and Philip Livingston, Esq., as a road of convenience or common way between their respective farms "from the highway and to the river," on the 14th of December, 1762; and was then two rods, or thirty-two feet wide. By Loss's map of the Livingston farm 1801, it was made fifty feet wide, *i. e.*, twenty-five feet off from each farm.

As we emerge from Joralemon's lane we pass, upon the site of the present First Dutch Reformed church building, its predecessor, erected in 1810. It was a heavily proportioned edifice, of gray stone, with small windows and a square tower in front, surmounted by a square cupola. The space in front of it, now occupied by our City Hall, was then an open field, skirted by the old highway. Where the lane *debouched* into the highway, and on the site of our stately County Court House[1] there then stood the Military Garden (Map B, 68), a place of resort famous in the village annals of Brooklyn.

The small building which many of our readers will remember to have formed the western part of the Military Garden was originally occupied, as near as we can ascertain, by Thomas Coe, a blacksmith, who had his shop adjoining. It passed, about 1810, into the keeping of eccentric old Col. Greene, at which time it first became known as Military Garden. It reached its maximum of reputation, however, during the *regime* of

MONS. JOHN FRANCOIS LOUIS DU FLON, a rosy-cheeked, cheery Swiss, who is still most pleasantly remembered by many of our citizens, who are to the manor born. A native of Neufchatel, in Switzerland, married in 1803, to an energetic and estimable lady, who still survives him, he became, soon after settling in New York city, a clerk to Mr. John Jules, an importer of French goods. In course of a few years he accumulated quite a handsome little property, which he was induced, in April, 1822, to invest in the purchase of this property. Although neither he nor his wife had been bred to this occupation, they soon developed the tact and enterprise, which proved that they could keep a hotel, and which secured them hosts of friends. Mr. Du Flon was induced by the Freemasons, who had hitherto been occupying lodge rooms in Lawrence Brower's tavern, to erect a larger building (which formed the eastern part of the garden, as the present generation remember it), in which suitable accommodations could be furnished to the craft. This he did, and it was the beginning of a series of pecuniary embarrassments, which finally ended in his succumbing to a foreclosure of mortgage by John Schenck, his principal creditor. Poor Du Flon found, as many another public spirited man has done, that the friends who are ready with fine suggestions, are not so ready with the cash to back them; and that the public is very willing to have some one lead the march of improvement, provided they are not holden for the result. Yet Du Flon was a general favorite; his pleasant Garden, with its superior ice-cream, its tastefully appointed viands, its attractions of flowers and shrubbery — for he and his wife had the characteristic of their countrymen, a passion for floral pleasures — his own urbanity and cheerfulness of disposition, made his place the resort, *par excellence*, of the best village society; while his hall, from its superior size and accommodations, afforded an excellent place for the balls, amateur concerts, and traveling shows, which from time to time stirred into momentary excitement, the otherwise unruffled pulse of the community. When General Lafayette visited Brooklyn, during his visit to America, in 1824, he received his friends at the Military Garden, and as he grasped Poppy Du Flon's hand (for such was the respectfully-familiar nickname given him by his fellow villagers), he recognized in him the sick man whom he had attended, among others, at a lonely house on the frontier, during the Revolutionary war, and whom he had sat up with, watched and nursed for several days. Both gentlemen were affected to tears. Poppy Du Flon's life was unobtrusive, but useful; and his death, which occurred March 4, 1853, in his eighty-eighth year, was lamented by all. He left a wife, still living, and eight children, all but two of whom settled in and around Brooklyn.

---

[1] And partly also on the site of the Brooklyn Garden.

In the rear of the garden, was the old Potter's field (vol. I, page 394, note 3), now (1869) covered by the stables and Burnham's gymnasium, on Boerum street, on the estate of Joseph Schenk, deceased.

Hicks Street, the next street which we propose to traverse, was, as will be seen by reference to Maps A and B, quite narrow at its entrance on the old road, and climbed the hill (between present Fulton and Middagh streets) which was so steep as to be ascended, by loaded vehicles, with considerable difficulty. Passing the John M. Hicks' house already mentioned (*ante*, 54), on the corner of Doughty street, and garden adjoining, we come, on the *westerly* side, to Mr. Brown's; Alex. Birbeck's blacksmith's shop and his dwelling adjoining; then, Mr. Haight's, still standing on the corner of Poplar street. Between this and Middagh street were six frame houses, mostly occupied by two families apiece. Beyond Middagh, three small houses, standing back from the street; then James Weaver's house, next the corner of the present Cranberry street. This was the end of Hicks street — all beyond being fields and orchards. Retracing our steps along the *easterly* side of Hicks street, we find but five buildings, one of which was occupied by William Thompson, formerly a negro slave of the Hickses, from whom he had received his freedom and the lot upon which he lived. Then, we come to the old Hicks mansion at the corner of Fulton and Hicks street, which has been already fully described on page 54.

In the rear of Hicks street (between Poplar and Doughty) was *McKenny street*, a narrow lane, originally 14½, but now 35 feet wide, in which were about a dozen dwellings.

From the western side of McKenney street, about equi-distant from Doughty and Poplar, extended a short *cul-de-sac* lane, about 20 feet wide, originally known as *Fyke street*, from its fancied resemblance to a fisherman's net.[1] About twenty years ago, it was opened through to Columbia street, and is now known as *Vine* street, so named from a huge grape vine which covered the front of the house occupied by Polly Fisher, one of the original residents of that locality. Vine street contained seven dwellings; so that it may be safely estimated that these three little streets, *Hicks*, *McKenny* and *Vine*, represented about one hundred souls, in the early enumeration of the village inhabitants.

---

[1] Delineated on Alex. Martin's Map of Brooklyn, 1834.

Middagh was the last street opened on the west side of the Old Ferry road, within the village limits, with the exception of a small portion of Joralemon's lane, near the Dutch church, and a small portion of Red Hook lane. On its northerly side, on the site of the present Public School No. 8, was the Consistory room of the Dutch Reformed church. In this humble building, which then stood in the midst of Aert Middagh's fields, a school was kept under the direction of the trustees of the church.[1] There were but five other buildings on the street; although, on a little lane running out of it, about where *Henry street* now is, there were four or five small dwellings. A few houses (perhaps not more than six), were to be found on a road, now called *Poplar street*, extending then only as far as Buckbee's alley (now *Poplar Place*); and three on the road, now *Cranberry street*, between Hicks and Willow. On what is now the corner of Cranberry and Willow streets, was the house built by Mr. George Gibbs, in whose garden the Isabella grape-vine first obtained its notoriety, about the year 1816. His wife obtained it from North Carolina, and after its value became known, she gave cuttings liberally to her neighbors. A few gentlemen of Brooklyn, in compliment, gave it her name, *Isabella*, and exerted themselves to multiply cuttings, and make its fine qualities more widely known. By the aid of various publications, in the *Long Island Star*,[2] and other papers, it soon became the cherished ornament and pride of every garden and door-yard, and rapidly spread not only through

---

[1] One John Mann was the first teacher in this school, from about 1812 to 1813, but having severely punished a son of John Simonson, the butcher, was sued, and a judgment of five hundred dollars given against him. He left and was succeeded (1814 to 1816), by William Close, a fine looking, but somewhat passionate man; he, by Mr. Laird, a Scotchman; and in April, 1818, John Laidlaw (yet living in Brooklyn), took charge of this school, retaining it until 1822 or '23. He had previously taught the school at the corner of Red Hook and Cornell's lanes.

[2] Among those who introduced this delicious grape to public notice, none were more enthusiastic or practical in their interest than Col. Alden Spooner, editor of the *Long Island Star*. In 1827, he planted on a little farm, which he had purchased at

Brooklyn and Long Island, but even into far distant states of the Union.

There were, also, several small houses erected in different fields of the Hicks, Middagh, and Johnson estates; none of which however, were get-at-able, except by paths across the fields.

BROOKLYN HEIGHTS.

Thus far in our rambles we have merely skirted around the old Clover hill farms bounded by the East river, the Old Ferry road and Joralemon's lane, without intruding upon the privacy with which its few landed proprietors shrouded themselves. We propose, now, to examine these farms in order, taking our course southwardly from Fulton ferry.

I. The *Cary Ludlow estate* (Fig. 1, Map A, see also Map B), on the north-west corner of the Heights. This was a portion of the original Horsfield estate. Mr. Ludlow, who purchased it from the Horsfields[1] was a prominent New York merchant, and was not identified with Brooklyn, except by residence in the house which he erected on the western line of Willow street, about one hundred and twenty-five feet north of Middagh.[1] The only access to it being by the roundabout way of the Old Ferry road and Hicks street, Mr. Ludlow secured a right of way up the hillside, from

---

Valley Grove[1] fifty French and German vines, and about three hundred cuttings of the Isabella vine. They did not come into bearing until 1831—the result, as to the foreign varieties, being unsatisfactory, but the Isabella vines doing splendidly; and specimens of wine made therefrom were sent to amateurs, and others interested in grape culture, all of whom pronounced most favorably on its merits. The yield of Col. Spooner's vineyard, the next year, 1832, was abundant; and during the same year, he sold ten thousand cuttings of the Isabella grape, to Mr. Wm. R. Underhill and his brother, Dr. R. T. Underhill, of Croton Point, N. Y., who have since obtained a wide reputation in the cultivation of this fruit.

Col. Spooner subsequently published the results of his experience in the grape culture, in a little work of great simplicity and merit, entitled *The Cultivation of American Grape Vines, and Making of Wine,* which has passed through two editions, viz., 1846 and 1858.

[1] Vol. I, 74.

[1] This was formerly the Baisley Farm, on the hill now known as Battle hill, in the present Prospect park.

Doughty street, through the old Whalebone gate, at the corner of Tommy Everit's house.

II. The *Hicks' estate*, and

III. The *Middagh estate*, have been already sufficiently described in our first and second walks (pages 54 and 57), and by Maps A, and B.

IV. *The Waring Estate.* Adjoining, and running in the same direction with the southerly line of the Hicks estate, was a strip of land, its western end on the river, and its east end reaching nearly to Henry street, which belonged, at the time of which we speak, to *Mr. Henry Waring.*

This excellent gentleman was born in that portion of New York, now known as Greenwich, Conn., on the 11th of October, 1773. On his maternal side, he was descended from an ancient Scotch family, the Millingtons — his mother being the daughter of Lady Anne Millington — and, on his father's side he came from an old North-of-Ireland family. His father served with considerable distinction as captain of an artillery company during the Revolutionary war, being mustered out of service at Newburgh, at its close. Henry was the eldest son; and in early life, left his parents, came to New York, and engaged himself as clerk to Bedient & Hubbell, merchants, near the old Fly Market. With this firm he continued until 1793, when he went to sea, and subsequently commanded a vessel, owned by Folkert Eden, and engaged in trading between New York and the West Indies. In 1795, he was taken prisoner by a French sloop-of-war, and a prize crew was placed upon his vessel, which was ordered to Martinique. While on the voyage thither, he and a man named Bills, rose upon the prize crew, retook the vessel, placed the crew (seven in number) in the forecastle, and steered for the island of Jamaica. Unfortunately, however, when within ten days sail of that place, he was spoken and boarded by a Spanish frigate. The suspicions of the boarding officer being aroused by finding the vessel in the hands of only two men, he instituted a search; found the seven Frenchmen imprisoned in the forecastle, liberated them and restored to them the possession of the vessel. Waring and Bills were then taken to the island of Eustatia, and were there imprisoned for several months, when they were exchanged and sent to New York. Soon after his return, a privateer, mounting seven guns, and named the *Adelia*, was fitted out by private subscription among

---

[1] No. 8, Map of Brookland Ferry, vol. II, p. 311. This house is still standing, in Pine-apple, between Willow and Columbia streets.

the merchants of New York, and he was placed in command. His first cruise was successful, taking one or two prizes. When the United States navy was reorganized, he was offered a commission, but declined it, because his old friend and messmate (Commodore) Chauncey received a higher position than was offered to himself. He then formed a merchantile partnership in New York with a son of his old employer, Eden, and transacted business under the firm style of Waring & Eden. On the 11th of February, 1796, he was married, in his native town, to Susan Peck. Soon after this, his partner Eden, died, and he then engaged in business with Mr. Gideon Kimberly, under the firm name of Kimberly & Waring. From him, in 1806, he purchased the property on Brooklyn Heights, before alluded to (page 137), and which extended from the river up to the Old Fort, and, although residing in Frankfort street in the city of New York, he and his family passed a large portion of their time at Brooklyn. In 1813, he made Brooklyn his permanent residence, and, with his partner, became largely interested in the naval store business, owning many vessels in the southern trade, and receiving large consignments of southern goods. In 1826, he became one of the village trustees, holding the position also in 1827, '28, '29 and '30, serving the public interest with great zeal and fidelity, and possessing a leading influence in the board. In 1832, he was chosen as one of the presidential electors, and cast his vote for Jackson. In 1836 he sold his property upon the Heights and purchased the property bounded by Fulton, Washington and Johnson streets, upon which he erected a residence. He was one of the first directors of the Long Island Bank; but, in 1840, having lost his wife, and being about to retire from business, he resigned that, and also his connection with the Brooklyn Savings' Bank, of which he was one of the original trustees. About this time, being deprived of the companionship of his wife, he became depressed in spirits and suffered an attack of paralysis, which induced him to seek relief by a trip to Europe. On his return, his health was apparently reestablished, but, shortly he had another paralytic stroke, under which he lingered for over a year, until his death, at his residence in Fulton street, in the year 1848.

Mr. Waring was short in stature, possessed a very robust constitution, pleasant and genial manners, and was very fond of social enjoyments. Strictly moral and conscientious in all duties, he held the entire confidence of the mercantile community. In politics he was an old line democrat, and a member of the first regular organized republican (as they were then called) society in the city of New York, and out of which the present Tammany Society was organized. He was an early and steadfast friend of Gov. DeWitt

Clinton; and, to such an extent did he carry his friendship for him, that he was, in 1824, one of the prime movers in the organization of a portion of the democratic party for Gen. Jackson with a view to promote Mr. Clinton's preferment thereby. Jackson and Clinton being firm friends, the latter would probably, had he lived, have been secretary of state under Jackson's administration. Mr. Waring, it may be mentioned, during the work of fortification in 1814, left his business and labored, daily, in the erection of Forts Greene and Swift. He had the following children: Caroline, Stephen, Nathaniel F., John, Charles, Susan, besides several who died in early youth.

V. Next south to the Waring property, was the *Gideon Kimberly* estate, a wedge shaped piece of land, its broadest end on the river, and its apex reaching the Old Fort on Henry street.

GIDEON KIMBERLY was born in Vermont, in the year 1750; and in 1768 came to New York city, where he engaged in the service of Messrs. Bedient & Hubbell, merchants in the Fly Market slip. Mr. Hubbell died about 1777, and young Kimberly was taken into partnership by Mr. Bedient, and the business was continued under the firm style of Bedient & Kimberly. In 1791 this firm was dissolved, and a new one formed between Mr. Kimberly and Henry Waring, under the firm name of Kimberly & Waring, the business being conducted in Burling slip, near the present corner of Front street, until about 1813, when the firm style was changed to Kimberlys & Waring, by taking in Mr. David Kimberly, formerly a clerk in their employ. Mr. Gideon Kimberly married Mary Ferris, of Connecticut, in 1792, and, in 1799 she died, at Brooklyn, of the yellow fever. About the time of his marriage he settled on what was then known as Clover hill in Brooklyn, upon property which he purchased from the executors of Noel John Barbarin. This property, which was the old Bamper estate (vol. I, 308 and 309), commenced at the shore opposite to, and about two hundred feet south of the south-west corner of Clarke and Columbia streets, and extended east from the river to the Old Fort, at Henry street. The present Mansion House, in Hicks street, stands upon a portion of this land. The Kimberly house (probably the old Bamper mansion), is located on Map B, fig. 41. Mr. Kimberly retired from business in 1815, and died suddenly of apoplexy, at the Tontine Coffee House, in the city of New York, while conversing with his friend Mr. Butler, the editor of the *Mercantile Advertiser*, in February, 1817, aged sixty-eight years, and was buried, by the side of his wife, in Greenwich, Conn. He was a regular attendant upon the Dutch Reformed church in Brooklyn; and, although a man of the world, always evinced a sincere respect for the Christian religion. In politics Mr. Kimberly was a democrat of the Jeffersonian school, and a prominent member and officer of the Tammany Society, in New York city. He was scrupulously honest, and though known as a close business man, yet was humane and charitable. Although he accumulated by his industry a large property, yet he had no children, and his wealth descended to heirs, many of whom he had never seen, or even heard of, during his life. After his death, his real estate in Brooklyn was sold in partition in the court of chancery, and the larger portion of it was purchased by his neighbors, Henry Waring and Samuel Jackson.

VI. The next estate to the Kimberly property, was that belonging to

Samuel Jackson, one of the oldest merchants in the city of New York, and descended from an ancient English family, among the first of the Society of Friends, to settle on Long Island. He was born, about 1750, near Jerusalem, Queens county, and his eldest sister was married to a New York merchant, by the name of Milton, with whom young Jackson, previous to the Revolution, became a clerk. About 1783, Mr. Milton died, leaving his entire estate in the care of his clerk and brother-in-law, Mr. Jackson. A few months after Mr. Milton's death, his widow gave birth to a son, who was named John Milton; and Jackson, together with his widowed sister and her infant, removed to Brooklyn, where he purchased a house and grounds upon the Heights. This property extended in width from the Kimberly line, to the north-easterly side of Love lane, and in length from the line of the present Columbia street to the westerly line of the Swertcope property, which was about five or six hundred feet from Fulton street as it now is. Mr. Jackson's lands included all that portion of the Old Fort lying north of Love lane; and he was, also, the owner of a large wharf property in front of his dwelling, known as Jackson's Stores, and which were managed by George Hicks. The dwelling house (Map B, 48) which he occupied was a stone building, of nearly a hundred feet front, and one and a half story high, with a low roof. It stood on the west line of the present Columbia street, two hundred and twenty-five feet north of Pierrepont, and facing the river. It is supposed to have been the old Timothy Horsfield house, was afterwards occupied for a time by Gov. Cadwallader Colden, probably as a summer residence, and was commonly known as the Old Stone House, (see page 309 of first volume). Although its age, or the name of its builder, were unknown — its peculiarities of architecture and finish gave indubitable evidence of its extreme antiquity. It had four entrances — two in front, and two in the rear — each by the old fashioned half-doors, the upper half being almost invariably open, for Mr. Jackson was a strong believer in ventilation. These doors opened into two large and very wide halls, from which the old platform stairways rose to the upper story. Here, Mr. Jackson, with his sister as housekeeper, kept bachelor's hall — devoting their joint attention to the education of the young John Milton. As before stated, Mr. Jackson had succeeded to Mr. Milton's business, and successfully carried it on in South street, between Burling slip and Maiden lane, in the city of New York. As soon as his nephew's education was sufficiently advanced, he employed him as a clerk, in which capacity he remained until about 1818, when he died at Mr. Jackson's house. The death of his nephew visibly affected the accustomed cheerfulness of Mr. Jackson's character, for he had intended to make the young man his heir. Shortly after young Milton's death, the mother died also, leaving Mr. Jackson alone in the old mansion, with none to keep him company, except his two servants (formerly his slaves), Harry and Susannah (Suke) Havens. Mr. Jackson now turned his attention to ornamental gardening, and few private gardens in the town were so attractive as his — a walk to Clover hill and Jackson's garden being, in those days, the favorite walk of the young people of both sexes. And, to protect the contents of his garden, when any person entered it, unaccompanied by himself, his "man, Harry," as he used to call him, was always on hand to see that none of the ornamental plants were disturbed. One who knew Mr. Jackson says, that he well remembers seeing *cotton balls* growing in this garden. About the year 1825 several barrels of cotton were distributed in Brooklyn, and almost every one had a plant in their garden, but the cold weather soon killed them.

Here, then, Samuel Jackson, the rich old bachelor, lived and distributed his hospitality with great liberality, until about the year 1820, when his favorite servant Suke, died, and he shortly after broke up his bachelor establishment and took board at Morrison's hotel, which was situated on the present north-west corner of Columbia and Cranberry streets. His house he rented to John Wells, Esq., a distinguished member of the New York bar, who died in it, of the yellow fever, in the year 1822. After Mr. Wells's death, it was occupied by Mr. Thomas March, until after the decease of Mr. Jackson, which took place at Morrison's hotel, May 23d, 1832.[1]

---

[1] This old house afterwards became the asylum for some aged women, gathered together by the charitable exertions of Mrs. Pierrepont, Mrs. Richards, and other ladies — from which enterprise finally came the noble institution, known as The Church Charity Foundation.

After the death of his nephew, John Milton, Mr. Jackson attended personally to very little business, in consequence of a diseased liver, from which he suffered much. He maintained his office and business, however, in New York, and employed his nephew, Hamilton. It was said of Mr. Jackson that, although he seldom visited the city of New York, he could sit in his parlor, and, from information derived from the New York newspapers, of which he was a constant reader, he could direct purchases and make more money than any merchant in that city, in his line of business, which consisted chiefly of grain, naval stores and cotton.

Mr. Jackson's figure was straight, nearly six feet high, and of about three hundred pounds weight. He had a dark sallow complexion; dressed with remarkable neatness, his costume being fashioned somewhat after the old style of the Society of Friends; with cue; white top boots in cold weather; shoes, knee-buckles and shorts, in summer, etc. To strangers, he appeared dignified and retiring, made but few intimate friends, and was never known to attend a public meeting of any description. With his friends, however, no man was more social, and none more prudent in his habits. Although afflicted, for many years previous to his death, with the liver complaint, he never complained, but took his daily ride in his coach for the purpose of giving "the fellow," as he used to call that important organ, a proper amount of exercise. His income was very large, and he contributed a large portion of it to private charities, believing that he knew best how to exercise his benevolence; and though somewhat stern in his dealings with men, he was always kind and considerate to children, often giving them fruits, etc. After breaking up housekeeping, he built on Love lane, a substantial dwelling for his body servant, Harry Havens, and deeded to him the land upon which it stood, together with a garden plot. He rarely rode out without calling at Harry's to see if he needed anything. During Mr. Jackson's lifetime, Harry, who possessed the manners of a polished gentleman, maintained a very respectable position; but after his old master's decease, the want of his accustomed advice and guidance was soon felt, and he gradually dissipated his property until his death, about the year 1858, when he was buried by the private contributions of his late master's friends, and their descendants.

When Forts Greene and Swift were constructed, in 1813, Gen. Johnson and Col. Decatur called upon Mr. Jackson for the purpose of requesting from him assistance in that important and patriotic work, although with little expectation that he would render any aid, inasmuch as he was known to be affiliated with the Society of Friends, who were opposed to the war.

Imagine the surprise of the committee, therefore, when, after their request had been made, Mr. Jackson quietly asked, "Well, gentlemen, how much do *you* propose to do towards the work?" They replied that they should give their personal services. Whereupon Mr. Jackson said, "*My personal* services won't amount to much, but I will do my part," and forthwith employed six men at his own expense, to work on the forts for the space of three months, during which time he daily visited the fortifications, to see that they did their work properly.

VII. Next south of the Jackson property was a tract of 14 acres, extending from the East river to the old road (Fulton street) and in width from Love lane, to a line a little north of the present Pierrepont street. This strip of land was owned by the brothers *Robert* and *John De Bevoise*, whose grandfather Jacobus purchased it from Joris Remsen in 1734.[1]

ROBERT the elder brother, was a stout, strong, broad-faced man; but having, unfortunately, lost his nose and palate, in consequence of a cancerous disease — was, although really of a kindly disposition, quite an object of terror to the village urchins — which was, by no means, lessened by the savage disposition of twenty or thirty dogs which he kept around the house. John De Bevoise was a strong contrast to his brother Robert — being thin, pale and consumptive. Both were bachelors, and being well off, occupied their time alternately in fishing and gardening. Their dwelling, a small, ancient and rather dilapidated Dutch edifice, which stood on the line of

---

[1] The De Bevoise brothers were descended from *Carel* De Beauvois, an immigrant from Leyden, Holland, in 1659, who became the first schoolmaster in Brooklyn, and otherwise notable and useful in the town. His eldest-born, *Jacobus*, married Maria, daughter of Joost Carelsz, in 1678, and their third son *Jacobus* married, in 1715, Sarah, daughter of Joris Remsen, the owner, at that time, of nearly all of the Heights (vol. I, pages 69–73), and who conveyed to them, August 15, 1734, this tract of 14 acres, upon which they afterwards resided. They had two sons, *Jacobus*, who died in 1751, and whose only daughter Engeltie, married Isaac Degraw, of Brooklyn; and *George*, who married Sarah Betts, and, on his father's death, in 1767, inherited by will (*Wills*, liber XXVI, 144), his whole estate. George himself died May 1, 1783, and his widow Sarah, in 1786. No will being found or proved, it was supposed to have been burned by the old lady, and the estate, after her death, came into the hands of *Robert*, born January 2, 1764; *John*, who died in 1821, and *Sarah*, who married, in 1776, William Smyth, had a son William, born in 1777, and died herself in 1780. This William, Jr., in 1801, released to his uncles Robert and John De Beauvoise, all his interest, through his mother, in his grandfather George's estate.

Columbia street, about 160 feet north of the line of Pierrepont (Map B, 49), was graced by the presence of an exceedingly beautiful girl, who filled the place of a daughter to the two old men, whose name she bore. Sarah De Bevoise, had many admirers, and the private lane which led down to the house, between the De Bevoise and Pierrepont estates, is said to have received its name of Love lane, from the numerous love-lines, initials of Miss De B. and her love-lorn swains, which were scribbled and cut upon its fence by the young men of the village. She was much petted by her aged protectors, who built for her especial use a little parlor or dolly-house (Map B. 50), near the main residence, where she might receive her guests, in more befitting style than she could in the old-fashioned, double-roomed and plainly-furnished farm-house. She married first Mr. Samuel Van Buren, and after his death, Mr. Edward McComber (see vol. I, 308, *note*), and is still living in New York city.

It is related of old Bob De Bevoise that his ground was enclosed by a high board fence; and, as the trees were thick on the line of the fence, when the posts gave away, from time to time, he nailed the boards to the trees. But the winds stirred the trees, and thereby loosened the boards again; so that, finally, it became a regular Sunday morning job with Bob to nail up his fences, and his neighbors, without reference to almanac, could always tell when sabbath came, by the continual hammer, hammer, hammering which resounded along the line of partition. To Bob De Bevoise, also, belongs the honor of first gratifying the New Yorkers with the taste of garden cultivated strawberries. Previous to the beginning of the present century, this delicious fruit had been known to the New York market, only by the few wild berries which were brought in by women from Tappan and New Jersey. But, about 1800 – 1802, Robert De Bevoise commenced their systematic cultivation for the market, sending them to market in crockery bowls, at two shillings per pint bowl; and, by refusing to sell any of his plants (people, at that day, were too honest to steal them) secured, and, for about three years, retained the monopoly in the city. He then, as a great favor, gave some of his plants to old Swertcope, the Hessian, who had purchased an adjoining farm, and he, too, in a short time made it a profitable business. The cry of "Hot Corn!" now so frequently heard on summer evenings in the streets of Brooklyn, is associated with the De Bevoise family. Furman says, "at this season of the year, when I was a boy of about seven or eight years of age (1807 – 8); in the evening, an old colored woman, familiarly known as, De Bevoise's Black Peg, or rather Margaret, or Peggy, the slave of Robert De Bevoise, made her appearance in the main street, then called the Old Ferry road, now Fulton street, crying 'Hot corn, nice hot corn! piping hot!' This was the cry of Peg, for a time; until corn getting a little too tough from the ripening effects of the sun (for then we did not have green corn all the summer through, coming, as it now does, from the West Indies and the south, in the latter part of May and June, and from the north in September, but we had to depend alone upon what was raised in King's county), and the large bell pears having attained nearly their full size, she stewed them whole until they were soft, and then poured molasses over them while they were hot, and carried them through the streets as "baked pears," and very palateable they were, as I well recollect; but this cry has gone out of vogue; I have not heard it for years." The selling of hot corn and baked pears were the perquisites of Black Peg. In his later jottings, Furman says, under date of 1836, that he has noticed corn sold for some five or six days past, in the streets of New York and Brooklyn, especially in the evenings, and principally by negroes. He especially mentions a negro "whose stand is about the Fulton market, New York, has quite a rhyme for selling his articles, which I have so frequently heard, as to remember:

"Hot corn! hot corn! I have to sell,
Come buy my corn, I'll treat you well,
My corn is good and that I know,
For on Long Island it did grow."

and adds that "Long Island is famous for the best green corn in the New York market."

When, in 1816, the village was incorporated, and streets and lots began to be plotted over the old farm lines, Robert De Bevoise took alarm, and expressed a determination to move out of the reach of the modern improvements. Hearing of this, his next neighbor, Mr. Hez. B. Pierrepont, inquired his price, and, $28,000 being named, immediately accepted the offer, much to old Bob's astonishment, who supposed he had placed it at so high a figure that no one would buy.[1] He continued to reside on the place, however, for two years after the sale, and then removed to the neighborhood of the Black Horse tavern, and built a dwelling, still standing, and known as the Abbey, in Fulton avenue.

Soon, however, streets and houses made their distasteful appearance in the vicinity, and he "pulled up stakes" and settled at Bedford. Again the city jostled him, and, in despair, he fled to Jamaica, L. I., where he died some years after.

---

[1] Mr. Pierrepont's diary, under date of April 15th, 1816, records "Bought of Robert De Bevoise, his farm next mine, for $28,000."

VIII. Next came the *Pierrepont* property; which, including the above named De Bevoise farm, comprised a tract of sixty acres, between Love lane and the line of the present Remsen street, and extending from the East river to the Old Ferry road, now Fulton street.

This, together with the De Bevoise, Remsen and Joralemon farms, originally formed the estate of Joris Remsen, who purchased it in 1706, from his father-in-law, Dirck Janse Woertman, who had consolidated the titles of the ancient *Hudde*, *Manje* and *Ruyter* patents, described on pages 70–73 of our first volume. This Joris Remsen, in 1734, sold to his son-in-law, Jacobus De Bevoise, the fourteen acres known as the De Bevoise farm.

The remainder of Joris Remsen's land was inherited by his son Rem, who died in or about 1724, leaving among other children, a son George (or Joris), who fell heir to the paternal estate, married Jane, daughter of Philip Nagle, and died between 1735 and '43, leaving issue, Rem, Philip and Aletta. On the 19th of June, 1753, (*Kings County Records*, liber VI, 174), Philip Remsen described as then of Bucks county, Pa., together "with Philip Nease, Esq., of Flatbush, only surviving executor of his father's estate," conveyed to Henry and Peter Remsen, merchants, of New York city, for the sum of £1,060, one-half (estimated at fifty-seven acres) of the original property purchased by his great-grandfather, Joris Remsen, from Woertman, and bounded easterly by the lands of Jacobus De Bevoise, and southerly by those of Johannes Johnson, and westerly by those of Isaac Sebring. The above named brothers, Henry and Peter Remsen, at some time prior to 1764, sold to Philip Livingston, Esq., of New York, that portion of the estate lying between the present Joralemon and Atlantic streets, and extending from the East river to Red Hook lane.[1] On the first of August, 1768, the Remsen brothers divided between them the remainder of the property — Hendrik taking the northerly half, adjoining the De Bevoise farm, and Peter taking the southerly portion next to the Livingston farm, from which it was separated by a lane since known as Joralemon street.[2]

---

[1] See vol. I, p. 73, 304, 305. [2] Liber VI, 181, *Kings County Records;* also p. 177.

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

A portion of the Hendrick Remsen farm came into possession of John Cornell, who built, at foot of present Montague street, the main portion of the edifice described on page 307 of first volume, as the Cornell-Pierrepont mansion. George Powers afterwards purchased the place, and in 1795 sold it again to James Arden, who added wings to the house, and, in May, 1804, sold it to Mr. Benson, from whom it was purchased by Mr. Hezekiah B. Pierrepont, who, in 1802, had become the owner of the old Livingston distillery, at the foot of Joralemon street near by.

Hezekiah Beers Pierrepont was born in New Haven, Conn., 3d November, 1768, and was grandson of the Rev. James Pierrepont, the first minister settled in that colony. Part of the town plat apportioned to him in 1684, has ever since belonged to the family and been occupied by them. The father of the Rev. James Pierrepont belonged to the family of Holme Pierrepont in Nottinghamshire, England, descendants from Robert de Pierrepont of Normandy. He came to America about the year 1640 with his younger brother Robert, as tradition says, merely to visit the country, but married and settled near Boston, where he purchased three hundred acres, now the site of Roxbury and part of Dorchester. The family name being French, became anglicized in this country and spelt Pierpont. The correct spelling was resumed by the subject of this memoir in signing his will. He displayed at an early age an enterprising spirit, and fondness for active life. While at college, he became dissatisfied with the study of Latin and Greek, and the prospect of a professional life. He proposed to his father that if he would permit him to leave his studies, he would provide for himself, and ask no share of his estate. His father consented, and he fulfilled his promise, and thereafter provided for his own support. To obtain a knowledge of business, he first entered the office of his uncle, Mr. Isaac Beers, in New Haven; and, afterwards, to extend his knowledge of commercial affairs, engaged as a clerk in the Custom House, in New York. He then associated himself with Messrs. Watson & Greenleaf, and engaged, as their agent, in Philadelphia, in the purchase of the national debt, realizing thereby, in a short time, a small fortune. In 1793, he formed a partnership with his cousin, William Leffingwell, and established in New York, the commercial house of Leffingwell & Pierrepont, engaging in shipping provisions to France, where scarcity prevailed in consequence of the Revolution. He removed to France, to attend to the shipments of his firm, and resided in Paris, during the reign of terror, and saw Robespierre beheaded.

The seizure of American vessels, carrying provisions to France, by England, then at war with France, so embarrassed this trade, that he relinquished it, and in 1795, purchased in England, a fine ship named the Confederacy, and went on a trading voyage to India and China, as owner and supercargo, Captains Scott, Jenks, and James Goodrich, conducting the ship. On his return voyage in 1797, with a valuable cargo, his ship was seized by a French privateer, condemned and sold, for want of a *rôle d'équipage*, contrary to the laws of nations, and our treaty stipulations. After tedious legal proceedings in England, he recovered part of his insurance, and was on the eve of succeeding in France, in his reclamations against the government, when the United States made a treaty with France, by the terms of which each government agreed to assume the claims of its own citizens. To the disgrace of the government of the United States, this claim, which is one of the class known as *claims for French spoliations prior to* 1800, has never yet been paid. These claims have been ever since before congress, and advocated by the best men among its early and its present members. Twenty-one reports have been made in favor, and none adverse; and bills for payment have been twice passed by both houses, which were vetoed, on frivolous grounds, by Presidents Tyler and Polk.

After an absence abroad, of seven years, Mr Pierrepont returned in 1800 to New York. He married, in 1802, Anna Maria, daughter of William Constable, a distinguished merchant, and the largest owner of wild land in the state of New York. Considering foreign commerce, in the then disturbed political state of Europe, too hazardous, he abandoned it. He visited New England to examine into its manufactories, and finding distilling of gin very profitable, he engaged Colonel James Anderson, of Connecticut, to establish a factory for him. In 1802, he purchased in Brooklyn, the brewery belonging to Philip Livingston, at the foot of Joralemon street, which had been burnt during the war of the Revolution, and, there established his factory, which obtained a high reputation. It was at that time the only manufactory of the kind in the state, and proved to be very profitable. His attention being thus drawn to Brooklyn, he purchased on the Heights, the Benson farm and spacious residence, and removed to it. He subsequently bought the adjoining farm of Robert De Bevoise, and also part of the Remsen farm, making a tract of sixty acres, having a front of eight hundred feet on the East river, and extending back, between Love lane and Remsen street, about half a mile to Fulton street.

The success of his factory induced competition and diminished its profits; he thereupon, in 1819, abandoned it, and thereafter gave his whole attention to the improvement of his Brooklyn property, and the settlement of his wild land, amounting to nearly half a million of acres situated in the northern part of the state, in the counties of Oswego, Jefferson, Lewis, St. Lawrence and Franklin. During the remainder of his life, he spent part of every summer in visiting these lands, in company with his two sons, William and Henry, whom he had educated with special reference to their management.

He foresaw, at this early period, the future growth of Brooklyn, which was then mainly owned in farms by market gardeners, or occupied for country residences. He was one of a committee in 1815, who framed and procured the act for incorporating Brooklyn as a village, and he afterwards served as one of the trustees. The legislature having passed an act for laying out streets in the village, Mr. Pierrepont gave his exertions and influence to have a proper plan adopted. He procured Mr. Poppleton, a distinguished city surveyor, at his private expense, to make a plan, suggesting wider streets and larger blocks, instead of the narrow streets and one acre blocks of two hundred feet square recommended to the trustees; and succeeded in getting his plan adopted for that part of the Heights south of Clark street. In order to widen Hicks street, between Cranberry and Clark streets, and stop the extension of leasehold property and poor buildings of wood, he engaged Mr. Joel Bunce to purchase for him, from the Messrs. Hicks, that part of their property. He then widened the street as far as Cranberry street, by restricting the purchasers to a building line. With a liberal public spirit, he voluntarily removed his fence on Fulton street, widening the street without compensation, while he was afterwards heavily assessed for the widening of the same street towards Fulton ferry. In laying out Pierrepont street, he adopted a building line making the width of the street between the houses eighty feet, and Montague and Remsen streets, seventy-six feet.

An intimacy commenced in Europe with Robert Fulton, was continued during the too short life of this public benefactor. A son, Robert Fulton Pierrepont, named after him, died in 1814. Mr. Pierrepont aided Mr. Fulton with his advice and influence in the establishment of Fulton ferry, and always took great interest in the improvement of this, the main portal of Brooklyn. He subscribed towards the purchase of this ferry, from the assigns of Fulton, in whose hands it was not conducted with due regard to Brooklyn interests, and continued one of its directors, till his death. In the years 1827 and 1828 Mr. Pierrepont served, with ability, as a member of the board of village trustees. As chairman of the street committee, he exerted himself to secure an open promenade for the public, on the

Heights, from Fulton ferry to Joralemon street. He had a map and plan drawn for the improvement by Mr. Silas Ludlam, and procured the consent of the proprietors for a cession of the property, except from his neighbor and friend Judge Radcliff, who opposed the scheme so violently, that Mr. Pierrepont, rather than have a contest with a friend, withdrew from the attempt, and paid himself the expenses incurred for the survey and plan, though he had ordered it officially. He lived and died in the belief and desire, that the Heights would some day be made a public promenade, on some similiar plan. Before his estate was divided and sold, his executors gave the opportunity to the city to take the property between Love lane and Remsen street and Willow street, the only part of the Heights that remained unoccupied, for such a public place, and a petition was signed by a few public spirited men for the object. But it was defeated before the city authorities by overwhelming remonstrances, very generally signed in the large district of assessment that was proposed.

It appears from his diary, that as early as the year 1818, he made inquiry as to the cost of stone wharves. He reluctantly improved his water front with timber, when he found from the depth of water the cost of stone structures was too great, to be warranted by the small income derived by wharf owners under our present port laws.

Mr. Pierrepont persistently declined to sell his lots, except where good private dwellings of brick or stone, were engaged to be erected, suited to the future character of his finely situated property. Though he did not live long enough to realize fully his anticipations—time has now proved the soundness of his judgment.[1] His property is now covered by elegant mansions, besides five fine churches, the City Hall, Academy of Music, Mercantile Library, and other public buildings, while the front on the bay is occupied by extensive wharves and warehouses.

---

[1] Mr. Pierrepont was informed that Messrs. P. & A. Schermerhorn were intending to buy that portion of the Remsen estate, between the site of the present City Hall and Clinton street (which street was then laid out on the village map), for the purpose of erecting thereon a ropewalk. Resolved to check an enterprise, which he knew would seriously affect the future healthy growth of the village, as well as the value of surrounding property, he immediately petitioned the trustees for laying out a street, from Pierrepont to Joralemon streets; across the site of the proposed ropewalk, and which he named Moser street, in compliment to the excellent Joseph Moser, a member of the board of trustees. His request was granted, and Moser street, as laid down upon the village map — was opened, and although since closed, served to spoil the designs of the Messrs. Schermerhorn, who were forced to purchase property between State and Atlantic streets, on which (about on line of Schermerhorn street), they erected a very extensive ropewalk.

Mr. Pierrepont possessed great energy of character, and a sound judgment. He was domestic in his habits, and had no ambition for public office, or relish for political life. At the early organization of the village, and of the city of Brooklyn, when his services were deemed important, he gave them freely to his fellow citizens, in aid of their local affairs. He retained his energy and his activity, and died in 1838, after a short illness of an inflammatory attack, aged seventy years, leaving a widow, two sons and eight daughters. His widow died in 1859.

We add a list of the children of Mr. Pierrepont, to whom his Brooklyn property has descended: *William Constable Pierrepont*, residing at Pierrepont manor, Jefferson county; *Henry Evelyn Pierrepont*, residing in Brooklyn; *Anna Constable Pierrepont*, married Hubert Van Wagenen, died 1839, leaving a son of the same name; *Emily Constable Pierrepont*, who married Joseph A. Perry; *Frances Matilda Pierrepont*, who married Rev. Frederick S. Wiley; *Mary Montague Pierrepont*, who died in 1853, unmarried; *Harriet Constable Pierrepont*, married Edgar J. Bartow, died 1855; *Maria Theresa Pierrepont*, who married Joseph J. Bicknell; *Julia Evelyn Pierrepont*, married John Constable, of Constableville; *Ellen Isaphine*, married Dr. James M. Minor.

On the beach under the Heights, in front of the mansion, was a dock, accessible from the house by means of a pathway, with two or three flights of stone steps, leading down the face of the bluff. At this dock always lay a row boat, which was Mr. Pierrepont's ordinary means of travel to and from New York. Aside from this road along the beach (now Furman street), the only way to reach the village from his residence, was by a private lane, which opened upon the Old Ferry road (Fulton street), close by Larry Brower's tavern (*ante*, 86).

On the corner of Pierrepont and Henry streets, Mr. Thomas March, previously alluded to, page 141, of the firm of March & Benson, the principal wine merchants of New York, at that day, built a residence, about 1833. The old gentleman's favorite daily walk was along the front of the Heights, and lovingly and enthusiastically was he wont to praise the beauty of the place and the splendid prospect, which was there unfolded to the eye of the spectator. And, amid the beauties of nature which he so thoroughly appreciated, the angel of death finally met him, as he was taking his morning walk — his lifeless corpse being found in front of the Pierrepont residence.[1]

IX. Between Mr. Pierrepont's southerly line and the present Joralemon street, was the remainder of the Remsen estate, owned by Peter Remsen.[2] After his death, Maj. Fanning C. Tucker, Robert Carter, Adam Treadwell and Mr. Pierrepont purchased that portion nearest the river, and bounded by Joralemon, Clinton and Remsen streets; which streets were laid out and named by Mr. Pierrepont. The remaining portion of the estate, that bounded by Clinton, Joralemon and the Old Road (Fulton street), was retained by Henry Remsen and his sister Matilda, children of Peter. The most easterly extremity of their land was purchased as a site for the City Hall; and, finally, they sold out all their property in Brooklyn.

---

[1] The Pierrepont mansion we have already described, by pictures as well as words, on page 307 of our first volume. It was a very large building of 144 feet front, and furnished in a style of substantial, yet modest elegance, characteristic of its owner's tastes. Among its household treasures we may mention the celebrated original portrait of Washington, painted by Stuart, for Mr. Constable (Mr. Pierrepont's father-in-law), and which now adorns the elegant mansion of Mr. Henry E. Pierrepont on the corner of Pierrepont street and Place.

In Mr Hezekiah B. Pierrepont's day, the place was well stocked with the rarest and choicest varieties of peaches, apples, plums, cherries, apricots, etc., which had originally been planted there by Mr. Arden, an Englishman, the former owner of the property. Mr. Pierrepont, also took great pleasure in horticultural pursuits, and his garden was remarkable for the number of its rare and beautiful plants and flowers, to which he was constantly adding by purchase and by exchange with gentlemen of similar tastes in different parts of the country. From Lord Bolingbroke, an English nobleman, who had come to America and then resided near Elizabeth, N. J., in the old Gov. Livingston house, he procured the first plant of the sea kale (*Crambe maritima*) ever seen in Brooklyn. Mr. Pierrepont's gardener, James Wilson, was a thoroughly educated man, who afterwards became a partner with Mr. Buell in establishing an extensive garden and nursery near Albany, N. Y. This Wilson, prior to leaving England had surreptitiously obtained, at some agricultural fair, some of the seed of the *dahlia,* then an unknown plant in America, and some of these seed he planted in Mr. Pierrepont's garden. Dr. Hosack, the celebrated physican and botanist of New York city, some time after was bragging over a dahlia which he then possessed, and which he considered the *only* one in the country. He was greatly surprised and somewhat chagrined to find the plant well domesticated in Mr. Pierrepont's garden. It may be mentioned, while we are talking about these matters, that Commodore Chauncey, about 1812, introduced here the fine *Lima bean,* in the garden attached to his garden at the Navy Yard.

[2] *Ante,* page 146, last sentence.

The old Remsen mansion, of which we have given the history on page 73 of our first volume, is still standing as Nos. 2 and 4 Joralemon street near Furman.[1] The well belonging to the old house is still in existence, under the baptismal font of Grace church; and, we believe that the Rev. Dr. Vinton once endeavored to provide from this well the water needed at baptismal services, but the plan failed to work properly.

The Heights, at that day, were beautifully shaded, and at the southern extremity (above the present corner of Joralemon and Furman streets, where Mrs. Packer's house now stands), was a large grove, with ravines leading down to the shore beautifully shaded with cedars. This was called Lover's or Hymen's grove.

Under the cliff, stood the Old Ferry house, occupying nearly the same site as the old Eagle tavern, memorable in Brooklyn history, in connection with the murder of young George Phelps, in 1840, of which a full account, from the pen of Judge N. B. Morse, will be found in the *Corporation Manual of Brooklyn* for 1865. A liquor store stands now on the same spot, the north-east corner of Furman and Joralemon streets.

This brings us to Joralemon's lane, before described as the southern boundary of the Heights proper.

Walk the Fourth, *down Red Hook lane to Red Hook; and thence, along the river side, to Joralemon's lane.*

Our next excursion will be in the direction of Red Hook and the numerous old tide mills situated among the marsh meadows of Gowanus creek, together with the farms lying along the East river, between Red Hook and the southerly termination of the Heights at Joralemon's lane. This district, forming what is now known as *South Brooklyn*, we reach by means of *Red Hook lane*, previously mentioned as diverging from the southerly side of the Brooklyn and Flatbush and Jamaica turnpike (Fulton avenue), a little east of Du Flon's Military Garden. This Red Hook lane seems to have been laid out, according to record, on the 6th of June, 1760; appears upon Ratzer's Map (1766 – 67) and all subsequent maps; and, although mostly swallowed up by the growth of the city, a remnant still survives, between Fulton avenue and Livingston street, and is particularly noticeable as containing the modest retreat of the Board of Education.

---

[1] *Not* Furman near Joralemon, as incorrectly stated on page 73 of first volume.

Entering this lane, therefore, we pass on the west the old Potter's field (vol. I, 394, *note*), and along Judge Joralemon's land until we reach, at about the junction of the present Court and Pacific streets, a very considerable conical-shaped hill — Ponkiesbergh, or Cobble hill of Revolutionary memory — rearing itself above the surrounding cornfields. Not far from its base was a ghost-haunted spot, about which dreadful stories were whispered (vol. I, 252, *note* 1), which lent wings to the feet of such unwary village urchins as chanced to pass it after dark. Passing, in a westerly direction, around and along the base of this hill, for about three hundred feet, Red Hook lane again turned southwardly. Just at the angle of this turn, on the west side, commenced the private road, or lane called *Patchen's lane*,[1] which led down to Ralph Patchen's house, near the foot of the present Atlantic street. Upon the incorporation of the village, in 1816, this lane was absorbed by District street, which followed the same course and became the southern boundary of the village. District street, in turn, merged its identity in Atlantic street. Passing along Red Hook lane, through Patchen's land, we come to another private road diverging from its easterly side, and known as *Freeke's lane* or the *Mill road*. From its entrance on Red Hook lane, on line of Court street between East Warren and East Baltic, it ran southerly, to the mills of John C. Freeke and Nehemiah Denton, thence to Gowanus. All of which will be found more fully described in our *sixth* walk.

---

[1] This was originally a road, three rods wide, running down to a *public landing place*, six rods long, at low water mark, at foot of what was first District, and now is Atlantic street. This public road and landing place was laid out April 7th, 1714.

Continuing along Red Hook lane, between the lands of Anthony Worthington,[1] on the west, and those of Jacob Bergen, on the east, we come to a small frame school house, erected by the farmers of the neighborhood; and, near it, on the west side of the lane (at near the junction of present Butler and Court streets), was a gate opening into *Cornell's lane*, leading down towards the river to the house of Isaac Cornell, farmer and distiller,[2] a plain old fashioned man in manner and dress.

From this point (Cornell's gate), the Red Hook lane, passed along, still through Bergen's lands, in a southerly direction towards Red Hook. On its easterly side, in a retired and beautiful spot, near the line of the present Carroll, between Clinton and Henry streets,[3] was a small cottage occupied, for many years in the early part of the present century, by the well known actress,

MRS. CHARLOTTE MELMOTH. She was a native of Great Britain, had been duped into a sham marriage, while at boarding school, by a Mr. Pratt (known in the literary and theatrical circles of that day as Courtney Melmoth), and with him went upon the stage, playing in several companies both in England and Ireland. After their separation, she continued to bear his assumed name, and played a season at Covent Garden, in 1774, and at Drury Lane, in 1776. In England, however, she does not seem to have met with the distinguished success which she enjoyed at the Edinburgh and Dublin theatres, where she was an acknowledged favorite for many years. Her first appearance upon the American stage (although she had given readings during the previous winter), was on the 20th of November, 1793, at the old John street theatre, in New York. She was then past the prime of life, but her face was still handsome and her figure commanding; although, unfortunately, so bulky as to restrict her to a very limited range of parts. Still, she came before the New York play goers, of that day, with the deserved reputation of being the best tragic actress, which any — except it were the traveled few — had ever enjoyed the opportunity of seeing. Her character, on this eventful occasion, was that of *Euphrasia*, in Murphy's elegant tragedy of the Grecian Daughter, but her unfortunate dimensions, Dunlap says, "were far beyond the sphere of *embonpoint*, and when

---

[1] Anthony Worthington's house stood about sixty or seventy feet back from the lane. It has since been converted into an extensive lager-bier saloon and garden, on the west side of Court street (Nos. 132, 134), opposite Wyckoff street.

[2] Vol. I, 307. [3] See *Colton's Map*.

Euphrasia invites Dionysius to strike her, instead of her emaciated father, crying, 'Strike here! here's blood enough!' an involuntary laugh broke from the audience, which nearly destroyed not only all illusion, but the hopes of the actress." Her merit, however, carried her through with great applause, and she long remained a favorite. She often played the Grecian Daughter, at this period, but never repeated "Here's blood enough!" By degrees she relinquished the youthful characters, and took up a line of more matronly ones, in which she displayed powers rarely equaled. She was, also, admirable in comedy; Dunlap remarks of her that "she had rather too much of the Mrs. Overdone; and, from a natural deficiency of the organs of speech, could not give utterance to that letter, which her countrymen generally sound double, the letter *r*." Mrs. Melmoth was much esteemed for her excellent private character, and, compelled at length by advancing age to leave the stage, she purchased this cottage in the quiet and beautiful Red Hook lane, and took boarders. Stuart the artist, was, for a while, an inmate of her family and his board bills seem to have been paid, in part, at least, with some of his inimitable portraits, which adorned Mrs. Melmoth's parlor, and one of which, that of Judge Egbert Benson, has recently found its appropriate resting place upon the walls of the Long Island Historical Society. At this time, also, or subsequently, Mrs. Melmoth kept a school for young ladies and children at her residence, her pupils mostly belonging to the Cutting, Cornell, Pierrepont, (John) Jackson, and Luquer families; some of these children, now men and women grown, are still living and enjoy very pleasant and respectful memories of their old school-mistress, with whom they boarded during the week, returning to their respective homes on Saturday to spend the sabbath. The nearest neighbor was Mr. Suydam's, where they took turns in going daily for milk wherewith to furnish the suppan and milk, which was a favorite article of food. Mrs. Melmoth's family consisted of herself, her friend Miss Butler, and two aged Dutch negro slaves, a man and a woman. In person, Mrs. Melmoth is recollected as fleshy and heavy, somewhat dignified in manner, but kind in word and deed. She always spoke with emphasis, and, says one of her old scholars, "When she read, she declaimed"— as, indeed, might have been expected from her early vocation. She was esteemed by her patrons as peculiarly successful in advancing her pupils in reading and elocution. After a residence of some ten or twelve years in Brooklyn, she died here, in October, 1823, aged 72 years, much regretted by her friends, and was interred in the burial ground of St. Patrick's Cathedral, New York city.

After her decease, the house was converted into a tavern, which became a favorite resort for the dissipated young men of the town, who there indulged in drinking, eating oysters, raffling for turkeys, geese, etc., their orgies being carried on with a freedom to which the retired character of the spot was peculiarly conducive. In *Furman's Manuscript Notes*, we find the following story, circumstantially told on the authority of an eye witness, Joseph Moser, which connects this house with the haunted house before referred to (*ante*, 154) as being near Cobbleskill fort. One night while a party of young roysterers were assembled at the tavern, having what is best described as a high old time, it was suddenly discovered that the supply of brandy had given out. As a new supply of the desired fluid could only be procured by going down to Brooklyn ferry for it, it immediately became an important question who would go for it; inasmuch as nearly all present shared an apprehension (which, however, they were not willing to own), about passing the haunted house alone at that time of night, it being past eleven o'clock. At length, a young man named Boerum, volunteered his services, boasting that *he* was not afraid of a ghost and (with forced hardihood) declaring even his desire to meet it. Mounting his horse, therefore, he started for the ferry, after the brandy. An hour elapsed, and, still another, but he returned not. His boon companions, becoming uneasy in consequence of his prolonged absence, finally resolved to go, all together, and seek him. Mounting, not in hot haste, however, they turned their horses' heads towards the village and on approaching the haunted ground, they found young Boerum's horse standing against the fence not far from the house, and, when they reached the spot itself, their companion was discovered lying senseless in the road, with features horribly distorted. He was taken back to the tavern, where he lingered for two or three days, in a speechless condition, and then died. That he had been no further than the spot where he was found was evident from the fact that the bottle was empty, and that he had not been seen or heard of that night by any one at the ferry, or in the village.

Beyond Mrs. Melmoth's, on the westerly side of Red Hook lane was a high and beautiful elevation, which sloped gently off to the river, and which was subsequently known as Prospect hill, or Hoyt's hill, from its owner Mr. Charles Hoyt, who first (about 1826), pushed streets through it, and brought it into the market. It is said that the first lithographic property maps, since so commonly used among real estate men, were made to illustrate this property. On the highest point of this elevation, Mr. James W. Moulton, the accomplished historian of our state, erected a very elegant residence of the Gothic style, which, upon his removal to Roslyn, L. I., was purchased and occupied by A. J. Spooner, Esq. The extension of Summit street, involved its destruction.

We continue along the Mill road, which made a bend (between Rapalje and Coles streets, on the line of Hicks), around to the residence and mill of Nicholas Luquer, the grandfather of the present Nicholas Luquer, Esq. The long, low, and cozy looking homestead was surrounded by trees, through whose branches a pleasant breeze seemed always to play. It fronted the mill-pond, wherein Mr. Luquer, a thin French looking man, raised oysters of extraordinary size and delicacy. His mill (called on Ratzer's map, the I. Seabring mill), was mostly employed in grinding grain for the use of Mr. Pierrepont's distillery at the foot of Joralemon's lane.[1] Returning to Luquer's mill, at corner of present Hicks and Huntington streets, we find the road turning to the corner of the present William and Columbia streets, crossing Bull creek (described in vol. I, 67–69, and also on Ratzer's map, vol. I, 63), Koeties kill, or Cow's creek (see same Map, D), and, by a bridge (same Map, B), the stream which divided Red Hook from the mainland.

Red Hook, which has been already pretty fully described in our first volume (pages 59 to 63), was, at the time of which we speak, in the possession of Matthias and Nicholas Van Dyke. The southern portion of the Hook was a high hill covered with locust, poplar, cedar, and sassafras trees. This hill was cut down, in 1835, by Messrs. Dikeman, Waring and Underhill, for the purpose of filling up the neighboring mill ponds, lower ground and drowned marsh. There were, on the island proper, only six buildings. On the extreme south-western point known as Powder House Point, was a brick powder house erected by Messrs. Jeromus Johnson, Charles J. Howell, and John Hoff (afterwards surveyor of the port of New York), who purchased from the Van Dycks, an acre of land for that purpose.[1] Johnson and his associates had formerly a powder house upon a little island, called Cornell's island, situated about five hundred yards north of Bull creek, but this had been washed away by the tide. On the northern end of the island, the dwelling of the Van Dyck brothers; on the east side, their two mills and a small house occupied by the miller. Matthias's mill was known as Ginger mill, from its being used solely in the grinding of that article; while Nicholas's was called the Flour, or Tide mill. The large adjoining mill pond extended to Boomties Hook, and was famous for its fine oysters.

---

[1] Between Luquer's residence and mill, and in about the line of the present Coles street, ran a road down to Jordon Coles's tide mills. Coles's mill pond like that of Luquer was constructed artificially. The only house on this road was a small one occupied by a fisherman, named Ham Bennet; and across the road near Coles's house was a gate, which prevented cattle from straying on to Red Hook.

The brothers Van Dyke, always lived together in the same house — Nicholas being a bachelor. Matthias died first, and his heirs brought a partition suit in chancery. His estate was sold in 1834, under decree of the court of chancery, to parties who organized the Red Hook Building Company, having for its object the sale of the lands, and the issuing of stocks, at one dollar per share, redeemable at a half per cent discount in Wall street. The undertaking, however, was a purely speculative one, proved too heavy for those who had undertaken it; and, in 1835, it was taken hold of by Messrs. Voorhees, Stranahan & Co., who organized the well known Atlantic Dock Company, and erected thereon the extensive warehouses and stores known as the Atlantic Docks.

---

[1] This was a small brick building, fifteen by twenty feet, with no windows, and on a little wharf. At the great fire of New York, in 1835, which was intensely cold weather, the supply of water gave out, and hope almost died in the hearts of those who saw the rapid progress of the flames. It was finally determined to make an effort to arrest the spread of the fire, by blowing up several buildings. Charles King (then editor of the *New York American,* and since president of Columbia College), came over to the Navy Yard, by request of the mayor, to procure powder. He was informed by the commandant that there was not a sufficient quantity for that purpose, in the yard; and, being furnished by that officer with a written order, and an open boat, manned by marines, he went down to the Red Hook Point powder house in this intensely cold weather, procured the powder and reached the city with it. There it was carried by the marines under their overcoats (in twenty-five pound kegs), placed in cellars, and by the blowing up of a few houses, the fire was stayed.

Along the western side of the Hook, at low water, was a large flat, extending up to Pierrepont's distillery at the foot of Joralemon's lane. Passing northward, along the shore of the East river, we come to the following farms, all lying between the river and Red Hook lane, viz:

I. *Cornell's*, previously alluded to in passing down Red Hook lane, which formed its easterly boundary. Cornell's mill, mill-pond, family, etc., have been described in our first volume.[1]

II. *Parmenus Johnson's estate*, lying between the river and the lane, and extending from Baltic nearly to Congress street. Mr. Johnson, who is still living, came from Oyster bay, L. I., about 1818, and purchased sixteen acres of the old Rynier Suydam farm, to which he added forty or more acres by filling in and docking out upon his water front. He married a daughter of old Judge Joralemon and has become, by the imprecedented rise of real estate, one of our wealthiest citizens. The old Rynier Suydam house, a venerable Dutch edifice, stood on the site of Mr. Johnson's present residence, on the corner of Hicks and West Baltic streets, surrounded with pear trees a century old, and the water at that time, came up as high as the present line of Henry street.

III. The estate of *Cornelius Heeney*, of whom we shall have more to say in another part of our volume.[2]

IV. *Ralph Patchen's* farm, extending from Congress to District (now Atlantic) street. He was one of the old Fly Market butchers, of whom there seems to have been so many in Brooklyn; purchased the distillery of Isaac Cornell, and the land of William Cornell (vol. I, p. 307), entered into the distilling business, and became very wealthy. He was an honest man, but rough in conversation, and at times very severe and personal; he, however, had the confidence of his fellow citizens who several times placed him in public office. The large dock near his distillery, was long known as *Patchen's dock:* and his residence was on the line of the present Hicks street, a few doors south of Atlantic.

---

[1] Page 307. [2] In connection with the Roman Catholic benevolent institutions.

V. The *Joralemon estate*, extending from the East river to the lane and from about 100 feet north of present State street to Joralemon's lane. This was purchased in 1803, by Tunis Joralemon from the executors of Philip Livingston, Esq. Its history, as the Livingston estate, has already been given on pages 70, 304, and 306, of our first volume, and on page 146 of the present volume.

TUNIS JORALEMON, a native of New Jersey, was born in September, 1760, and was, for a while, a harness and saddle maker near Flatbush. After his purchase of the Livingston estate, he devoted his attention to his garden; sold milk and vegetables in the New York market, and was a prominent man in the Dutch church. He was, at one time, justice of the peace, and a trustee of the village in 1817,' 18,' 19,' 20,' 21. In person he was tall, slim and slightly bent; his austere features strongly resembling the portraits of Dante, the great Italian poet;[1] and his manner was energetic and determined. He was most obstinately opposed to having streets opened through his farm. In 1826, Mr. Charles Hoyt forced Henry street through it, which was the commencement of the spread of land speculation in Brooklyn.[2] A little afterwards, Mr. Pierrepont, who had laid out a street through his own estate called Clinton street, (because it was projected at the time that that celebrated statesmen succeeded in carrying out his great project of the canal) endeavored to force it through Joralemon's land, by action of the village trustees. Mr. Joralemon opposed it bitterly, mainly because he disliked Clinton and his *big ditch*, and did not wish a street named after him.[3] He died in 1840, leaving behind him the name of an honest man, and a property which, at the time, was estimated as worth from six to seven hundred thousand dollars. In 1841, the old Livingston mansion, which he had so long occupied, was destroyed by fire. Two mayors of Brooklyn, the Hon. Samuel Smith and Hon. T. G. Talmadge, married daughters of Mr. Joralemon.

---

[1] He was indeed of Italian descent.

[2] Hoyt, however, did not effect this until he was aided by the influence of George Wood, Esq., a fellow Jerseyman with Joralemon. Hoyt and Wood paid for the land occupied by the street.

[3] Clinton was finally cut through Joralemon's land, in 1834, by commissioners.

Livingston street, and, also, *Sidney Place*, were laid out on the old map of 1801,[1] by which the Livingston farm was sold — but no names were then affixed, they being simply called new roads.

Along the river front of Joralemon's property lay what was called the Fishing place, it having been, from time immemorial, a favorite resort of the towns-people to draw their nets for fish; and it is said that Mr. Livingston, the former owner of the Joralemon estate, was accustomed to grant a privilege to fish at this place, at a stipulated price per day.

WALK THE FIFTH, *along the Brooklyn and Flatbush Turnpike* (*Fulton and Flatbush avenues*), *to the town line; along the Brooklyn and Jamaica Turnpike* (*Fulton avenue*), *to Bedford Corners; and, down the Fort Greene road to the Wallabout.*

We must now retrace our steps a little, to the point where we left off our (first) tour on the Old Ferry road, viz: at the junction of the present Fulton street, Myrtle avenue and Washington street. Myrtle *avenue* had not then been opened, although its germ existed in a little street called *Myrtle street*, which extended only a short distance eastwardly from the main road. A little way from this Myrtle street, on the north side of the road, and elevated several feet above its level, on the site of the present Halsey buildings, was Nicholas Rouse's grocery store and garden. Nicholas was a German, who had been for many years a resident of the village and was much respected. His whole yard was covered by a fine grapevine, which bore abundantly, and the citizens of Brooklyn were wont, during the warm summer months, to resort there in great numbers to partake of his excellent mead and cakes; while, in autumn they sought the grateful shades of his arbor, to enjoy the delicious grapes and the fine prospect, there being, at that time, no houses between his place and the Wallabout. After Brooklyn began to improve and new streets

---

[1] A map of the seat of the late Philip Livingston, Esq., on Brooklyn Heights, on Long Island. Surveyed and laid out into twenty-four lots, by Charles Loss, city surveyor, New York, Nov. 2d, 1801.

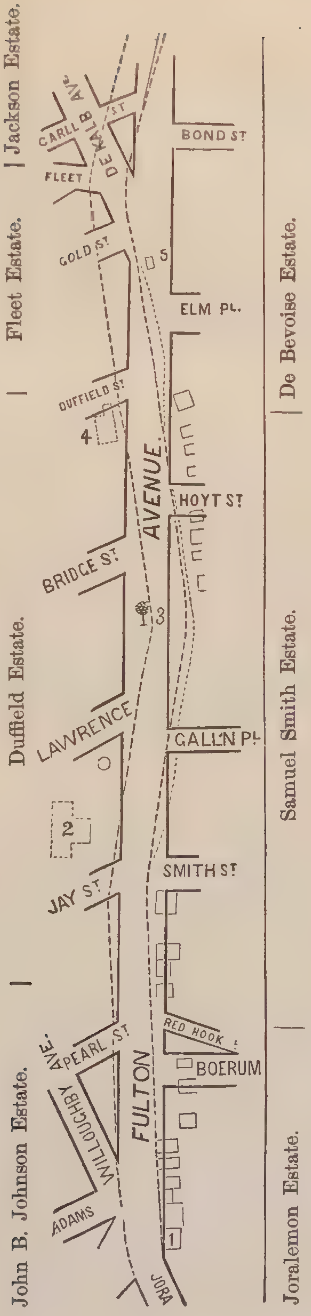
MAP C,

Showing (by dotted lines) the course of the old Brooklyn and Jamaica Turnpike, between the present City Hall and Bond street.

REFERENCES.

1. The Military Garden.
2. The Willoughby Mansion.
3. Site of the Old Dutch Church. (Vol. I, p. 193).
4. The Duffield House. (See picture of Brooklyn Church, opposite page 193, vol. I).
5. The Duffield family burial-place.

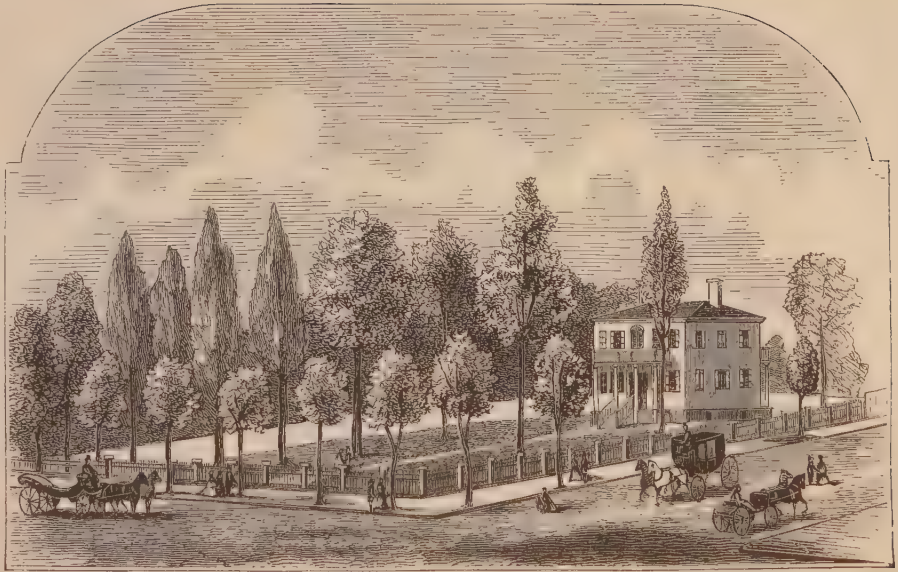
N.B. The squares, in light lines, indicate the sites of old houses removed by the opening of the present Fulton Avenue.



were opened and old ones repaved, it disturbed Mynheer Rouse so that he removed to New York, where he settled a short distance beyond the junction of Broadway and the Bowery and built up a good trade and fortune, but ultimately fled higher up in the city, before the steady advance of brick and mortar.

Beyond Rouse's, near the point of the present Willoughby street, stood the large and pleasantly willow-shaded residence of Mr. Nathaniel Howland, father of George S. Howland. On the point, now occupied by Jones's Building, where the L. I. Savings Bank is located, stood Ralph Malbone's grocery. Immediately adjoining this was Howland's rope walk, extending along the northerly line of the Duffield estate, from Fulton to near Bridge street. From this point, the *Duffield estate* extended along the northerly side of the turnpike to about the present junction of Duffield street with Fulton avenue. This estate, like the Johnson property, which we have already described, was of a triangular shape, its apex resting on the site of the present City park.

The old Duffield house stood near the westerly corner of the present Duffield street as it enters Fulton avenue, and its portrait is well preserved in the view of the old Brooklyn church, in our first volume. During the Revolutionary war it was occupied by the British, and bore upon its door posts the broad-arrow mark which indicated appropriation to army uses. Its owner, at that time, was Mr. Johannes DeBevoise, who received it as a wedding day gift from his father. He was clerk of the town; and, for many years also, of the old Dutch church which stood near by; and his residence very naturally became the Domine's house, where the ministers were always expected to stay for rest and refreshment between church services on the sabbath; for receiving applications for baptism, membership, etc.; for meeting the consistory, church masters and others, and for attending generally to their official duties whenever they visited Brooklyn. Mr. De Bevoise's wife is said to have burned in her oven a large quantity of the old church papers and documents; alleging, with housewifely hatred of such lumbering trash, that old papers always made so much trouble. Margaret De Bevoise, the daughter of the worthy town clerk Johannes, married Dr. John Duffield, an American army



THE FLEET MANSION, FULTON AVENUE, CORNER OF GOLD STREET.

The recent erection of a row of iron and stone buildings and stores on Fulton Avenue, erected by the Fleet family, has deprived this fine old-fashioned homestead of the beautiful lawn and trees which have so long formed a most attractive feature of Brooklyn's principal thoroughfare.

The name of FLEET seems to have been a slight change from that of the ancestor of the family, Admiral *Fleetwood*, who came (during the emigration which followed the troubles between Charles I and his parliament) to what is now Northport, near Huntington, L. I. Here he purchased a large tract of land, since known as Fleet's Hold; and from thence, in 1819, his descendant, Samuel Fleet, came to Brooklyn, where he purchased two farms, on one of which this old mansion still stands (Oct., 1869).

surgeon, and was the mother of *Susan* who married Capt. Charles K. Lawrence; *Anna*, who married Capt. Christopher Prince and had a daughter who married Judge William Rockwell; and *Margaret*, who married (1) Capt. Archibald Thompson, and (2) Samuel A. Willoughby, of Brooklyn. Old Mrs. Duffield (as related Ref. 12, Ratzer's Map p. 63, first vol.) strenuously resisted the opening of Duffield street, through her property; and the venerable mansion itself, after being rudely jostled and crowded by modern buildings, was finally destroyed by fire on the 14th of April, 1857.

The private burying ground of the Duffield family formerly stood upon the southerly side of the road, a little westward of the present Gold street.[1] When the road was straightened into the present Fulton avenue, the little burial place found itself in the very centre of the avenue, and was blotted out of existence.

From the corner of the present Duffield street to the junction of present Fulton and De Kalb avenues, the Samuel Fleet estate fronted on the turnpike, stretching back to the site of the present City park.

Samuel Fleet was a farmer, and a descendant of an old English family. His ancestor Thomas Fleet, a captain in the British navy, came to America about 1650, and purchased an extensive tract of land near Huntington, Long Island, upon which he settled. Samuel Fleet made a snug property during the war of 1812, when grain and produce were very high, and by the purchase of this farm and other property in Brooklyn became a very wealthy man.

A little above the present junction of De Kalb and Fulton avenues was the Black Horse tavern, kept, for many years, by Isaac De Voe, and afterwards owned by Robert De Bevoise. Beyond it, on the same side of the road, was the house occupied by Mr. De Bevoise, and built by his son-in-law Samuel Van Bueren, now kept as a liquor saloon under the name of the Abbey. Just this side (No. 159 Fulton avenue) stood the old sycamore tree which marked the place where the earth-work line of defense crossed the turnpike, in the Revolutionary war, and, also, in the war of 1812.

---

[1] About in front of Morton's Scotch bakery, (Map c, figure 5).

In one of two small dwellings in this neighborhood resided the eccentric Rain Water Doctor, whom we have described on page 393 of our first volume.

Beyond, and on the corner of a road which ran east to Fort Greene, stood another tavern kept by Charles Poling, who was connected with the horse-artillery of the county, the members of which generally assembled here before parade, etc. Opposite the tavern, which faced on this side road, was a hay scales, bearing, in a niche, high upon its front, an excellent profile, on an oval, designed for, and understood, during the Revolution, to be that of King George III. When peace was again restored, however, it was found to be expedient, in order to save it from harm, to inscribe upon it the name of Franklin, and it ever after passed for a *bona-fide* representation of that distinguished American.[1]

The road before mentioned as passing eastward, past Poling's tavern, led to a house on Fort Greene, occupied by a milkman named George McCloskey, who was the father of the present Roman Catholic archbishop of New York. The future archbishop, we have been told, was born in mid-winter, when the ground was covered with deep snow and the bay filled with ice. His mother, being taken seriously ill after her confinement, was unable to nurse him, when Mrs. Hezekiah B. Pierrepont, whose son Henry E., was an infant of nearly the same age, sympathizing with the helpless condition of the mother and the danger of the child, went herself and nursed the infant until the mother was able to do so. The boy throve, commenced the study of law under Joseph W. Smith, Esq., of New York, but finally, quit and entered the ministry, to the great delight of his worthy father, who could, however, hardly have anticipated the eminence to which his son was ultimately to attain.

From McCloskey's house the road run northwardly until it entered the Newtown turnpike, near the easterly termination of the Wallabout bridge, about at the junction of present Flushing and Portland avenues, where a toll-gate controlled the travel over both roads. A little south of the easterly end of the bridge was a mill; and, over the Wallabout Flats was a windmill, in which an Englishman named Stockhouse committed suicide by blowing out his brains, shortly after which occurrence the mill was taken down or destroyed. Proceeding along the Newtown turnpike, on the south side was the dwelling of William Cornell (son of old Whitehead Cornell) who owned a valuable farm lying east of the toll-bridge, and which included a part of Fort Greene. He was a very jovial man, fond of good company, and was the agent of Dupont, the famous gunpowder manufacturer, for the sale of his powder in New York. When Fort Greene was constructed on Cornell's farm during the war of 1812, the government erected two powder-houses on the hill, which Cornell subsequently used for the storage of Dupont's powder. For several years powder was transported from these powder houses to New York, in open wagons, merely covered over with blankets or carpets. After the incorporation of the village, however, in 1816, the public attention began to be called to the great danger attached to this way of doing things, and finally the authorities broke up the practice. Beyond Uncle Billy's house, on both sides of the Newtown turnpike, to the town line between Brooklyn and Bushwick, there were only some ten houses, occupied by farmers, milkmen and gardeners.

---

[1] A similar case of trimming to suit the political changes of the day, was that of the sign of the King's Arms, displayed in front of the old tavern at Flatbush, kept by Mrs. Schoonmaker. After the peace, an effigy of the *American eagle* was added and represented *as flying away with the King's Arms!* It is needless to add that the old sign held its own, undisturbed, for many years after.

Returning to Poling's tavern, on the Jamaica turnpike we pass three or four small dwellings and a carriage shop, before coming to the estate of John Jackson, extending along the easterly side of the turnpike, from a point opposite the junction of Livingston street and present Flatbush avenue, to the southerly side of Hanson place. His residence was located on the north-east corner of the present Navy street and Lafayette avenue, while back on the line of Raymond street and Lafayette avenue were his barns, stables and gardens. We may here add to our previous sketch of John Jackson (vol. I, 363) that he displayed much taste in horticulture and had an extensive greenhouse.

Having now arrived near the old toll house, which stood at the southerly line of John Jackson's estate, we will retrace our steps to Red Hook lane, and briefly describe the *southerly* side of the turnpike from Red Hook lane to the toll-gate.

Before coming to the entrance of Red Hook lane, we see first a two-story frame house, still standing, a little back from the street, at the corner of Boerum and Fulton streets, and occupied at the time of which we speak by Christopher Codwise. It was built by Dr. Benjamin Lowe, brother of the Rev. Peter Lowe and a highly respected physician, who died in January, 1810, and was interred at Flatbush. Beyond this was the residence of Tunis Johnson; then the graveyard belonging to the Dutch church; then, with a considerable intervening space, an old frame house, shaded in front by two enormous black walnut trees, and occupied by one Voorhis, who kept a carriage and blacksmith shop nearly adjoining his residence. Then, opposite the Jackson estate, the residence of George Powers, who purchased this farm from Michael Grant Bergen, who emigrated to Nova Scotia, with many other loyalists shortly after the close of the revolutionary war.[1]

George Powers, Senior, says *De Voe*, is another name which demands from history, at least a line of record. Although tradition says, he was a Hessian soldier during the Revolution, an examination of the subject has convinced me, that he was not one of those hirelings; but, on the other hand, he was among those who suffered much for their love of country. We find him before the Revolution, a butcher in the old Fly Market, from which, in 1774, he advertised a run-away. On the breaking out of the Revolution, he took sides with the Sons of Liberty, and joined a company called the Brooklyn Troop of Horse, under Capt. Adolph Waldron, who was an inn-holder, at Brooklyn Ferry. The services of this company have been previously described, but when they were ordered off Long Island, Powers and several others crossed the sound, from Huntington to Norwalk, leaving their horses behind, which were lost to them; and we find those men in Dutchess county, in October, 1776, in destitute circumstances; when they received their pay from the convention. In 1782, before the termination of the war, although it was known to be near, Powers returned to Brooklyn, where he again commenced business, as we find, on the twelfth of October, of that year, the following: "Ran away from George Powers, butcher at Brooklyn Ferry, a young negro fellow named Cato, for which he offers two guineas reward." Early in 1784, he also gave notice, that all persons indebted to George Powers, Sen., of Brooklyn Ferry, are desired to pay their respective debts to no person but himself, likewise not to trust any person on his account.

---

[1] See *Bergen Genealogy*, pp. 43, 106. This old house was built and occupied by Michael Bergen, and was located on the patent of land granted originally to Albert Cornellissen Wantenear. (See Fig. 7, Ratzer's Map, vol. I, page 62). The land was subsequently acquired by Michael Bergen, and at a later date became a part of the George Powers estate; it was rebuilt at the time of the Revolution by Michael Grant, a grandson of Michael Bergen, and was torn down within a few years. There is quite a romantic incident connected with the history of this edifice. Grant, by whom it was rebuilt, was a suitor (so runs the legend), for the hand of a Miss Cowenhoven, of Bedford, with a fair prospect of his suit reaching a favorable consummation. In anticipation of the completion of his happiness, he built the house with all suitable conveniences, to gratify the taste and promote the comfort of its future mistress. But his cup of bliss was rudely dashed from his lips, for the fair one, with the proverbial fickleness of her sex, rejected the ardent swain, and in a fit of bitter disappointment he sold the mansion and transferred himself to Nova Scotia, where he ultimately settled down in life, and where his descendants now reside. There is no doubt whatever of the authenticity of the story.

Powers's early return gave him many advantages. First: in establishing a profitable business before the British troops left the country; then, there were offered many opportunities for investing a small amount of money in various ways, as in teams of horses and cattle, wagons, etc., which the retreating British troops could not carry away with them. These investments, after a few years, returned large profits. His gains were laid out principally in landed property in the town, which afterwards became very valuable.

Just beyond Powers's was the old toll-gate before mentioned, which stood a little south of the present Hanson place, and about seventy-five feet west of St. Felix street. Some one hundred and fifty yards to the southward of the toll-gate, stood the old John Cowenhoven house, a large heavy building of the Dutch type, with humpbacked roof, shaded by enormous willows and fronting south. Its location may be described as being on the west side of Fort Greene Place, about one hundred and sixty feet north of Atlantic avenue, and with its gable on the Flatbush turnpike; it was pulled down only a few years since.

About two hundred feet south of the Cowenhoven house stood Baker's tavern, associated with the battle of Brooklyn, as being the point, at which the long flanking march of the British army, finally ended on that eventful day.[1] A fine view of this building, more lately known as the old Bull's Head tavern, will be found in the *Brooklyn Corporation Manual, for* 1867.

From the southerly side of the Flatbush turnpike, beyond the toll-gate, a road branched off, at about the present junction of Flatbush and Fifth avenues, to Gowanus. This road we shall describe in a subsequent portion of this chapter. The Flatbush turnpike swept along, through fields and woods, up to the top of Flatbush hill, through what is now Prospect Park, and down the hill to a building in the hollow known as the Valley Grove tavern — near the boundary line between Flatbush and Brooklyn.[2] At this point (about the corner of present Eleventh avenue and First street, as laid out on city maps, before Prospect Park was designed), it met a road running westward (nearly in line of the present First street), to a point in the middle of block now bounded by Fourth and Fifth avenues, and Macomb and First streets), where it met the Gowanus road, just mentioned, as well as the road to Denton's and Freeke's mills. This, known as the old *Port road*,[3] from a very early period, and memorably connected with the history of the battle of Long Island, was also familiarly known, by latter generations, as the *Shunpike* road, for, by traveling this route to Red Hook lane, the inhabitants of Flatbush, and others going to and from Brooklyn, avoided the toll-gate upon the Flatbush turnpike.

---

[1] See note to page 266, of first volume.

[2] The Valley Grove tavern, more recently known as *Hicks Post Tavern* has passed away before the improvements of the Prospect Park commissioners, a small tree being all that is left to mark its site, near Battle hill. For view of Battle hill, and Valley grove (now the Battle Pass of the park) as they appeared at the beginning of the century, and for some time after, see illustration opposite page 261 of first volume, also notes 2 and 3, of same page.

[3] Note, page 159, vol. I.

VALLEY GROVE, OR, BATTLE PASS, IN 1866.

On the Flatbush turnpike, between the old toll-gate and the Flatbush and Brooklyn boundary line, the only buildings were the Valley Grove tavern, above mentioned; another about five hundred yards to the westward, called the Farmer's Resort and Citizen's Retreat; a small building in the woods on the top of the hill, a small house about half-way down the (Brooklyn) side of the hill, and another near the junction of the Flatbush and Jamaica roads, now Elliott Place, and Atlantic avenue. These were all on the easterly side of the road. Of that portion of the road, which passed through what is now Prospect park, it may be said that it was then almost uninhabitable on account of the agues, fall fevers, and other malarious diseases arising from the several stagnant ponds, hidden among the thick woods, which covered this locality.

Retracing our steps, therefore, to the junction of the Flatbush and Jamaica roads (present Atlantic avenue and Elliott place), we pause a moment, before following our route along the latter, to view the extensive horticultural garden of Mr. Andre Parmentier.

Andre Parmentier, born at Engheim, department of Jemmapes, province of Hainault, in Belgium, July 3d, 1780, was of a highly respectable family, and enjoyed the advantages of a liberal education. His relative, Anthony Parmentier, was the individual that introduced the potato in France. Pecuniary losses induced Mr. Parmentier, who was a merchant, to come to this country, in 1824. Stopping a while in New York city, he was finally induced by his passion for botanical pursuits, to devote himself to gardening on a scale heretofore almost unknown in this section. Refusing the superintendence of the once famous Botanical Garden of New York, which was urgently pressed upon him by Dr. Hosack and others, he selected and purchased in Brooklyn, this tract of twenty-five acres, lying between the Jamaica and Flatbush roads, on the 4th of October, 1825, for the sum of $4,000. Although beautifully and advantageously located, the surface of these grounds was a bed of rocks, some of which were used in enclosing the garden with a wall. In a brief time, Mr. Parmentier erected a dwelling and garden house, and stocked the land with a great variety of trees and plants, useful and ornamental, indigenous and exotic. The garden soon grew into importance and developed beauties, which attracted large numbers of visitors, from all quarters.

In this garden the *Morus Multicaulis* plant was first introduced into America by Mr. Parmentier, whose enthusiastic devotion to floral pursuits promised brilliantly for his own interests, as well as for the public benefit. But, to the great regret of all who knew him, and who sympathized with his hopes and aspirations, he was cut off by death, on the 27th of November, 1830, after a brief illness. His estimable widow, who is still living in this city, strove hard to continue the business; but failing in her endeavors, in consequence of the death of her only son, was finally obliged to dispose of the trees and plants, and the grounds, once occupied by their attractive garden, were cut up into building lots and streets. Mr. Parmentier, we may add, was of a buoyant, active temperament, eminently kindly and social in his disposition, finding his chiefest pleasures in the home circle and in the prosecution of his floral pursuits. He was, also, an excellent musician, and possessed artistic powers of no mean quality, as displayed in many sketches and drawings made by him, and which we have had the pleasure of seeing, in the possession of his family.

Following the old Jamaica turnpike, as it ran through fields, farms and woods, we come, at length to Bedford corners, described by plate and map, etc., pages 158, 266, and 267, of our first volume.[1] It was, as will be seen from the view presented in that volume, a simple, forest-environed cluster of ancient, low-browed Dutch houses, presenting a scene of quiet beauty which has but lately, and reluctantly, yielded its charms to the rude embrace of brick and mortar, gas lights and street cars. Bedford corners was especially the seat of the Lefferts family,[2] the principal member of which, sixty years ago, was

---

[1] In an interlined copy of *Furman's Notes on Brooklyn*, which formerly belonged to that author, we find the following note, in his handwriting: "The first act passed under the English government for dividing the colony was November 1, 1683. By this act, Kings county was declared to contain the several towns of Boshwyck, *Bedford*, Brooklyn, Flatbush, Flatlands, New Utrecht and Gravesend, with the several settlements and plantations adjacent.

Bedford, named as a separate town in 1683, does not seem to have retained its individual existence for any considerable period."

[2] LEFFERT PIETERSE (*Van Hagewout*) came to New Netherland, from Holland, in 1660 (*Doc. Hist.*, I, 659). The family surname was originally pronounced *Laffert* There is a Brunswick family surnamed *Von Laffert*, and there is a town of *Le Ferde* in the same principality; but there is no trace of any connection between these and the Holland immigrants. *Leffert, Laffert*, or *Lefford*, signifies loaf or bread giver,

Leffert Lefferts, Esq., or Judge Lefferts, as he was usually called, who resided in the old Lefferts house on the south-west corner of the cross roads. He was the fifth child of Squire Leffert Lefferts and Dorothy, daughter of John Cowenhoven, and was born April 12th, 1774. He was,

---

which is also the root of the English word *Lord*. *Pieterse* means son of Peter. *Hagewout*, or Hedgewood, was probably the name of some hamlet in Holland where the family had been settled. Pieterse probably had relatives, for there was a Leffert Stephense Hagewowt, who settled in Hempstead at an early date, whose descendants bore the surname of Lefferts. The final *s* meant again, son of Leffert, and has now become a part of the name. But little is known concerning Pieterse except that he owned seventeen morgens of land in Flatbush, in 1675, at the time of his marriage, and that he resided thereon (*Doc. Hist.*, II, 504; IV, 153). He was a constable in 1692 (*Road Rec.*, I). He married Abigail, daughter of Auke (Augustus) Janse Van Nuyse (by his second wife Eva Janse), who emigrated about 1651 (*Doc. Hist.*, III, 136; *Bergen Geneal.*, 109, 158). He died December 8, 1704. His wife Abigail (born about 1654), died July 19, 1748. *Children:* Aeltie, b. June 2, 1676; d. unm., July 15, 1735; Auke, b. April 4, 1678, m. (1) May 29, 1703, Marytie Ten Eyck, (2) July 30, 1735, Catharine Vauk; Peter, b. May, 18, 1680, d. March 13, 1774; m. about 1731, Ida (daughter of Hendrik) Suydam; had daughter Ida, b. Sept., 15, 1751, who became 2d wife of Rem Cowenhoven, June 18, 1773, and died Dec. 2, 1777, leaving a daughter Sarah, b. January 28, 1775, who m. John Lefferts of Bedford; Rachel, b. January 17, 1682, d. before 1698 (?); Jan, b. January 14, 1684, m. Margrieta ———; Jacobus^1, b. June 3, 1686; Isaac, b. May 15, 1688, d. Oct., 18, 1746, m. Harmpje ————, had 4 children (*Bergen Geneal.*, 109, 110, 133); Abraham, b. Sept. 1, 1692, m. Sarah ————, lived in N. Y. (*Valentine's Manual*, 1865, p. 747); Magdalena, b. August 20, 1694, m. Garret Martense of Flatbush (*Bergen Geneal.*, 123); Ann, b. March 1, 1696, m. May 7, 1748, to Gerrit Kowenhoven (?) (*Annals Newtown*, 364; *Bergen Geneal.*, 147); Abigail, b. August 24, 1698, d. Nov. 17, 1704; Leffert, b. May 22, 1701, m. Catryntie Dorland, Nov. 15, 1724, d. Sept. 27, 1774; Benjamin, b. May 2, 1704, d. Nov. 17, 1707.

Jacobus^1, the only one of the family who settled in Brooklyn, located at Bedford corners, living in a house on the south-west corner of the Jamaica and Clove roads, on a small tract to which he added by purchase; and owned, also, farms near at hand. He married, Oct. 7, 1716, Jannetie (daughter of Barent) Blom, who was born January 18, 1694. He died Sept. 21, 1754, and his wife afterwards married Peter Luyster. *Children:* Nicholas, b. April 6, 1718, m. April 26, 1746, Abigail ———, who d. Nov. 25, 1760. He died May 13, 1780. They had two daughters, Jannetie, b. Sept. 13, 1747, m. Nov. 1766, Jacob Sebring, and d. April 19, 1772, leaving children, Catryna, b. July 9, 1751, d. Sept. 18, 1754. Leffert^2, b. March 14, 1727; Jacobus, b. Nov. 26, 1731; m. (1) 1756, Mary Vanderhuyl (?) (*N. Y. Marriages*, 229), (2) 1772, Lucretia (daughter of Joris) Brinckerhoff. He was a prominent merchant in New York, and d. July 20, 1792, leaving children; Barent, b. Nov. 12, 1736, m. 1757, Phebe or Femmetje (2d child of Rem) Remsen (*N. Y. Marriages*, 229, *Annals Newtown*, 392.) He lived at Bedford corners, on north-east corner, Jamaica and Cripplebush roads on his therefore, nine years old at the close of the Revolutionary war, and often, in after life, narrated incidents connected with the occupation of his father's house, by the officers of the troops encamped at Bedford. General Grey resided there for some years, and Judge Lefferts said that Major Andre

---

father-in-law's property and owned much land in the neighborhood. He d. June 21, 1819, had son Rem who m. (1) ——— Remsen of New Lotts, (2) Maria (daughter of Adolphus) Brower of Gowanus, and son Jacobus, who d. unmarried; ABIGAIL, m. Lambert (son of Hendrik) Suydam of Bedford. He was captain of a troop of horse in 1749, died in 1767, and his widow m. Nicholas Vechte, in 1772. He had 2 sons and 3 daughters (See *Annals Newtown*, 323), Hendrik d. at Bedford, unm., Dec. 26, 1789; Bermetie, d. single, aged 90, Feb. 1, 1826; Jane, m. Gilliam Cornell (of Bucks Co., Pa.); Ida, m. Martin Schenck; Jacobus, b. Dec. 4, 1758, m. Adriana (daughter of Cornelius) Rapelje, who d. June 11, 1825, leaving many children; AELTJE, m. Jacob Vanderbilt; ELIZA, m. Hendrik Fine of Bedford, left issue; JANNETIE, b. Jan. 21, 1729, m. (1) Jeronimus Rapalje, b. Feb. 22, 1723, d. March 13, 1795, left a daughter Jannetie; (2) Sophia Thorne, descendants in St. Johns, N. B.

LEFFERT², m. Dorothy (daughter of John) Cowenhoven, August 5, 1756. She was b. Feb. 8, 1738, and d. August 17, 1816. He held several county offices, and as county clerk had charge of the county and town records which were taken from his house a few days after the battle of Long Island, during his absence, by his clerk John Rapalje. His house was occupied as headquarters, by the British general, Gray, during the occupation of Brooklyn, 1776–1783. He d. July 10, 1804. *Children :* JACOBUS, b. August 9, 1757; m. August 7, 1780, Maria (daughter of Johannes) Lott, of New Utrecht; d. Sept. 4, 1799. JOHN, m. (1) Catharine (daughter of Robert) Bensen, of New York, by whom he had 3 children (2) Maria Kissam, no issue; LEFFERT, m. Cynthia (daughter of Peter) Lefferts of Flatbush, had Maria and Phebe, who m. successively Jeromus, son of Gen. Jeremiah Johnson, of the Wallabout; James and John, single; MARIA, m. John (Son of Peter) Lefferts of Flatbush, had John who m. Eliza (daughter of Col. James) Lefferts, and had several children, and Gertrude who m. Hon. John Vanderbilt of Flatbush, and has a son; CATRYNA, b. July 30, 1759, d. single, April 17, 1783, killed by the accidental discharge of a pistol which she was placing on the top of a closet out of the way of the children (*Onderdonk's Rev. Incidents of Kings Co.*); JOHN³, b. May 24, 1763, lived in Bedford; JANE, b. Dec. 28, 1767, d. Sept. 27, 1776; LEFFERT, b. April 12, 1774, m. April 21, 1823, Maria (daughter of Robert) Benson of New York. (For biography see above). Had one child Elizabeth D., who m. J. C. Brevoort, Esq., son of Henry Brevoort, of New York, and has one son, lives on the old place.

JOHN³, m. Sarah, (only child of Maj. Rem) Cowenhoven, by his second wife, Ida Lefferts, b. June 8, 1775, d. April 1, 1856. Lived at Bedford. *Children,* LEFFERT, b. 1791, m. a daughter of Judge Kissam of New York, had issue; CATHARINE, b. 1797, m. John Laidlaw, had issue; NICHOLAS, b. 1799, m. Maria ———, had issue; JAMES, b. 1800, m. Eliza Jones of Newtown, had issue; JOHN, b. 1804, m., but no descendants; SARAH, b. 1805, m. A. O. Millard, has 2 sons; REM, b. 1807, m., no issue; CORNELIA, b. 1811, m. Robert B. Lefferts, son of John, of New Utrecht, no issue.

was also a resident for some time, and that the letter from Gen. Howe, calling him to New York, to undertake the fatal expedition to West Point, found him at this house. He, also, remembered a conversation between two young ladies of the family, in Dutch, which they supposed Andre could not understand, when he interrupted them by speaking in the same language, cautioning them against talking gossip about their guests. When peace was declared, and the officers were packing up to leave, the judge, then nine years old, and who had been much petted and noticed by them, asked why they left. "Because you Yankees have beaten us." "Then fight it over again," said the young loyalist. He was graduated, May 7, 1794, at Columbia College, resided in New York during the period of his studies, in the family of an aunt, who had married Robert Benson, the brother of Judge Egbert Benson, and for many years the clerk of the city. In January, 1798, Mr. Lefferts was admitted attorney in the court of common pleas and in the supreme court, having pursued his legal studies in the office of Judge Egbert Benson. On the 5th of April, 1800, he was appointed county clerk, an office which his father had also held. At this period, the clerk kept the records at his own residence, and the office was on the upper floor in the west room of the old house, on the south-west corner of the Bedford cross roads. In 1805, he was appointed a commissioner in chancery; and, on Feb. 10th, 1823, first judge of Kings county, succeeding Judge William Furman, which office he held for a few years only. Judge Lefferts was always much interested in politics, but never sought any office besides those above mentioned. He was ever anxious to promote all that tended to increase the prosperity of Brooklyn; and, in 1822, was the leader of a project to obtain a bank charter. The Long Island Bank, the first in Brooklyn, was incorporated in 1824, and he was elected its president. He remained at the head of the institution until 1846, when his increasing infirmities constrained him to resign the position and responsibilities, which he had so long held, with honor to himself, and with the approval of all with whom his official duties brought him in contact. His uprightness, kind nature and pleasant gentlemanly manners, are well remembered by all who knew him, and rendered him the representative man of the best Dutch society in Brooklyn, at that day. He died March, 22, 1847.

Walk the Sixth, *down the old Gowanus road to the Denton and Freecke mill-ponds, and thence along the Bay shore to the New Utrecht town line.*

Leaving the Flatbush turnpike, just above the toll-gate, we take the road to Gowanus (established in 1704),[1] which ran southerly in the same general direction as the present Fifth avenue until it reached the vicinity of the present Fifth street, where it deflected south-westerly towards the present junction of Middle street with Third avenue, thence following the line of that avenue along the shore. The first house, at which we arrive, was a low one-story building on the westerly side of the road in the vicinity of the present Dean and Bergen streets. It stood on the low ground, at some distance from the road; and, together with the farm attached, was the property of *Thomas Poole*, who had purchased it from Thomas Baisley. At the period of which we write, it was occupied by Van Houten, a milkman.

---

[1] On March 28th, 1704, the commissioners also laid out a road and landing place at, or near, the mill subsequently known as Denton's mill, of which there is the following record: "One common highway to Gowanus mill, to begin from the north east corner of Leffert Peterse's fence, and so along the road westerly, as it is now in use, to the lane y^t parts the lands of Hendrick Vechte, and Abraham Brower and Nicholas Brower, and soe all along said lane as it is now in fence to the house of Jurian Collier, and from thence along the roade now in use to the said Gowanus mill, being in all four rod wide to the said lane; and that there be a convenient landing place for all persons whatsoever, to begin from the southermost side of said Gowanus mill house, and from said house to run four rod to the southward, for the transportation of goods and the commodious passing of travellers; and that said highway to said Gowanus mill from said house of said Jurian Collier, shall be two rods only and where it is now in use; said common highway to be and continue forever; and further that the fence and gate that now stands upon the entrance into said mill neck, for the inclosing and securing of said neck, shall soe remaine and be alwayes kept soe inclosed with a fence and hanging gate; and the way to said mill be thorow that gate only, and to be alwaye shutt or put to by all persons that passes thorow."

In 1709, the commissioners laid out another road and landing place, at or near the mill subsequently known as Freeck's. The record is as follows: "One common highway to begin from the house of Jurian Collier to the new mill of Nicholas Brower, now sett up on Gowanus mill neck soe called, as the way is now in use along said neck to said mill to be of two rod wide; and that there shall be a landing place by said mill in the most convenient place for the transportation of goods and the commodious passing of travellers, and said highway and landing place to be, remaine and continue forever." (*Old Road Book*).

A little beyond on the easterly side of the road, and in the vicinity of Wycoff and Warren streets, was the two-story house of *Mr. Willetts*, a retired merchant, built in a style and with pretensions above the ordinary farm houses.

The next house on the same side of the road was an old one-story building, standing several hundred feet back from the road and with a fine cherry orchard in front, belonging to *Adolphus Brower* and occupied by tenants. Adolphus, or Dolph Brower's residence, a modern two-story house, stood next, on the same farm, near the road; and, nearly opposite, on the west side of the road, *John Ham* built a fine two-story house, standing several hundred feet back from the road; and there he resided in style so long as the money lasted, to which he had fallen heir — finally ending his life in poverty — his last occupation being that of driving a swill-cart. Ham's house, erected after 1815, was burned a few years ago. Brower's and Ham's houses were located near the line of the present Butler street.

On the same side of the road, after passing Brower's, we come (near the present Degraw street) to the residence and premises of Tom Poole, farmer, milkman and keeper of a small grocery and tavern. He was a rough, and rather uncouth man, who had been the architect of his own fortune, and had accumulated a very considerable property before his death. Having lost his son, a promising boy, who died in early manhood — Poole entailed the fee of the greater portion of his property (mainly in real estate) upon his grandchildren, leaving the use during life to his surviving children — the effect of which has been that the increased taxes and assessments, caused by the growth of the city, absorbing all the income and more, have left some of his children in want.

Proceeding along the same side of the road, close to Poole's, and belonging to him, stood an ancient stone house, occupied by tenants. It had previously belonged to Thomas Parsells, a blacksmith, who had owned and cultivated a small farm here. The walls of this house are still standing.

We next come, on the same side of the road, between the present Union and Sackett streets, to *Jeremiah* (or *Jerry*) *Brower's*, who owned a few acres, afterwards bought by Jaques Cortelyou. When he sold out, Jerry removed to New Utrecht lane where his wife owned a small farm. Some of his neighbors nicknamed him the *pad beest* or road animal, because he spent so much time upon the road traveling between his Brooklyn and New Utrecht possessions. Funny stories are yet related among the old people, of his miserly disposition and the domestic economies which he inflicted upon his wife and family. The Browers, at one time, owned most of the land in this vicinity, but with Dolph and Jerry their ownership ended.

Next, on the easterly side of the road, in the vicinity of President street, we come to the house of old *Theodorus Polhemus*, a fine affair in its day, and yet standing. It was afterwards occupied by his son Theodorus, known in those days as Young Dorus, who died two or three years ago. The Polhemuses were farmers, owning a large tract, which, by the wonderful rise of property, has enriched their descendants.

On the corner of the Gowanus road and the Port road leading to Flatbush (near Macomb street), stood a long one-story building, one end occupied as a school room, and the other by a family—Jo' Tilton, a farm laborer, occupying it at this period. Owing to the sparse population of the neighborhood, and the consequent small number of children thereabouts, the school was not kept very regularly.

On the opposite corner stood a house occupied by *William* (or *Bill*) *Furman*, as a tavern. He had the misfortune, about the time of which we write (1815), to accidently shoot his son, Garret, a young man about grown, while out together gunning in a boat on Flatbush bay. To add to the horror of the case, the two being out alone, he was obliged to row the body of his son ashore, and it was said that he never recovered from the shock.

Branching off westerly from the Gowanus road, at this point, was the road leading to Denton and Freecke's mills. On this we notice the fine houses, first of *Nehemiah Denton*, near the intersection of the present Powers and Carroll streets, and next that of *John*

C. Freecke near the intersection of Nevins and Union streets, each having a tide mill attached to his premises. Both of these, mills, formerly known as Brower's were employed in the flouring business, they buying the principal portion of the wheat raised in the county. Both Denton and Freecke had been merchants, were reputed to be rich, and were among the first in Brooklyn, who made use of coaches, or barouches. In addition to the residences of these gentlemen,there were two or three small houses on this road, occupied by their millers and coopers.

Freecke's mill, otherwise known as Brower's, or the old Gowanus mill, was the oldest in the town; and, until recently, portions of its dam were easily discernible between Third and Fourth avenues. Its history is given on pages 99 and 100, and its portrait preserved on the margin of the battle map of our first volume. In the picture referred to, Denton's mill, or as it was called the Yellow mill, is seen in the distance; and its history and location is also given on page 100 of the first volume.

Both mills are closely associated with the tragic incidents, which marked the closing rout of the American forces, at the battle of Brooklyn, August 27th, 1776, and it was the Yellow mills, which together with the bridge, was set on fire, by a panic-stricken New England officer, who having secured the retreat of his own men, took this means to prevent pursuit by the enemy—with an utter disregard for the safety of his fugitive compatriots, who were to follow.

"Denton's Pond" says Mr. Field[1] "was the subject of a curious contract about 1709, between its original proprietors, Abram and Nicholas Brower, and Nicholas Vechte, the builder and occupant of the old 1699, or Cortelyou house. With the strong predilection of his race, for canals and dikes and water communications, old Vechte added the traits of eccentricity and independence. His house stood on a bank a few feet above the Salt meadow, at a distance of a hundred yards from the navigable waters of the creek. To secure access to them, from his kitchen door, Vechte dug a narrow canal to the creek, but the ebb tide often left his boat firmly sunk in the mud, when he wished to reach the city market with the produce of his farm. He, therefore, contracted with the Browers to supply him with water from their pond, and a channel was dug, in furtherance of his scheme, to a water gate, through which his canal was to be flooded. The old Dutch farmer was accustomed to seat himself in his loaded boat, while it was resting in the mud of the empty channel, and hoist his paddle as a signal to his negro servant to raise the gate. The flood soon floated his boat, and bore him out to the creek, exulting with great glee over his neighbors, whose stranded boats must await the next flood. The contract for this privilege, as well as another, by which Vechte leased the right to plant the ponds with oysters, are in possession of Mr. Arthur Benson."

---

[1] *Brooklyn Corporation Manuals for* 1867 and '69.

Returning to the Gowanus road, we find, on the south-west corner, the house of Joe Poole, a Jerseyman by birth, and a shoemaker by trade, who subsequently sold out and removed to a farm which he purchased at English Neighborhood, N J.

Proceeding down the road, we come, on its east side to the *Cortelyou* or *Vechte* house (*ante*, Vol. I, 56), still standing; but, from appearances (1869), destined soon to disappear.[1] At the time of which we write, it was occupied by Adrian and Jaques Cortelyou.

On the block between Second and Third streets, and about a hundred feet east of Fifth avenue, was a small private burial place, apparently that of the Cowenhoven family. The earliest date of the one or two remaining monuments is that of *Nicolæs Kowenhoeven*, February, 1792. The pick and spade are rapidly leveling the little knoll on which it stands.

Next, on the west side of the road, and between the present Fifth and Sixth streets was a house, originally built by Tunis Tiebout, belonging to Theodorus Polhemus and still standing, being known as the Schoonmaker house, from a more recent resident.

---

[1] The iron figures on the west gable of this house, which gave it its cognomen of the 1699 house, were removed by parties unknown (but probably in the *old iron* interest), in 1868. The building is now used as a stable; the old spring, represented in the engraving, still flows, but is choked and neglected. Ruin, speedy and irremediable has seized upon this finest specimen of old Brooklyn, which time had left us, and which a little thoughtful care might have preserved.

Next beyond, on the same side of the road, between Ninth and Tenth streets, was the house of *Cornelius Van Brunt*, on a farm which he purchased from the Staats family. Mr. Van Brunt was a man highly respected, and one of the main pillars in the Dutch church of Brooklyn.

Opposite to his house, and between Eighth and Ninth streets, was the residence of his father-in-law, *Rem Adriance*. After Mr. Adriance's house, the house was occupied by John Devancnie, farmer and milkman. Both the Van Brunt and Adriance houses have disappeared from their sites.

Next, on the west side of the road, between Thirteenth and Fourteenth streets, was the house of Mr. *Walter Berry*, who, in 1813, was gored to death by a bull which he was fattening. It was, at the time of which we write, occupied by his son Richard. Walter bought this farm shortly after the Revolution, from the heirs of Cornelius Van Duyne, and erected upon it the house which is still standing perched upon a hill formed by the grading of lots and streets around it.

On the same side of the road, about on line of present Fifteenth street on the adjoining farm, stood a house formerly occupied by *Derick* and *Deborah Bergen*, and afterwards by Joseph (or Josey) Smith who had married their daughter Jemima or Jacomintje. This building, which is yet standing, although in a metamorphized form, was originally erected on the Cortelyou property, at the Narrows; but was taken apart and removed by water to its present site on the purchase of this property by Derick, his wife Deborah being a daughter of one of the Narrows' Cortelyous. Derick dying soon after his removal to this place, the widow employed the above mentioned Josey Smith, a Jerseyman, to work the farm for her, and he made love to her daughter, whom he married against the mother's wishes, and finally only by an elopement. Josey and Jacomintje union was blessed with a large family of boys and girls, who were somewhat odd in their ways, and of whom it is related that when they went out riding (in the farm wagons then in common use) they used to sit one on a seat, Josey first, and the rest in Indian file, one behind the other. Smith was an industrious man and much respected by his neighbors.

Opposite to Smith's on the east side of the road, stood a small house occupied by *Tiesie Carson*, another daughter of Derick and Deborah Bergen, and widow of Ebenezer Carson. With her, lived her daughter Deborah, who, after the mother's death, in 1826, resided alone in the house (still standing on Fifteenth street), miserly in her habits, and seldom allowing the foot of a man to cross the threshold of her door, until her death, in 1863, a period of thirty-seven years.

The next house, on the east side of the road, and still standing on Sixteenth street, was that of *Rachel Berry*, widow of Walter, before named, who after her husband's death, built upon her share of her father, Derick Bergen's farm.

Proceeding, we come, upon the west side of the road, to *Peter Wyckoff's* house, still standing at the corner of Hamilton and Third avenues and occupied by one of his granddaughters. Peter bought the farm from the heirs of Cornelius Van Duyne, shortly after the Revolution; tore down the old Van Duyne mansion, which stood on the same site, and erected the present dwelling of the pattern and style then most in vogue among the wealthiest farmers of the county.

The next house stood on the east side of the road, between the present Twentieth and Twenty-first streets) and was occupied by *Anthony Hulse*, the owner of a large farm adjacent. Tony Hulse, as he was commonly called, was the terror of the children of the neighborhood, in consequence of his cross and surly disposition, but his wife ruled him with a rod of iron. In such good subjection did she hold him that he was never allowed to come to the table and eat with the family, and, at meal times, poor Tony sat in the chimney corner and made his meal of bread spread with lard instead of butter. On one occasion, it is related, when his neighbors, old Peter Wyckoff and wife, were visiting them and were invited to tea, Peter, as he took his seat at the table, said "Come! Tony," on which Tony looked up with astonishment at his wife Altie, saying "may I? may I?" On another occasion he sharply rebuked a young married lady, a next door neighbor, who called in to see his daughter Marie, by asking "What! are you on the road again spinning street yarn? Why don't you stay at home and spin and make butter as Rite (Marie) does?" After his wife's death, the old man revenged himself for past deprivations, by the exactions and tricks which he practiced upon this same daughter Marie, who kept house for him—on one occasion, "scaring her half out of her wits," by the simulated rupture of a blood vessel, which he produced by slyly chewing poke berries, and spitting out the juice. Tony's house, now demolished, was a one-story, low-roofed building, without a kitchen wing, and with a small front porch and stoop, on which, in fine weather, the old man spent much of his time. A little beyond his dwelling, on the same side of the road, between Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth streets, stood, and yet stands, a one-story house, erected before the Revolution, for his son John, who left it before this date, in consequence of the old man's refusal of a sufficient portion of his farm, for the support of his family. Cornelius Doremus, a very decent man, was afterwards employed by Tony to cultivate the farm, and occupied the house which had been John's. When Doremus first came, the old man was so well pleased with him, that he called him, by way of endearment Cornelisje. After awhile, when the novelty had worn off, he called him "Corneil;" but, finally, being childish and hard to please in his old age, he commonly spoke of his farmer as "Corneil, from the devil."

Crossing a bridge over a small run of water which drained the swamp above, you come to the house of *George Bennett*, on the west side of the road a little beyond an elevation (vol. I, note 1, page 271), known as *Blokje's Bergh.* This house was built shortly after the Revolution, and when about building, George, who had been up the North river to purchase lumber, on returning in the night, while following a foot path, a near cut from the turnpike to the Gowanus road near the head of Freecke's mill pond, was beset by two highwaymen — but he had the cunning to drop his purse before they laid hold of him, and thus baffled them in their object. They, however, left him gagged, in which state he made his way to Tom Baisley's, whom with difficulty he aroused, and, on searching recovered his purse. George Bennett's house is yet standing, on Third avenue near Twenty-fifth street, having had an additional story placed under it. He had no children, was grasping, a great boaster, and his yarns were frequently stretched to an interminable length. In going to the rear of his farm, which was over a mile long, he generally followed the cow path on the line between his own and his brother Wynant's farm; and invariably employed himself on such walks, by throwing stones (which were abundant), as he went along, over the fence on to Wynant's side. This aroused the indignation of Wynant's sons, whose land had stones enough of its own, and they in turn, and in self-defense, employed their spare time in throwing them back again; and thus, endlessly went on this fraternal war of the stones. Old Gowanus folks yet remember the oyster war which arose from George's assumed claim to all the oysters in Gowanus cove, in defense of which claim he engaged the services of a stout German as fighting man, who got seriously worsted in a passage at arms with some of the Dutch farmers, as did George also, in the litigation which followed. For many years George Bennett, in addition to farming, carried on the fishing business, keeping a seine and a gang of men with a hut on Bompje's hook, which lay opposite his house. About this time there was a great deal of searching for Capt. Kidd's buried treasure; all the little island of upland in the meadows between Red hook and the main land being dug over. One night a small sloop lay at anchor near Bompje's hook, disappearing before morning; a hole was found dug near the fish hut, with the imprint at its foot of what resembled the bottom of a chest. In addition to this were the footmarks of men lifting it out and the marks of its having been slid or dragged down to the water's edge. George and his men, of course, naturally concluded that valuable treasure had been taken away from the vicinity of their hut, and grievously lamented the fact; but it is probable it was a sham got up to create a sensation and make George uneasy.

Next, on the east side of the road was the one-story house of *Wynant Bennet*, built of stone, with a kitchen wing in the rear, of the same material. This building, which in shape resembled the letter L, was a very ancient one, erected at an early period by an ancestor of Wynant's, and stood on the edge of the road (which here ran along the very brink of the bank of the cove or bay), with no fence in front, being the only one on this road which was not separated by a fence from the highway. It stood on the line of the present Third avenue, near Twenty-seventh street, and was demolished many years ago when the avenue was opened. Wynant was a one armed man.[1]

The next house was that of the brothers *Simon* and *Peter Schermerhorn* (of which a view is given on page 52 of our first volume), erected by the Bennetts prior to 1695; and yet standing on Third avenue near Twenty-sixth street, but in a dilapidated condition. Simon and Peter were both corpulent men; the former having but one son, and the latter several, one of whom, Abraham, came into possession of the house and farm about the period of which we write. Simon was a testy old man, but a great coward. He once quarreled with the wife of Wilhelmus Stoothoff, their farmer, and pointed his gun at her. She told him to shoot if he dared, and she would have the constable after him; whereupon he walked off on the double quick in great alarm, pulling up his small clothes as he went along.

A little farther on the same side of the road, and on the Schermerhorn farm, there stood, and yet stands, in the vicinity of Thirtieth street, a house intended for their foreman, they being engaged in a mercantile business in New York city. The house was, at this period, occupied by *Stephen Hendrickson*, who married a daughter of George Powers, before mentioned as the owner of a farm on the Brooklyn and Flatbush turnpike, near the toll-gate.

On the adjoining farm stood the house of *Garret Bergen*, erected, it is supposed, some years before the Revolution, by one of the Bennets, but enlarged, remodelled and rebuilt, about the year 1800, after the property came in possession of Tunis Bergen, the father of Garret. This house, which stood on the westerly side of the old road, and was approached by a lane, is yet standing on Third avenue, near Thirty-third street, having had a portico with columns added to its front, and an additional wing to its southerly side; and is owned by Garret G., son of the Garret, of 1815. Garret was generally known as Squire Bergen, having for many years held the office of justice of the peace, and that of one the assistant judges of the county. He was noted for keeping peace among his neighbors, always refusing a warrant while the applicant was in a passion, putting him off, until he had cooled down, after which an amicable settlement was generally effected with ease. He was an elder in the church, and a truly upright man, whose word was as good as his bond, and whose conscientious life was admired and respected by all who knew him. His sons, also, are among our most valued citizens, viz : Hon. Tunis G., favorably known as a public man, and an industrious genealogist; Peter G., a merchant in New York; John G., the late able and popular police commissioner; and Garret G., a farmer. His only daughter married Mr. Tunis S. Barkeloo.

---

[1] At the time of the Revolution, the Bennets owned the water front on the Gowanus cove, from Twenty-fifth to Thirty-seventh streets, inclusive, and it was probably between Thirty-second and Thirty-seventh streets that the British reinforcements landed (see note 1, p. 278, vol. I), during the progress of the battle of Brooklyn.

The next house, with some seven or eight acres attached, was that of the children of John Cropsey, who married Polly, a daughter of *Christopher* (or as he was called Stoffle) *Bennet*, and died in 1808. It was a one-story frame building, with a wing on its easterly side, and stood near the easterly corner of the Gowanus road and Martense's lane; at a point on the present Thirty-fifth street, about half-way between Third and Fourth avenues. Their grandfather, Stoffle, at this time resided with them, and had charge of the family. He was a tall, slim and stately gray-haired man; who, for many years, had kept school in the neighboring school-house. In the wing of the house, they kept a store and a small tavern; and had a blacksmith shop on the corner of the road, in which Cornelius Bennet, at this time, worked. As near as can be ascertained, a tavern known as the Red Lion, was kept in this building, during the Revolution.

On the opposite corner of Martense's lane, stood, and yet stands, a small house occupied by *Gysbert Bogert*, a fisherman, whose father-in-law, Abraham Bennet gave to his daughter the small plot on which the house stood.

Next, on the same side of the road, on a plot of about an acre, stood the house of *Abraham Bennet*, deceased, occupied by Caty, his widow, and her sons, Abraham and William, both of whom courted Charlotte Moulison, of Canarsie. Abraham, who was fond of the ardent, was in the habit of carrying a bottle with him and treating the old man, who also liked a drop. Moulison, when asked by one of his neighbors, what he thought of the two young men, replied, "William (the steady one), is a very nice man; but, Abraham is the man for me," and Abraham, consequently, won the prize, but did not long enjoy it; and, after his death, his brother William married the widow.

After passing Abraham Bennet's house, we come to that of his brother *Anthony*, who also owned a plot of about an acre, afterwards owned by Abraham Tysen, a Jerseyman, who carried on the shoemaking and tanning business, his vats being located in the low grounds, near the edge of the meadows. Old Abraham and Anthony Bennet, who were not blessed with an abundance of this world's goods, on one occasion had a fat cow to kill—with them, an unusual occurrence, and the question arose how they should manage it. It was finally determined, after due deliberation, that, after the animal was halted and hauled up to the bull ring, or killing post, Abraham should hold and drive the axe to knock down the cow, while, to make sure work, Anthony was to take hold of the blade and steer it. The effect of this masterly management was, that the cow was struck on the horn instead of the head; and, in her struggles, she broke loose, and ran bellowing away. On another occasion when the two brothers were in the woods, gathering chestnuts, the latter in the tree shaking them down, the limb on which he was perched broke, leaving him suspended and in a momentary danger of falling. Upon this he sang out, with all his might "draag bladeren, Abraham! draag bladeren, Abraham!" (i. e. "carry leaves," so as to make a soft place for him to fall on). Abraham bestirred himself, and carried leaves as fast as possible, Anthony managing to hold on; until, finally, he fell down, the leaves breaking the violence of his fall, and saving his bones.

On the land of *Simon Bergen*, on the same side of the road as the last house, and about a hundred feet beyond it, stood the school-house of District No. 2, an old, one-story frame building.

The predecessor of this school-house, and the first in the district, was a log house, which stood near the swinging gate leading to John S. Bergen's, between the Second and Third avenues, and near Forty-fourth street. About sixty years ago, the school was kept by a native of the Emerald isle, named Hogan, who fell in love with one of his female scholars, and made an unsuccessful attempt to commit suicide, by cutting his throat, because neither she nor her parents would listen to his proposals. After Hogan, the school was taught by a man named Cisley, who, to punish his scholars, made a fool's cap, with a red face, ram's horns at the sides, and a cow's tail hanging down behind (the latter articles procured at Tysen's tannery), which he placed upon the head of the offenders, and then had him, or her, escorted around the neighborhood by two of the larger scholars. This, however, did not operate long; for, one day, while they were exhibiting a daughter of Stephen Hendrickson, Mrs. Hendrickson happened to meet them, and straightway seizing the scarecrow cap, rent it into tatters, and threatened the pedagogue with her direst vengeance, if such a punishment as that was ever tried on again. After the failure of his fool's cap experiment, Cisley used to punish the children by locking them up in the garret, or loft of the school-house, which had no window, and was entered by a trap door. This, however, was no great punishment for the youngsters, who amused themselves during confinement in various ways; among others, by chasing and arousing the flying squirrels, which had their nests behind the chimney.

Leaving the school-house, with all its pleasant associations, we come next to the old De Hart house (of which a view is given opposite page 52, vol. I), owned by *Simon Bergen*, and now occupied by Cornelis Bennet, the blacksmith. Simon, who had but one eye, had previously built a new house in modern style, on the hill west of the old house, in which he resided, and which was accidentally burned a few years ago. Both of these houses stood on the bank of the bay, on the westerly side of the road, and were approached by a common lane. Simon was considered a rich man, and a good horseman, generally driving a spirited team in such style as, on some occasions, to excite the apprehensions of his wife Jannetje, whose remonstrances he would effectually silence by offering her the reins.

We next come to the swinging gate leading to *John S. Bergen's* a brother of Simon, who resided in a small house on the banks of the bay near Forty-third street, to which a few years after he built a large addition, both yet standing.

The next house was that of *Wynant Van Pelt*, which stood on the east side of the road between Forty-seventh and Forty-eighth streets, a small building which had never been troubled by the painter.

After passing this we come to the lane leading to the old Van Pelt mansion, a low roofed one-story house then occupied by *Henry Van Pelt;* and, also, to a small modern built house occupied by *Tunis Van Pelt*, both located near the bay and Forty-seventh street, the former now gone, the latter yet standing. Henry, or Hank as he was commonly called, was a cripple from his youth, his legs being in such a state that he was under the necessity of walking on his hands and feet like a quadruped, his hands being protected by gloves. He used to have a very low wheeled wagon, easy of access, in which he rode, and was quite a regular attendant of the Dutch church of Brooklyn, of which he was a member. He lived and died a bachelor. The father of these Van Pelts was Wynant, who divided his farm among four sons. They were but indifferent farmers, and made their living chiefly by fishing. In Wynant's days it was customary for old men to wear skull-crowned beaver hats, with a very broad brim, and so well made that a hat would last its wearer for years. It is said that, on one occasion, when the family were on rather short allowance, the old man, who always dined as was customary in that day, with his hat on, took it off as usual when about to say grace, and held it before his face, and when he had finished — for the grace was a long one — he was astonished and naturally very indignant to find that his stalwart sons had cleared the table of all the eatables.

Returning to the main road we come, on its east side, near present Forty-eighth street, to the house of *Christopher*, or Chris., another of the sons of Wynant Van Pelt. It was a shabby looking dwelling, for Chris. and his wife Hopy (Sophia) possessed none of that careful tidiness which is the proverbial attribute of their race. He owned an old gray horse which was stabled in the cellar, his fowls roosted in the garret, and it was reported, but probably an exaggeration, that his hogs slept in the entry.

Proceeding along the west side of the road, we come to the swinging gate and lane leading to *Peter Bergen's*, whose house, a modern two-story erection, with a basement, stood on the banks of the bay near Fiftieth street. This building now stands on Third avenue, between Fiftieth and Fifty-first streets, where it was removed by Thomas Hunt, its present owner, who also added piazzas to it. Peter was the first of the Bergens who turned out in a coach.

The next lane led to the house of *Michael Bergen*, a modern one-story building, accidentally burned a few years ago, while owned by his son Lefferts, who erected a two-story building on its site, standing on the bay, near Fifty-third street.

The next lane led to the house of *Theodorus*, a son of Michael, and commonly known as Dorus Bergen, an ancient one-story building, partly constructed of stone, and which yet stands on the bay, near Fifty-first street. Dorus was a hard working farmer, who allowed nothing to go to waste.

Beyond his lane, was that leading to *Tunis* (or Major) *Bergen's*, the last house within the bounds of the town of Brooklyn, a two-story building, with a wing, yet standing on the bay, near Fifty-eighth street. The major was remarkable for his joviality and good humor and was the father of John T. and Cornelius Bergen; the former, for two terms, sheriff of the county and at one time a member of congress.

This brings us to the old boundary of the town of Brooklyn, or the present city line, and concludes our walk in this direction.

We may remark, in closing, that the most fashionable style of houses among the wealthier farmers of the county, about the beginning of the present century, and of which there are many specimens yet extant, was a main building of about one story and a half in height, without attic windows, the second story gaining its light from gable windows; the roof, with a double pitch, extending over the eaves some four or five feet, in a curved manner, so as to form a piazza and cover the front and rear stoops, but without columns for support. A wide hall ran through the centre of the house, with two, and in some instances, three rooms on each side of the hall, the upper story being somewhat similarly divided. A wing was generally added for a kitchen. On this general plan were the Tiebout, Wyckoff, George Bennett, G. Bergen, J. Bergen and M. Bergen houses.

Addenda to the Fifth Walk, page 162.

Out from Bedford Corners ran the *Cripplebush road*, north-easterly to Newtown, and the *Clove road* (always called by the British, the Bedford pass), southerly, through the clove or cleft, in the hills. The main Brooklyn and Jamaica road, which we have been thus far tracing, ran easterly from the Corners, sinuously through the old farms, that portion of it which curved in and out among the hills near east New York, being especially known to the old inhabitants as the King's highway. It was called by Gen. Howe, *the Pass through the Hills.*[1] Those who would enter more fully into the antiquarian detail of this road, the Rockaway pass and the *Half-way House*, at the junction of the present Broadway with the Jamaica turnpike, now Fulton avenue, a building which was the flanking point of the British army, in the attack on Brooklyn, in 1776, will do well to consult the article by Mr. T. W. Field, in the *Corporation Manual for* 1868; and, also, pages 260–267, with accompanying maps, views, etc., of our first volume.

---

[1] From its southerly side (at about the junction of present Reid avenue and Bainbridge street), the Jamaica turnpike threw off a road southwardly to a meadow in Flatlands, which road was called *Hunter-fly*, a corruption from *Aander Vly*, or to the Fly, or creek. (Vol. I, page 442).

CHAPTER III.

THE VILLAGE FROM 1817 TO 1834, INCLUSIVE.

1817. January. The good people of Brooklyn were, at this time, under much apprehension from certain powder magazines or storehouses on Fort Greene; and a special town meeting was held, at which a committee was appointed to obtain relief in the matter.[1]

February. The winter was very severe and the ice so thick in the river as greatly to obstruct the passage of the steamboat employed on the ferry. "On the 4th," says the *Star*, "the thermometer stood at twenty-six degrees below freezing point. Our steamboat and barges crossed the ferry as usual, until a large field of ice came in on the flood tide and wedged in the ferry between Peck slip and the steamboat wharf. On this *natural bridge*, we believe, thousands crossed, among whom were some females, and the novel and beautiful spectacle attracted general attention. After about two hours the ebb tide started the ice, and those who were on the ice found no difficulty in getting ashore in boats. Such an instance has not occurred in thirteen years past." For about two weeks, the ice was so solid between Governor's island and the Long island shore that it was crossed by sleighs and horses, and on the 19th, the harbor was closed by ice, both at the Narrows and at Hurlgate. As was to be expected, disagreements arose between the public and the ferry company, which gave rise to several town and public meetings on ferry rights. Flour at this time was as high as $15 per barrel, and there was also much distress among the poor, which aroused the generous sympathy and exertions of the citizens. *A Brooklyn Humane Society* was formed March 26th and a soup house established (west of the Old Ferry, next to Thos. Everit's tanyard) from which, under the direction of Burdet Stryker, two to three hundred rations were distributed daily. Messrs. Mercein, Treadwell, Wise, Tucker, Bach, Spooner, Garrison and G. Hicks were appointed a committee to wait upon the citizens, and solicit contributions for the needy. Poor persons were also invited to apply to the committee of relief, consisting of Rev. Messrs. Henshaw, Ireland, Crawford and Woodhull, Drs. Hunt and Ball, Capt. Renshaw and Messrs. Remsen, Sands and Carter. At the end of the first fiscal year of the village of Brooklyn, April 23d, a balance of $54.50 remained in the treasurer's hands, and being a balance of moneys received by the trustees as commissioners of excise, it was ordered to be paid to the overseers of the poor for the use of the town of Brooklyn.

---

[1] C. and J. Sands established a magazine for the storage of powder at about northwest corner Jay and Water streets in Brooklyn, in 1780. In 1804, they were indicted before King's county sessions, for storing that article within the fire limits.

May. The first election for village officers was sharply contested against the old trustees, in consequence of their having allowed their names to be inserted in the act of incorporation. No political party question entered into the canvass. Both tickets embraced five candidates from each of the political parties, and the election resulted in favor of the opponents of village incorporation, who elected as new trustees, William Furman, Henry Stanton, Tunis Joralemon and Noah Waterbury.

June. The trustees altered the name of Old Ferry street to Fulton street, and appointed Burdet Stryker as public measurer, with the same fees as those allowed to the New York measurers. Brooklyn was also visited during this month, by President Monroe.

July. The tax levied by the trustees to meet village expenses, was $1,628.50.

December. *The Brooklyn Humane Society*, whose object was the distribution of charity during the winter, being "convinced by painful experiences that institutions of this nature have a direct tendency to beget, among a large portion of their fellow citizens, habits of imprudence, indolence, dissipation and consequent pauperism," resolved to dissolve their organization, and notice was given that relief was not to be expected from the society during the ensuing winter.

1818. January 12th. *The African Wesleyan Methodist Episcopal Church* was incorporated.

February 11th. Mr. Hez. B. Pierrepont's journal records "Buttermilk channel closed with ice, and people walking over."

March 24th. An act was passed incorporating *The Brooklyn Jamaica and Flatbush Turnpike.*

June. A temporary night watch was established. Two surveyors, the late Jeremiah Lott of Flatbush and William M. Stewart, were engaged by the trustees to make a survey and map of the village. Gabriel Furman, the historian, who, with John Cole, afterwards a physician in Brooklyn, acted as chain-bearers and assistants, has recorded in his *Manuscript Notes* the following account of this survey: "We commenced on what was then known as District street, being the southern boundary of the village (it is now closed and Atlantic street runs partly on its line); there were no houses on it, the lands on both sides being then used for farming purposes, on the north side by Judge Joralemon and on the south side by Ralph Patchen and Isaac Cornell. Between Patchen and Cornell there was a standing bet of five dollars from year to year, as to which could have the first bushel of pears in the New York market, for sale, raised from their lands here. I well recollect the day, when we commenced that survey, it was very warm, and tedious getting through the sand, and then the survey was continued through Red Hook lane, another boundary of the village, and from the opening of Red Hook lane upon Fulton street, the boundary continued in a straight line across the fields to the head of the Wallabout bay. This was the extent of the first village of Brooklyn." This survey was completed in March, 1819, at what would be now considered the very moderate cost of five hundred dollars, and was formally adopted by the board of trustees, as the permanent plan for regulating the village.

On its completion, sign-boards were put up at the corners of the streets, by order of the trustees, at an expense of $50.

1819. February. Maj. Gen. Andrew Jackson visited New York and Brooklyn.

March. Isaac Nichols and James P. Chichester, were justices of the peace for Brooklyn. The county clerk's office was removed from Flatbush to this place. The overseers of the poor recommended a limitation of the number of retailers of liquors.

May. J. Bedell (*ante*, page 44), and Edward Gibson, commenced running a stage or wagon, "as circumstances may require, for the accommodation of officers and gentlemen wishing to visit the Navy Yard, to Edward Gibson's restoration, adjoining eastern gate of the Navy Yard. Fare only 25 cents, two or more, 12½ cents each; distance one and a half mile."

April. The ever present danger from the powder magazines, on Fort Greene, again agitated the public mind, and led to the appointment of a committee to abate the nuisance.

July. The trustees, acting as commissioners of highways, closed up, or cancelled the road or highway called Sands street (and which had been threatened the year before, by the Wallabout Bridge Company, with an indictment before the grand jury, on account of its bad condition), "so far north as the same hath been received, or taken, or admitted as a public road or highway." But Jeremiah Johnson, John Jackson and John Spader, residents of the Wallabout district, appealed from this decision to the court of common pleas, which, in October, 1820, reversed the action of the trustees.

Jacob Cozine was appointed to remove all dirt and filth from the *paved* streets of the village.

October. Thomas W. Birdsall (who is still living among us) succeeded Joel Bunce, deceased, as post master of the village. Of his fitness for the office, as an honest man, there could have been no reasonable doubt, for in June previous he had advertised an umbrella left at his store, three weeks before! An agricultural society was established in Kings county.

1820. The census of this year gave the village a population of 5,210.

April 19th. An editorial in the *Star*, of this date, mentions the following greatly needed improvements in the village: "1. We ought to have one good public market. We have now seven or eight substitutes in different places. 2. The street near the water, and between the ferries requires raising. 3. A street should be opened so as to ascend the Heights, west of Old Ferry, near the water. 4. The street under the hill [now Furman street] ought to be widened, and regulated: it is an important street, being near the water, west of the Old Ferry. 5. It is much to be regretted that Front street was not opened east of Fulton street at the premises of Mrs. Smith. It would be of much importance on account of fires, by breaking the chain of wooden buildings. 6. Front street east of the new ferry requires much regulating. It is indeed a nuisance and disgrace to the village. 7. Hicks street west of Fulton street is always in a wretched state. It is surprising that a street so populous should have been so neglected. 8. Every house should be numbered. 9. We might, perhaps, afford *lamps* as far as the fork of the Ferry streets."

This year, also, appeared Guy's celebrated *Brooklyn Snow Scene*, which we have described (*ante* 99, note 2).

May. Daily mails were established to New York and Jamaica.

Several whales appeared near Sandy Hook, one of which, nearly seventy feet long, was taken by a pilot boat and its carcase towed up to Brooklyn where it was towed into the slip under the Heights, at foot of Pineapple street (Map B, No. 30), a shed erected over it and was exhibited. Some apprehension was felt lest the presence of so large a mass of decaying matter might breed a pestilence, but enterprising Gerardy Langdon, mine host of the Steamboat Hotel, who seems to have been interested in the show, procured a certificate from the celebrated *savant* of that day, Dr. Samuel L. Mitchell, the publication of which allayed the public fear. And so, under the cheerful assurance that "all those who wish to *feast their eyes* and *regale their noses*, may, for 25 cents, be amply gratified," it continued to be visited by crowds from New York and Brooklyn until its stench became so powerful as to be unbearable, and even those who had been to see it could be detected by the odor which had impregnated their garments.

October. Doughty and Navy streets were named by the trustees.

1821. January. The census[1] of Kings county for 1820, gives Brooklyn a population of 2,928, white males, 2,921 white females,

---

[1] In 1706, there were 64 freeholders in the town of Brooklyn. In 1802, their number had only increased to 86, as appears from the list of jurors at that period. In

826 colored people, and at the Navy Yard 366 persons, being a total of 7,941, and a gain of 3,236 since the census of 1814.

The weather, during the last week of this month, is noted as having been of remarkable severity, the thermometer, at one time, being 14° below zero, and the Narrows at Staten Island, closed by ice, on which several persons walked to New York city. The North river from Cortland street to Jersey City, was passed with loaded sleighs, and a temporary half-way house was erected on the ice, while a Hoboken ferry boat, having on board fifty-eight persons and twenty-three horses, remained all one night blocked up in the ice. The Brooklyn ferries, however, were closed but a few hours.

February 5. Eli Wadsworth & Co., and Peter Snyder gave notice that they had erected a weigh bridge in the village of Brooklyn, near the New Ferry, on a new and improved plan, which for accuracy and expedition exceeds any other scale ever invented, either for weighing large or small draughts. They also invited the citizens of Brooklyn to test the improvement by weighing on it, free of expense, for one week.

March 7th. Appeared the first number of the *Long Island Patriot*, edited and published by Mr. George L. Birch.

April 30th. Jeremiah Lott's report of *levels* of the village of Brooklyn was accepted, and the sum of $250 appropriated to him for the same, by the board of trustees.

July. Great village improvements were contemplated about this time. Front street was to be raised and paved at its junction with James and Dock streets; Sands street, which had previously been in such a miserable condition, as to cause its indictment before the grand jury of the county, was to be repaired from Fulton street as far as the Wallabout toll-bridge, and paved as far as Mr. Jagger's; two wells were to be dug on Hicks street; and the street on the bank was to be opened for carriages as far as Samuel Jackson's house, between Clark and Pierrepont streets (see *ante*, 140).

---

the year 1800, there were 253 votes given in this town, at a contested election for assemblyman. In 1824, on the same occasion, 1,013 votes were taken.—*Furman's Notes*, 89.

The village this year contained 867 buildings, 96 of which were groceries and taverns, and several storehouses, principally dependent for business, on the operation of the quarantine laws, in the months of June, July and August.[1]

1822. Sands street was this year paved, and in March, in compliance with a petition from the inhabitants, the trustees directed, that the houses on Fulton, Main, Front, Hicks and High streets, should be *numbered*, at the expense of their owners. It was, also, announced that a graveled sidewalk and curbstones would be made in Fulton street, to the extremity of the village, near Military Garden. At a village meeting, the assessors were voted $1.25 per day for their services. Fifty dwelling houses were this year erected in the village.[2]

March 13th. The *First Presbyterian Church* was incorporated.

May. The *first Brooklyn Directory* was published by Alden Spooner, at the *Star* office.

A *Medical Society* was established in Kings county.

July 4th. A new liberty pole was erected at the Fulton Ferry, on which occasion an address was delivered by Abraham E. Brower, an aged Revolutionary patriot, and a salute was fired by the military companies, under command of Capt. George Hall, and Capt. John Allen.

On the 25th of this month, the corner-stone of the *first Roman Catholic Church* (St. James), was laid in Jay street, the society being incorporated on the 20th of November, following.

In September, precautionary measures were adopted by the trustees to prevent the introduction into the village of the yellow fever, then just making its appearance in New York; and the business of that city being necessarily transferred to Greenwich village, the steam ferry boat, Nassau, plied regularly between that village and Brooklyn.

November 27. A farce was enacted in the lecture room of the Presbyterian Church, of establishing a society in the town of

---

[1] At the close of the Revolutionary war, the town of Brooklyn, within the bounds of the present village contained fifty-six buildings.—*Furman's Notes*, 89.

[2] *Furman's Notes*, 89.

Brooklyn, auxiliary to the American society for meliorating the condition of the Jews, formed in New York, two years before. An amusing account of the affair is preserved in *Furman's Manuscript Notes.*

1823. March 3d. Memorable for a great storm which occurred, doing great damage to the shipping, and much injury in Brooklyn, where the ropewalks of Joshua Sands and N. L. Martin were blown away.

April 20th. The new brick church in Cranberry street belonging to the First Presbyterian Society, was dedicated.

June 5th. Spooner's Brooklyn Directory, second issue, estimates a gain of 190 families during the year past. The population of the town at this time was about 9,000; that of the village 7,000. During this spring Henry street was opened.

July 4th. Was this year celebrated with considerable spirit in the village. At sunrise the national flag was raised, and a salute fired. At 10 A. M., a procession was formed, consisting of the Brooklyn Artillery, and Village Guards, Clergy, Firemen, Revolutionary Veterans, Citizens and Sabbath school scholars. The procession marched through Fulton, Nassau, Washington, Sands, Main, Front and Cranberry streets to the First Presbyterian church, which was densely crowded. After listening to the usual exercises of such occasions, and an oration by Clarence D. Sackett, the procession adjourned to the green, on the hill near the north-east corner of Columbia and Pineapple streets, where, about 2 P. M., they partook of an excellent dinner prepared by Abiathar Young, keeper of the Steamboat Hotel; and continued at the table singing songs, and drinking toasts until about 6 P. M., when they dispersed very orderly. The evening was kept up with a fine display of fireworks, etc., at Duflon's Military Garden.

This month, also, one of the public stores attached to the Custom house of the port of New York was moved to the village of Brooklyn, and kept in a three-story fire-proof building, on Furman street, erected by Jonathan Thompson, collector of New York. This was the first and for many years the only bonded warehouse in Brooklyn, and was situated on the dock on Furman street near Cranberry street. (See Map B, No. 28). Another addition to the prosperity of the place was the erection of a laboratory for the manufacture of whiting and colors, by Hiram & Arthur Hirst, situated near Isaac Cornell's distillery, and named The Nassau Whiting and Color Manufactory, and *Furman's Manuscript Notes* record that, on the 1st of August, there were no less than fifty-three vessels lying at the wharves of Brooklyn, besides eight vessels in the United States Navy Yard.

On the 28th of this month, the *Apprentices' Library* was organized, an event which may justly be considered *the* event of the year.[1]

The cause of Greece, at this time in the midst of her last great struggle for liberty, excited universal sympathy in every portion of our country. On the 3d of September, a wooden cross, twenty feet in height, was reared on the Heights of Brooklyn. It was dedicated by the ladies of New York, with the inscription, "Sacred to the cause of the Greeks," and was entrusted to the care of Gen. J. G. Swift, who, in the presence of many ladies and gentlemen, planted it at the foot of his garden[2] fronting New York city, accompanied with some appropriate remarks. Wine being then introduced, the following toast was drank amid cheers: "May the Grecian cross be planted from village to village, and from steeple to steeple, until it rests on the dome of St. Sophia," after which an eloquent address was delivered by the learned and celebrated Dr. Samuel L. Mitchell.

During the summer of 1823, Brooklyn was again visited by the yellow fever. It was supposed by some to have been imported into the village by the ship *Diana*, or the brig *Trio*, which had lost her mate at sea by the same disease. The *Diana*, however, seems to have been fairly cleared, by concurrent testimony, from the imputation. Many inhabitants were disposed to trace the infection to certain stores belonging to Samuel Jackson and George Hicks, in which were stored large quantities of fish, from which arose an almost insupportable stench. The first case occurred on August 22d, in a house on Furman street (Map D, G), and was fatal. In the same dwelling seven persons subsequently sickened, two of whom died;

---

[1] See chapter on Literary Institutions.

[2] The site of this cross is marked as No. 25, on Map B.

and two who had removed from the house were attacked and died at a place in Nassau street near the Alms house in the back part of the village. Another who was ascertained frequently to have passed through the infected district; and, as it was believed, had frequently visited the house on Furman street (G), died at the mansion house on Columbia street. On the same street, also (D), John Wells, Esq., an eminent member of the New York bar, expired on the 7th of September.[1] Another fatal case occurred on Furman street (E), above the cooper's shop of F. Tuttle (M); another on the same street near Caze and Richaud's distillery, which recovered; and a case at Toby Philpot's, a public tavern on Furman street recovered. A young woman, also from Furman street, died in Pearl near Nassau street; and two cases of sickness occurred, one without the infested district, and one who sickened on board the Diana, of which her husband was captain, and was reported to the New York Board of Health, and the health officer attributed her illness rather to the atmosphere of that part of Brooklyn where the ship lay, to which she imprudently exposed herself in the night, than to any infection in the ship. The last death occurred on September 22d, just one month from the day of the first death, and on the same day the fences (g, g), which had been erected at each end of the infected district, were removed by the trustees.[2]

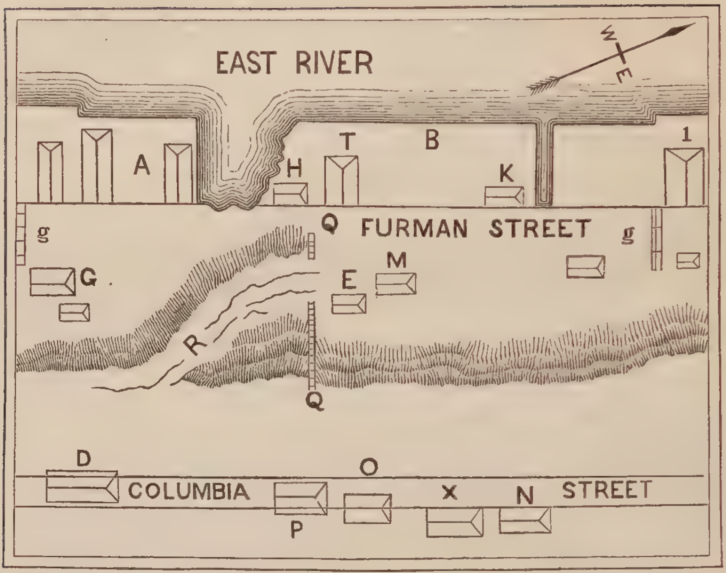
---

[1] JOHN WELLS, Esq., a native of Otsego Co., N. Y., died of the yellow fever at his residence on Brooklyn Heights, September 7, 1823, aged fifty-two years. During the Revolution his family were all massacred by the Indians, and he alone escaped by being away from home, at school in Schenectady. By force of his talents, and the integrity and firmness of his character he had risen to the head of his profession and by common consent held the first rank at the New York bar. His modest, unassuming manners, disarmed others of that envy, which the superiority of his intellect, the splendor of his genius and the extent of his legal attainments were calculated to excite.

[2] It may be well, at this point, to review the *yellow fever epidemics* which occurred in Brooklyn, in the years 1804 and 1809.

On the 20th of June, 1804 (a year remarkable for the coolness and salubrity of its summer), the yellow fever appeared at the Wallabout settlement adjacent to the United States Navy Yard. This little hamlet consisted of eight dwelling houses, and two or three out-houses, the distance between the two extreme buildings being about one-third of a mile. These houses, which would seem to have been sufficiently separated for every purpose of cleanliness or convenience, were built on the fine gravelly soil of the Wallabout shore and furnished with wells of good water; while the place, which had on its southern side a bank some fifty feet in height (in which,

MAP D.



Yellow Fever District, 1823.

REFERENCES.

A. Wharf and stores of Samuel Jackson and George Hicks.
B. Where the ship *Diana* lay.
G. House where the fever appeared.
D. Residence of John Wells, Esq.
E. House in which Thomas Oxx sickened and died.
X. Mansion house, owned by Alex. Robinson, Esq., and in which John Ward, Esq., died.
g. g. Fences erected by the Trustees.
H. Toby Philpot's.
T. Stone store of Henry Waring.
K. Thomas Armstrong's tavern.
I. Jonathan Thompson's brick store.
M. Furman Tuttle's, and Mrs. Vanderveer's.
N. Residence of S. S. Newman.
O. Henry Waring's house.
P. David Kimberly's house.
Q. Q. Stepladder to ascend the hill, from Furman street.
R. Road up the hill.

The ravages of the disease may be briefly summed up, as follows: 19 cases, of which 10 were fatal. We present our readers with a plan of the infected district, copied from one in *Gabriel Furman's Manuscript Notes.*

---

however, a break gave full sweep to the air even when the wind was south), was surrounded on every other side by running salt water, there being no fresh marshes near, and enjoyed, almost constantly, cool and refreshing breezes. The houses were inhabited, at the time of the epidemic, by about twenty workmen engaged in Mr. John Jackson's ship-yard, to whom the soil belonged. These men seem all to have been industrious, cleanly and respectable; nor do they appear to have been inconveniently crowded as to sleeping accommodations, the greatest number in any one room being four, all of whom remained in health. In addition to a freedom from local causes, such as want of ventilation, crowding, filth, etc., there was, also, no unfavorable condition of the atmosphere, the weather being quite cool and the wind at the time and for a fortnight previous having been from the north-east and east.

To this place came the schooner *Greyhound* from Cape Francois, and on the 4th of June the brig *La Ruse,* from Guadaloupe, both ports having, at the time of sailing, been infected; and the latter vessel (*La Ruse*) lost her cook and had several sick of the fever during the passage. These vessels, on or about the 18th, had their bilge water pumped out within a short distance of the ship yard, and on the 20th the first cases of yellow fever appeared in the neighborhood, being Isaac W. Brown, Edward Livingston, Samuel White, James Castles and Mrs. Little; all of whom recovered, except the last mentioned, who died on the 24th or 25th. Then followed Philip Dring who sickened on the 21st, and died on the 23d; Mrs. Sherlock on the 22d, died on the 28th; Jane Johnson on the 23d, died the 27th; Mrs. Dring on the 30th, recovered; Sally Wakeman sickened on the 29th or 30th, died July the 3d; William Arbutton on the 28th, died July 3d; Benjamin Rhodes sickened on the 29th, recovered; George Little, Mrs. Gentridge (who laid out Mrs. Little) and Patty Helme, on the 30th; and ——— Helme on July 1st, all of whom recovered, as, also, did Patrick Proffer, a laborer, who took the fever at the Wallabout, went over to New York, and finally recovered. On the 26th of June, the vessels were ordered back to quarantine, the workmen removed from the spot, and no new case occurred. This visitation of the epidemic then attacked seventeen persons, all of which cases were proved to have been traceable directly to one or both of the infected vessels, and six of which were fatal.[1]

The above is a summary of the very voluminous evidence presented in an exhaustive review of Dr. Edward Miller's report on the yellow fever of 1805, published in the *American Med. and Phil. Register of New York,* for 1812, pp. 91–103, 164–189, 270–348. The review in question is abundantly fortified by affidavits, letters, etc.,

[1] James Hardie, in his *History of New York City*, published in 1827, in speaking of this epidemic, says: "Although several of the inhabitants of that village (Brooklyn) had come over to this city, and died in the houses of their friends, our Board of Health knew of no instance in which it proved contagious to those who attended them. We remained exempt from pestilence this season." New York had been visited by the fever during the previous year 1803.

September 28th. The common council of New York let to Hez. B. Pierrepont the grant of water right in front of his property.

October 15. The *First Baptist Church in Brooklyn*, was incorporated.

---

and presents a complete and overwhelming refutation of the opinion which was persistently maintained by Dr. John R. B. Rodgers the health officer, Dr. Miller, resident physician, and others of the New York faculty, to the effect that the epidemic was of purely *local* origin.

After the epidemic of 1805, shipping from foreign ports, where the yellow fever prevailed, were not permitted to come alongside the New York wharves or within three hundred yards thereof; and, after that date, the Brooklyn shores were resorted to by such vessels, as a consequence of which the village was visited (in 1809 and 1823) with two similar epidemics, while New York remained totally exempt.

The yellow fever epidemic which prevailed in Brooklyn during the summer of 1809, was alluded to in our first volume (page 391, 392), but, as the opportunities of information which we have since enjoyed have compelled us to change our opinion as to *its cause*, and as it is a matter of no small interest to many of our readers, we take the liberty of giving a more extended history of it.

The ship *Concordia*, Captain Coffin, sailed from Havana about the beginning of June, at which time the yellow fever was raging there; arrived at the New York quarantine on the 17th of the same month; and having complied with the usual regulations, was permitted to come up to the city and anchored in the East river; after which she hauled into Sands's lower dock, at Brooklyn, about half way between the Old (Fulton) and New (Catharine) ferries. On the 29th, Nathaniel Muller, one, of the crew, who had been discharged and gone over to New York a few days before, returned sick to the ship at Brooklyn, and from thence was conveyed, on the 30th, to a boarding house, near by, where he died the next day. Immediately after this, the Concordia's hold was washed and purified with vinegar, from which it is to be inferred that the ship's officer suspected the malignant nature of Muller's disease, and, indeed, we have the affidavits of the landlady and another person to the effect that Muller, during his brief illness, declared to them his belief that "*he had* the fever, *which he had brought with him from the Havanna.*" By the 12th of July, several cases of the disease had occurred, and on the 26th the vessel returned to quarantine, by order of the Board of Health.

The case of Mrs. Spence, a sailor's washerwoman, who lived in one of the dwelling houses nearest the Concordia, and who died on the 10th of July, was the first which excited particular alarm in the village. Even then the idea that the disease, which was daily becoming so fatal and so alarming, could be the yellow fever was scouted by interested parties, and by many among the medical faculty who maintained the theory of its domestic origin.

These parties, for a considerable period, denied even that it was any epidemic whatever; it was the common bilious remittent; it was only the dysentery. *Heat, moisture* and *filth* were in their opinion, the grand propagandists of yellow fever in this country, but the two former, in this case, failed to account for its exist-

On the 13th of *November*, due notice was given of application to the legislature for the incorporation of a Long Island Banking company.

---

ence here, since the city of New York, only separated by a river of eight hundred yards in width, was exposed to the same heat, and to the same moisture, and yet remained entirely exempt from the disease. So, when, at length, facts could no longer be ignored, and the existence of yellow fever at Brooklyn was admitted by nearly everybody, these domestic origin theorists (prominent among whom was Dr. Rodgers, the health officer, through whose remissness the Concordia had been allowed to leave the quarantine), having failed to prove that *heat* and *moisture* were its causes, fell back on *filth* as their last stand, and endeavored to prove that Brooklyn was a more filthy place than New York (?), and that nothing but an extraordinary assemblage and concentration of nuisances in Brooklyn, could account for the prevalence of this disease in a season of such *unprecedented mildness.* Having pronounced this decision, they set about procuring the evidence, which should support it, and sent a young gentleman of the profession over to Brooklyn upon an errand of discovery. Upon his statements, addressed to the health officer, that gentleman issued a report, charging upon the village sundry nuisances in the neighborhood of Front, Dock, Water, and Main streets, which, in his opinion, were full and sufficient causes of all the sickness in those localities. The Board of Health of New York, however, do not seem to have fully accepted his views as conclusive, and at their request Dr. John D. Gillespie, of New York, on the 5th of June, 1810, submitted a report on the yellow fever, which prevailed at Brooklyn, in the summer of 1809, and which was published in the *Am. Med. and Phil. Register* for 1810 (pp. 101–109). This elicited a rejoinder from Dr. Rodgers, which appeared in the *New York Med. and Phil. Journal and Review;* and this again was replied to, at great length, by Dr. Gillespie in the *Am. Med. and Phil. Reg.*, for 1810 (pp. 253–283), the summing up of the controversy being given by the editors of that journal. Without going into the details (which our space will not permit) of the arguments *pro* and *con*, we may simply state that Dr. Rodgers and the domestic origin party seem to have been most signally foiled at every point, in their attempt to foist the odium of the pestilence of 1809 upon the local causes of the village of Brooklyn. Dr. Gillespie, with courtesy, but with a directness which allowed no evasion, controverted each of their specific statements, fortified his own positions by irrefragible testimony and documents, and finally turned the tables on his opponents, by submitting to their consideration certain questions, which they could not answer, without involving themselves in unending inconsistencies and contradictions. Meanwhile, as already mentioned (vol. I, p. 391), a wordy newspaper war had arisen among physicians of this village, which, however, speedily degenerated into a disgraceful exchange of personalities of the grossest character.

Of the twenty-eight victims of the disease in Brooklyn, 15 were Americans, 12 Irish and English, and 1 German.[1]

[1] See *Long Island Star*, Nov. 2d, 9th, 16th, 23d, and 30th; Aug. 3d, 17th, 24th; Sept. 11th, and 18th, for various reports, communications, etc., on this epidemic.

Improvements began to be the order of the day in the hitherto quiet little village. Previous to this period it had been a village only in name; in extent, but a mile square; and in population, numbering merely a few thousand. Its streets were poorly regulated, unpaved, unlighted, without sidewalks. It had no market, no watch, a police without organization, and consequently inefficient; an apology for a fire department consisting of a superannuated engine or two, a couple of hooks and a few ladders; and a government without the power or the will to properly enforce its ordinances. Those whose business called them abroad in the night, were obliged to carry their own lanterns, and cautiously to pick their winding way through streets well nigh impassable from mud and mire.

The state of morals, likewise, was then on a par with the condition of the streets, and a few wild young men, some of whom subsequently closed their careers by ignominious punishments, and others of whom have long ago filled the drunkard's grave, not infrequently disturbed the peaceful stillness of the village with their nightly revels."[1]

From this unpromising state of affairs, Brooklyn now began to arouse itself, and to put on the earnestness which betokened a new life, and a more glorious future.

Hicks street was regulated and arched from Orange to Middagh streets, and its side gutters paved from Cranberry to Middagh streets. On Nassau street, the hill was scraped down, regulated and arched from Washington to Jay streets; and Pearl street was cut through McKenzie's hill. Washington street, hitherto almost impassible from the deep gullies caused by heavy rains, was regulated and paved from Sands to Water streets; and an ordinance was passed by the trustees, requiring the owners, or occupants of houses and property on Cranberry, Middagh, Hicks and Nassau streets, to make *sidewalks* in front of said property, within thirty days, under penalty of five dollars for every week's delay.

---

[1] In 1820, the following lines were published in the *Long Island Star,* and are copied into one of Mr. Gabriel Furman's manuscript volumes, accompanied with the recorded testimony of that gentleman, that they exhibit what was then a very correct view of the state of society among the young men in the village of Brooklyn. "It has very much improved since" says he, "but not before dissipation had actually

Furman's Manuscript also preserves a list of *brick and stone* buildings, erected in the village, between June 1st, 1823, and January 1st,1824, among which were two three-story brick stores and dwelling houses, on the west side of Fulton street, opposite its junction with Main street, erected by Dr. Charles Ball. These were the *first three-story* brick dwellings built in Brooklyn—although Mr. Losee Van Nostrand, two or three years previously, had built two three-story *brick front* houses on Fulton street. A new ropewalk adjoining that of Joshua Sands, on Sands street, near the Wallabout bridge, with a small brick building near the centre, by Tucker & Carter; a brick glass factory on the shore near District street, by J. L. Gilliland, and a line of six three-story fire proof brick storehouses in the Navy Yard.

---

destroyed both in reputation and life, three-fourths of the prominent young men of that day. This is a deplorable picture, but I know it to be a true one, for those young men preceded me in life but a very few years, and might be called, many of them, my contemporaries. I knew them all."

FOR THE LONG ISLAND STAR.

To the Editor.

Dear Sir, I hope your goodness will excuse,
This humble effort of a female pen;
And trust you can't ungallantly refuse,
To print it for those bipeds, call'd *young men.*

For surely, Sir, this village oft presents,
A strange anomaly as e'er was known;
Ladies all lonely! while the dandy *gents*,
Sit at the porter house, or stroll the town!

Alas the age! when ladies' sparkling eyes,
No more can charm like sparkling ale and beer;
"O tempora!" must lover's fragrant sighs,
Have lesser fragrance than the fam'd segar?

No more th' inviting circle they regard,
Where wit and beauty spread a sweet repast;
Oysters and terrapins usurp the board!
Exalted pleasures!—most refined taste!

What are the rising prospects of the land,
When female charms no more can "wake the soul;"
What are our *hopes*, when many a youthful band,
Pay early court to pleasure's poisoning bowl?

JULIA.

The village of Brooklyn, at the close of the year 1823, contained 113 stone, brick and brick front buildings. During the year 1823, also, 122 *frame* dwelling houses were erected within the village, mainly on Hicks, Orange, Henry, Cranberry, Middagh, Water, Adams, Sands, York, Concord, Jay and Nassau streets.

The *York Street Methodist Episcopal Church* was organized.

1824. This year Brooklyn's career of progress may be said to have fully commenced. Awaking suddenly, as it were, to an appreciation of the resources and advantages which they possessed, and flattered by the evidences of prosperity everywhere apparent, its inhabitants agitated great improvements. Streets and roads, hitherto considered as good enough, were now voted to be insufficient, and nuisances; and as vast mounds of earth vanished before the steady approach of pick and spade, new avenues and streets, nearly all of which were regulated and paved, sprang into existence with the suddenness of magic. Here and there, also, at private expense, a lamp was hung out, serving only to make darkness more grimly visible; and the imperfect water courses which ran through the *middle* of the streets, were replaced by carefully constructed *side gutters.* A commodious market was built, a village watch was organized, a municipal court established, and the efficient force of the fire department nearly doubled. More attention was paid to everything relating to the village government, and the village authorities, whose functions had previously been quite limited, were reassured by the growing public interest, and strengthened by various subsequent acts of legislation, so that their action became gradually more decided and efficient. On every side buildings arose of higher architectural pretensions and beauty than those which had preceded them; and, led on by the enterprise of Dr. Charles Ball, followed by Z. Lewis, A. Van Sinderen, and others, the village began to assume a more elegant and creditable appearance. Everywhere the evidences abounded that the hitherto shiftless stand-still village was too near the heart of the leviathan metropolis, not to feel its throb, and be quickened by the rush of the life current that circulated through its immense arteries.

From this period (1824) the march of the village was impetuously forward, never stopping, never wavering till its rapid career culminated in its incorporation, ten years later, as a *city*. In quick succession, one street after another was opened, graded, paved and lighted; and radiating countrywards in every direction from the Fulton Ferry, were daily increasing evidences that there was a reality and a soundness in all this prosperity, that fully attested its permanence. It becomes now our pleasant duty to examine, in detail, the successive steps by which the village gave signs of a renewed healthy action, and by which it rapidly rose into notice.

In January, the annual message of Governor Joseph C. Yates calls attention to the fact that the safety and value of the harbor of New York is seriously impaired by the extension of improvements into the East river, on the Long Island side, under grants from the corporation; and suggests the appointment of a commission "to ascertain and prescribe the extent beyond which no encroachments in future shall be permitted, and to which grants for the right of soil shall be hereafter limited," etc.

Brooklyn, at this time, shared the Greek mania which possessed the land; committees were appointed, collections taken in the churches and schools, concerts held, and subscriptions circulated, through which instrumentalities the good people of the village contributed the respectable sum of $440.74, to the relief of the Grecian patriots.

January 6th. Brooklyn is designated, in a report of Samuel L. Southard, Esq., secretary of the navy, as one of the places at which the ten *first* class navy yards were recommended to be established.

On the 31st of this month, also, in the assembly of the state of New York, William Furman, Esq., member from Kings county, presented the petition for the *Long Island Bank*, which was to be located in the village of Brooklyn. And on the 5th of February, ensuing, the standing committee of banks and insurance companies reported on the above petition, that having "duly examined the merits of the application, and having learned from different sources, that the incorporated part of the town of Brooklyn contains rising of 7,000 inhabitants; that the extensive commercial, manufacturing and mechanical business transacted there, render it fully capable of sustaining a bank, and being the third town, in point of population, in this state, and being destitute of an incorporation, either for banking or insurance," they had prepared and begged leave to introduce a bill for the incorporation of said bank.[1]

"At a large and respectable meeting of the citizens of the town of Brooklyn," continues the report, "it was declared, without a dissenting voice, that they need a bank. Such is the expression of the county, and it is presumed no one will doubt their ability to sustain it. Brooklyn is situated opposite New York, separated by a river nearly a mile in width. By far the largest number of the business men of Brooklyn meriting and requiring temporary loans, and a place of deposit, are wholly unknown to the banks of New York. To become so, requires an account with some bank, and frequent deposits and an endorser in New York, which in most cases is impracticable and wholly inconvenient. Brooklyn is now the *third* town in the state, and the *sixteenth* in the United

---

[1] The statement subjoined to this report, presents the following statistical information concerning the village:

The town of Brooklyn, contained, in 1820,..........7,175 inhabitants.
" " " in 1814, ...3,805 "

Increase in six years,.....................3,370

It is generally believed there are now 9,000 inhabitants. According to the census of 1820, more than 6,000 resided in one incorporated district of a mile square, situated on the margin of the East river opposite New York. The village is healthy, and possesses many local advantages. The margin of the river is improved by extensive wharves and storehouses, that invite a large number of shipping. In 1822, ten large fire-proof warehouses were built, fifty dwelling houses, two extensive white lead manufactories, that cost from fifteen to twenty thousand dollars each. During the past year two large brick churches, and one frame one, 164 dwelling houses, an extensive glass manufactory, a wool and cotton card manufactory,[1] and

[1] From February 16, 1823, to February 15, 1824, there was inspected in the county of Kings 5,825 barrels of superfine flour; 260 barrels of fine flour; and 124 hogsheads of corn meal.

The most, if not all, of this flour and meal was manufactured in the town of Brooklyn, where there were at this time seven water mills, owned by John C. Freecke, Jordan Coles, Nehemiah Denton, the heirs of John Cornell, deceased, the heirs of Nicholas Luqueer, deceased, Thorne Carpenter and —— Van Dyke; and two wind mills, owned by Isaac Cornell, and Hezekiah B. Pierrepont. This last mentioned one, however, at this time did little or no business.

States, and it is fair to conclude that in less than five years, it will be the *second*."

This able presentation of the claims of Brooklyn was not thrown away upon the assembly, who passed the required act of incorporation on the 23d of March, by a vote of ninety-one to twenty-two; it being the largest vote, considering the state of the house, that had been given to any bank incorporation bill during the season. On the 1st of April following the bill passed the senate by a vote of twenty-six to four, and the same day received the governor's sanction, and became a law of the state. The capital of the bank was to be $300,000 in shares of $50 each, and the institution was not to go into operation until twelve and a half per cent of the capital was paid. Of the thirteen directors, two-thirds were to be residents of Brooklyn. Should they refuse at any time during regular bank hours to redeem their notes in specie, the charter was to be forfeited. The following persons were named in the bill as directors, viz: Leffert Lefferts, Jehiel Jagger, John C. Freecke, John C. Vanderveer, Jordan Coles, Silas Butler, Fanning C. Tucker, Jacob Hicks, Henry Waring, Nehemiah Denton, Elkanah Doolittle, Thomas Everit, Jr., and George Little. At the first meeting of this board, April 6, 1824, Leffert Lefferts, Esq., was unanimously elected president of the bank, and a committee

---

ten stores was built. One large brick church is building, and another contracting for. The village now contains seven churches, eight ropewalks, seven distilleries, two chain cable manufactories, two tanneries, two extensive white lead manufactories, one glass factory, one floor cloth ditto, one card ditto, one pocket book ditto, one comb ditto, one seal skin ditto, seven tide and two wind mills, an extensive establishment for the preparation of drugs, and articles required for dyeing and manufacturing, conducted by Dr. Noyes, late professor of Hamilton College, seventy grocery and dry goods stores, two printing establishments, lumber and wood yards, master masons and carpenters.

The ropewalks manufacture 1,130 tons of cordage annually, at an expenditure of $260,000, and employ 200 persons. The distilleries consume, on an average, 780 bushels of grain per day, at an expense of $368,200 per annum. The seal skin factory employs 60 men; pocket book factory 40 persons; comb factory 20. The card factory will employ 300 persons; and other branches in all 400 to 500 persons. Immense quantities of naval stores, hemp, cotton, India goods, hides, provisions and lumber, are stored at Brooklyn. The county of Kings pays annually into the treasury of the state, more than any other county of its size, cities excepted, and hitherto has received no favor from the legislature."

was appointed to attend to its concerns. Subscription books were opened, on the 3d of May, at the banking house, No. 5 Front street, under the direction of a committee of the directors, consisting of Silas Butler, Jordan Coles, F. C. Tucker, John C. Vanderveer, and John C. Freecke, and a *surplus* of about one million and a half was subscribed for. The capital stock, $300,000; $10 required to be paid in at the time of subscribing, on each share taken. On the 3d of August following, the notes of the bank were first put in circulation.

Gabriel Furman, Esq., subsequently speaking of the Long Island Bank, says " an error will not be committed in saying that the growth and prosperity of Brooklyn have been largely promoted by this bank. It has been in fact, as its name imports, a *Long Island* bank, and has always been an institution prized and cherished by the inhabitants of the island counties. It has been invariably conducted with liberality, impartiality and integrity. It is well known that during the various periods of financial pressure and embarrassments, its aid has always been uniformly and amply extended to the mechanics, manufacturers and tradesmen, who compose the business population of Brooklyn; and it is the depository to a large extent of the funds of the farmers and others of the island. The petitioners for the renewal of its charter, in January, 1839, earnestly request the same, and state that they would regard an omission to do so, and the consequent withdrawal of its means from the industry of the place, as a serious calamity to the city of Brooklyn, and as injurious to the business of the island generally. It is further noticeable that on the Queens county petition for its renewal, were fifty-two names, viz: merchants fourteen, farmers thirteen, mechanics twenty, justices of the peace, town clerks and attorneys, five."[1]

March 4th. In senate of the state of New York, John Lefferts, Esq., brought in a bill to establish a *Board of Health* in the village of Brooklyn,[2] and also an act to amend an act to incorporate the said village, both of which bills were passed by the legislature on on the 9th of April, following.

---

[1] *Furman's Manuscripts*, x, 282.

[2] By this act the trustees of the village were constituted a Board of Health, the president and clerk being *ex officio* president and clerk of the Board of Health. The president's salary was $150, and a health physician appointed by the board

March 20th. In the senate a petition was presented from Henry Stanton and others for an act of incorporation of a fire insurance company with a capital of $150,000 (divided into six thousand shares of $25 each) to be located in the village of Brooklyn. It was incorporated April 3d, and on the 21st of May ensuing the *Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company* commenced business at their office on the north-west corner of Front and Dock streets in the village of Brooklyn; William Furman, president, and Freeman Hopkins, secretary.

March 21st. In the district school room of the village, William C. Hawley was ordained pastor over the First Baptist church in the place. This may be considered as the establishment of the Baptist church in the village of Brooklyn.

On the 31st of the same month, the corner-stone was laid for a new Episcopal church, about to be erected on Washington street, in the rear of the former edifice, which then fronted on Sands street.[1]

---

received $200 per annum. The duties of the board related to the general conservation of the health of the village.

"As early as 1809, during the prevalence of the yellow fever in this town, the inhabitants met together in consequence of repeated solicitations from the common council of New York, and after stating in their proceedings, that reports prevailed that disease exists to an alarming extent in the town of Brooklyn, they appointed the following gentlemen a committee for the purpose of inquiring into the state of the health of the inhabitants of said town, and to act as the case in their opinion may require, viz: William Furman, John Garrison, Burdet Stryker, Henry Stanton, and Andrew Mercein." A sum of money was raised by subscription to meet the expenses of this committee.

In the year 1819, the trustees, although not strictly invested with power, yet feeling the necessity of acting with some degree of energy, in order to quiet the fears of the inhabitants, arising from reports of the existence of a pestilential disease in New York, published an address; in which they state, that "during this season of alarm, they have not been unmindful of that part of their duty incumbent on them as a Board of Health for the village," and that "measures have been taken to obtain from time to time, a report of the state of health throughout the village, that the inhabitants may be early apprised of any change affecting their welfare.—*Furman's Notes*, p. 72.

[1] Furman says (*Manuscripts*, vol. III, p. 80), that "There was considerable excitement and difference of opinion in this congregation, relative to the location of their

During the winter and spring of this year, several cases of varioloid occurred in the town, and also many cases of the real small-pox. At the same time the varioloid and small-pox prevailed quite extensively in the city of New York.

April. The town of Brooklyn, outside of the village, contained 160 dwelling houses, 31 of which were of stone and brick fronts, and the remainder of wood. The town of Brooklyn, *including* the village, contained the following number of houses:

Village, March, 1821,	626
" Increase to January, 1823,	82
" " April, 1824,	157
	865
To which add the number of houses in the *town*,	160
	1025

Of which 1,025, 146 were of stone or brick, and the remainder of wood.[1]

May 19th. The Bank Coffee House, No. 27 Fulton street, was opened by a ball; the house was at that time the most elegant affair of the kind in the village, being handsomely furnished and its walls painted in landscape.

May 20th. Alden Spooner, publisher of the *Star*, proposes to issue that sheet twice a week. In his prospectus he says, "The great increase in the population and business of Brooklyn, call for corresponding changes in the various establishments which con-

---

new church. A writer, under the signature of A Pewholder, recommended taking down the old church and erecting the new one on its site. The rector, Henry U. Onderdonk, wrote a circular in opposition to the Pewholder, and wished the new church erected at the rear of the old one. The Pewholder answered the Rev. gentleman, and requested the pewholders to hold a meeting on the subject. Mr. Onderdonk, finding that no time was to be lost, gave notice from the pulpit the next day after the appearance of the Pewholder's answer, being the sabbath, that the corner stone would be laid this day."

[1] *Furman's Manuscript Notes,* which also supplies the following details:

On the *Turnpike road,* from the village line to the junction of the Jamaica and Flatbush roads, *thirty* houses, of which *two* were stone, *one* brick front and the remainder wood. On the *Gowanus lane,* from the Brooklyn, Jamaica and Flatbush turnpike road to the Mill road, *thirteen* houses, *one* of which was stone, the remainder wood. On the *Mill road,* from Gowanus lane to Red Hook lane, *thirteen* houses, tribute to our interest, and our enjoyments." He proposed, as soon as three hundred subscribers could be obtained, to issue the *Star* twice a week, printed on a half sheet of its present size, at $3.50 per annum, and also to continue the weekly issue of the paper as heretofore.

Not least among the improvements, which indicated that the hitherto shiftless village had woke up, was the care which the authorities began to exhibit for the removal of nuisances, the cleansing of the streets, and other measures pertaining to the health, appearance and welfare of the place. On the 19th of May, the trustees passed a law to regulate the cleansing of Fulton, Main, Front, Water, Elizabeth and Doughty streets, which required that said streets should be swept, and the dirt and rubbish collected in heaps every Tuesday and Friday morning, between the first day of April and the first day of December, before ten o'clock, under the penalty of $2, for every offense. Later in the season, the following notice appeared in the columns of the *Star* "The inhabitants of Fulton street, Main street, Front street and Water street, are informed that a cart will pass through said streets every Wednesday morning and Saturday morning, between the hours of 9 and 11, for the purpose of receiving their kitchen garbage. A bell will be rung by the driver of the said cart to give the inhabitants notice of its approach. N. B. The inhabitants of the above named streets are particularly requested to sprinkle the pavement in front of their houses, immediately before sweeping. By order of the board of trustees. John Dikeman, clerk, Brooklyn, July 1, 1824."

---

all of wood. On the *Red Hook lane,* and adjoining, *sixteen* houses, all of wood. Along the *shore* of the East river and on the hill to the south of the village of Brooklyn, *ten* houses, all of wood. On the *Flatbush turnpike road,* from its junction with the Jamaica turnpike road to the town line, *eight* houses, all of wood. On the lane leading from Flatbush turnpike road to Gowanus (*post road*), *one* house of wood. On the *Jamaica turnpike road,* from its junction with the Flatbush turnpike road to the town line, *twenty-six* houses, *six* of which were stone, *one* brick front and the rest wood. On the *Bushwick road,* from the village line to the town line, *thirteen* houses, *five* of which were stone. On the *road towards Williamsburgh,* along the shore of the Wallabout bay to the town line, were *nine* houses, *five* of which were stone, the remainder wood. On the *Gowanus road,* to the bounds of the town, were *fifteen* houses, *six* of which were stone. In other parts of the town, not enumerated above, were *six* houses, *four* of which were stone and the rest wood.

May, 1824. The following notice appeared first in the *Long Island Patriot*, printed in Brooklyn; in the *National Advocate*, of New York; and subsequently in the village *Star*. Its resuscitation here is due to the fact that the project originated in Brooklyn, where it was designed to locate the bank. As a *straw* showing the drift of the popular current of enterprise and speculation which seemed to be filling the sails of the now active little village, it is by no means uninteresting, although it seems to have been abortive in results.

> NOTICE IS HEREBY GIVEN, that application will be made to the legislature, at their next session, for an act of incorporation for the *Long Island Canal Company*, for the purpose of making a canal on the south side of the island, from Gravesend bay to Jamaica bay, and from thence across Rockaway to the Great South bay, and from thence to Canoe place, or Southampton bay; and further, if thought practicable by the directors of the company, to have permission, by a side cut, to connect Canoe place or Southampton bay, with the Sagharbor or Southold bay, and also, to connect Southampton bay with Micox or Sagg bay; and further to continue to Georgian pond, in the town of Easthampton, with a capital of five hundred thousand dollars, with the privilege of making use of any surplus funds in banking operations. New York, May 26th, 1824.

In May, also, a distillery for the manufacture of spirits of turpentine, having a high pressure steam engine and an iron boiler, was erected at the corner of York and Adams streets, by David T. Cooper, Esq.

June 10th. A special town meeting was held agreeable to the request of twelve freeholders, at the house of J. F. L. Duflon, for the purpose of hearing the report of a committee appointed at the last annual town meeting, to view and determine upon a suitable location for a poorhouse and hospital. The committee reported that they had examined two small farms, one situated near Fort Greene, within a mile of the village, containing nineteen and three-fourth acres, and offered for $3,750; the other located near the toll gate at the junction of the Gowanus road and the Flatbush turnpike, containing twenty-five acres, and offered for $5,000. The majority of the committee concurred in advising the purchase of the first named farm near Fort Greene for the following reasons: 1*st*, its proximity to the village, which was considered as "very important as respects carting for the establishment, and particularly the carting of wood, for the poor families of the village." 2*d*. It was conveniently near the village "on account of funerals." 3*d*. On account of the excellent landing at the foot of the Wallabout bridge. 4*th*. The land was capable of cultivation, or of some profitable improvement, possessing a fine and airy situation, and a good well of water. Two of the committee entered a minority report, objecting to the purchase of the Fort Greene property, because it was contiguous to six powder magazines, and contained, in their opinion, less tillable ground than the other site. At an adjourned town meeting held on the 12th of July, the committee reported that they had effected the purchase of the Fort Greene property, from Leffert Lefferts, Esq.

At the same meeting a committee which had been appointed on the 10th of June, previous, to examine the condition of the powder magazines on Fort Greene, with special reference to the danger to be apprehended from their proximity to the newly purchased site for the alms house, etc., reported that they had carefully examined the magazines kept by Messrs. Gerard and Stanton, five in number, containing respectively 250, 600, 800, 100, 1,600; in all 3,350 casks of powder. These were found in creditable repair and condition. The sixth and largest magazine, belonging to the United States, could not be examined. The committee expressed their unanimous opinion, that great danger was to be apprehended from an explosion on Fort Greene, which might prove injurious, not only to the public buildings, but to the village of Brooklyn, which was beginning to extend in that direction, as also, to the village of Bedford. In accordance with this report, the meeting passed a resolution to petition the legislature, for the passage of an act forbidding the storage of gunpowder at Fort Greene.

June 12. The new Methodist chapel on York street was consecrated. It was a neat wood edifice, erected during the previous spring, for the accommodation of the members of that denomination residing near the Navy Yard.

June 17th. James Foster, of Jamaica, Jeremiah Lott, of Flatbush, Ralph Malbone, Joseph Moser and Lossee Van Nostrand of the village of Brooklyn, gave public notice, in the *Long Island Star*, that they, in behalf of themselves and associates, intended to make application to the legislature, for an act of incorporation with banking privileges, by the name and style of the *Long Island Farmers and Mechanics' Bank*, with a capital of $400,000, with privilege to increase the same to $600,000. The said bank to be located in the village of Brooklyn.

On the 22d of the same month, at a meeting of the mechanics of Brooklyn, at the Bank Coffee House, measures were adopted for the formation of a *Mechanics' Society* in the village.

During this month several improvements were made in the village. Orange street was opened into Fulton street, by taking down the small, ancient wooden dwelling house No. 153 Fulton street. Water street, between Main and Washington, and which was previously an almost impassable slough, was raised and regulated. Prospect street was also regulated, "Here the hills literally bow their heads, and the valleys are exalted." The rocks in the vicinity of this street, formerly an incumbrance on the ground, were blasted and converted into building stone; and the ground on the hills, before considered of little account, became so valuable, that boards were erected thereon inscribed, "All persons are forbid taking any of this earth."

This month also, Jethro Mitchell & Co. purchased H. B. Pierrepont's distillery near the junction of Furman and Joralemon streets, and converted the same into a spermaceti manufactory.

The *third* Directory of the village of Brooklyn, this month published by Alden Spooner, at the office of the *Long Island Star*, No. 50 Fulton street, contains 1,329 names, being an increase of 122 over those contained in the directory for 1823.

On the 1st of July, there were lying at the wharves in the village, 8 ships, 6 hermaphrodite brigs, 10 brigs, 20 schooners, 12 sloops. Total 56, being 17 more than on July 1, 1823. In the Navy Yard were also 10 vessels.

July 1st. Joseph Sprague and Alden Spooner gave public notice by advertisement in the *Long Island Star* that they, in behalf of themselves and their associates, would make application to the legislature of the state at their next session for an act of incorporation under the style of *The Brooklyn Gas Light Company*, with a capital of $150,000, for the purpose of lighting streets, dwellings and manufactories with gas.

Mr. Sprague has left, in his *Manuscript Autobiography*, an interesting account of the inception of this enterprise. "About this time," says he, "Alden Spooner and myself, for amusement, made application for a Gas Light Company, fully aware that Brooklyn could not then sustain it. We inserted a notice for it, without the least thought of asking the legislature to grant it, desirous only to create a little sensation. After our notice appeared, another set of gentlemen demanded a withdrawal of it, asserting that they only were the rightful heirs to such a privilege, and declaring that they would drive us from the field.[1] Such impertinence roused our yankee blood to yield to no such demand; believing that as citizens we had rights. The demand being persisted in, it was determined that I should go to Albany for a charter, which I did; and without delay, procured its passage through the assembly, when the other gentlemen appeared, with counsel, and assured me that I might go home. Knowing that *one* charter could not be sustained, and *two* much less, I allowed them to pass their bill through the assembly. We were now both in the senate, where I had enough friends, clearly ascertained, by whose advice I was warranted in saying to the other gentlemen that they might go home with their counsel. They finally retired, while I remained, adding by agreement a part of them as directors, and thus passed the bill that is now giving light to Brooklyn. The stock was all taken up and immediately sold at ten per cent advance, such being the misguided zeal, at that time, for any kind of stocks. It was amusing to see the estimation of directors, claiming great sagacity in counting up the fortunes to be made by *gas!* It was doubly amusing to witness the infatuated dignity of the directors in their meetings, over a worthless charter, yet to them a rich *placer* of gold. The directors monopolized nearly all the stock, and resolved that no one should sell a share without the consent of the board. Various committees were put in motion, lots bought for gas works, plans and estimates examined, until the great men of the day became convinced that to proceed would end in *something more than gas.* At this juncture, I moved that the money paid in be refunded, and all operations discontinued until the increase of Brooklyn should afford a reasonable prospect of supporting a gas company, which suggestion was adopted, and the money honestly returned with interest."

---

[1] "NOTICE IS HEREBY GIVEN, that application will be made to the legislature of this state at the next, or the succeeding session for an act of incorporation to be styled The Gas Light Company, with a capital of *one hundred thousand dollars*, for the purpose of lighting streets, manufactories, dwellings, stables, etc., in the town of Brooklyn; and when the annual income shall exceed 8 per cent, one-half of such excess shall go to the support of the poor of said town."—*Long Island Patriot*, July 8, 1824.

July. During this month, an iron foundery was established on Water street, between Fulton and Dock streets, by Alexander Birbeck, being the first iron foundery in the village of Brooklyn.

On the 8th of the same month, John Garrison, John G. Murphy, Samuel Smith, Tunis Joralemon, Isaac Moser, George Smith, John Moon, Rodman Bowne and Evert Barkeloo gave public notice, in the columns of the *Long Island Patriot*, of their intention to apply to the legislature for an act of incorporation with banking privileges, under the style of the *Nassau Bank*, with a capital of $300,000, the bank to be located in the village of Brooklyn.

On Wednesday, August 10th, Lafayette visited Brooklyn, examined the war steamer Fulton, at Williamsburgh, and visited the navy yard, where on the deck of the Washington, '74, he was introduced to the board of trustees and a large number of the citizens of Brooklyn, including a numerous concourse of ladies.

The *Brooklyn Insurance Company* was chartered this year.

This year, 1824, the real estate in this town was assessed at $2,111,390, and the personal estate at $488,690; being considerably more than one-half of the whole value of the county, the state, county and town tax, of which amounts to $6,497.71. At this period there are in the village 1,149 taxable persons, and the village tax amounts to $2,625.76, averaging about $2.29 each taxable person. This village tax includes $450, raised to meet the expenses of the board of health, and is exclusive of all local assessments for opening and improving streets, etc.

The receipts of the overseers of the poor of this town, for the year 1823, amounted to $3,108.77, and their expenditures to $3,469.49, leaving a balance of $360.72, against the town.[1]

During the year 1824, 143 frame dwelling houses were built in the village.

1825. January. A portion of the ground near Fort Greene, lately purchased by the town of Brooklyn, was appropriated for a cemetery, and divided into convenient parcels, which were allotted to the different religious denominations of the town, viz: Dutch Reformed, Friends, Presbyterians, Roman Catholic, Methodist Episcopalian, Universalist, Episcopalian, Baptist, and a Common Plot.[2]

On the 21st of this month, a public meeting was held at Duflon's, and a committee appointed to secure the removal of the county courts and jail, from Flatbush to Brooklyn.

February 25th. A flag stone walk was laid from the gate of the Old or Fulton Ferry, to the Steamboat Hotel,[3] a large wooden building, which stood on the easterly corner of Fulton and Water streets in Brooklyn. It was the *first walk ever laid to the ferry.*

June. Several sales of real estate, about this time, indicate the rapidly growing value of Brooklyn property, especially that of the site of the old alms house, on Nassau street. The foundation of the Apprentices' Library in Cranberry street (the present arsenal), was laid this season. The five trustees of the village held their meetings in a room over a grocery store (about No. 23), within a few doors of Fulton Ferry. "It was the custom," says the late Mayor Sprague, one of the trustees, "as soon as the board assembled, to order decanters of rum, brandy, gin, and crackers and cheese. At the close of the year there was an animated discussion, whether we five trustees should eat a supper of oysters at the public expense. It was finally decided to be not only impolitic, but illegal, and so we ate at our own expense, of *one shilling each.*" Corporation proceedings were now first published in the

---

[1] *Furman's Notes,* 90. [2] See, also, *Brooklyn Eagle,* January 25th, 26th, 29th, 1844.

[3] *Ante,* 50.

Star, but a motion to allow the editors to copy the *minutes* of the board for publication, was *negatived.*

A committee of the town reported favorably to the extension of Tillary street, from the village line to the town property on the easterly side of the meadows.

The great event of the 4th of July, this year, was the laying of the corner-stone of the new Apprentices' Library, by the great and revered General Lafayette. The day was fine, and a large and imposing procession took place, together with an address by Clarence D. Sackett, Esq.[1]

The village population at this time, according to the census, was 8,800, of which 4,476 were males, being a gain since 1820, of 3,590.

The spot for erection of the long promised, but yet unbuilt market, was selected in James street.

On the 5th of December, a public meeting was held for the purpose of considering a bill proposed by a committee for the organization of a *city government.* It was *rejected* by the meeting, which was adjourned for *twenty-one years.*

The Brooklyn White Lead Company, the oldest of the city, or state, was established by the brothers Graham.

1826. The progress of the village, during this year continued to afford ample proof of the earnest, buoyant spirit which animated its citizens. They seemed fully awake to all the requirements of the times, and unceasingly active in the development of resources and the prosecution of all needed improvements.

A new steamboat, being the third, was placed on the Fulton Ferry (Feb. 9th), and during the month of March, measures were taken which resulted, in June following, in the granting of a *New South Ferry* at Pierrepont's dock. In August, a new steamboat ferry was put in operation between Jackson street, Brooklyn, and Walnut street, New York. In March, also, was submitted to the legislature, a project for the creation of a *Long Island Canal.*

In February, a former project for removing the Court House and Jail from Flatbush to Brooklyn, was renewed; and in March the new market was commenced in James street, being completed and in successful operation about the last of November. This market, together with other village improvements, was paid for by a village stock created for the purpose in June of the same year.

---

[1] See, also, Sketch of the Apprentices' Library in this volume.

March 30th. Erastus Worthington succeeded Thomas King, as postmaster.[1]

On the 3d of May, the board of trustees assembled for the first time in the new and recently finished Apprentices' Library building in Cranberry street. The erection of this edifice seems to have given a considerable impetus to the literary interests of the village, as we find that, in August, a library was being collected for colored people; and in November following, a free reading and conversation room was established in the basement of the Library building. On the 4th of July, also, the apprentices and school children of the village, went in procession to the Library where an appropriate address was delivered by Joseph Hegemen, and a banner presented to them by the president of the institution. On the same day, also, the military, fire department and civic societies paraded on the occasion of the dedication of a building devoted to the Sunday School and located in Prospect street (Nos. 33 and 35) near Adams. It was built of wood, two stories high, 32 by 50 feet (see page 29, and Appendix I, of this volume).

On the 9th of May, the corner-stone of St. John's (Episcopal) church was laid; and on the 12th of October, the new Baptist meeting house in Pearl, between Nassau and Concord streets was first opened for public use. On the 11th of the same month, occurred the installation of the Nassau Chapter of Free and Accepted Masons.

On the first of May, an election took place under the provisions of the amended village act, which gave two trustees to each of the five districts, instead of one, as before. On the 20th of June, a survey and map of the village was ordered by the corporation.

---

[1] ERASTUS WORTHINGTON, a native of Colchester, Conn., and the village post-master, was for several years connected with the *Long Island Star*, and by his intelligence, activity, courteous and winning manners, and his enthusiastic love of music, became a necessary man to Brooklyn society. His career was prematurely closed by consumption; a widow and daughter still survive him.

The excise money, this year paid to the overseers of the poor, amounted to $3,627. In August, the corporation received from the secretary of the navy, a letter of remonstrance against the filling up, by their authority, of the Mill pond at the Wallabout. The Jacob Patchen law case commenced April 22, and ended only with his death.

September. Dr. Evans purchased nearly twenty acres of woodland on the height known as Mount Prospect. The ground, which cost him nearly $3,500, was originally very rough and uneven, and plentifully covered with rocks and stones. Several cottages were erected, surrounded by handsome fences, sidewalks, etc.; fruit trees were planted, and the land, by a systematic and liberal expenditure, was brought into a high state of cultivation. Stimulated by the public spirit of the first proprietors, the owners of the adjoining fields were induced to follow in his footsteps, and the improvements which were thus inaugurated, gave an increased value to the property in that portion of the town.

A movement was also made for the establishment of a park or promenade along the Heights, which then retained much of their original appearance. A petition on the subject being presented to the corporation, they appointed a committee, who shortly after reported that they found insurmountable difficulties in carrying out the project.

1827. January 1st. The citizens of Brooklyn commenced the new year, by holding a meeting, at which it was resolved to petition the legislature for an act to prevent the storage of gunpowder within certain limits of the town. During this month, also, the county court began to hold its sessions in this place. The Greek mania seems to have revived again, and in March following, the Brooklyn committee paid for the aid of that nation, $2,675 in cash, besides a quantity of merchandise.

February. During this month, the project of uniting Brooklyn to the city of New York was a matter of public discussion, and interest. *The Young Men's Missionary Society* of the Reformed Dutch church, in Brooklyn, formed during the month of January, held its first annual meeting, February 6th, 1827, having fifty-eight enrolled members, and having collected a fund of $94.50. The officers were John Skillman, president; Adriance Van Brunt, vice-president; Abraham Suydam, treasurer and secretary; Daniel R. Remsen, John Schenck, Jacob S. Moon, Teunis G. Bergen, Simon J. Bergen, Cornelius Van Cleef, Barnet Johnson, and Adrian V. Cortelyou, managers.

March. The corporation appropriated the sum of $500 for the purpose of *boring an artesian well for water*, at the new market in James street; and in May following, a committee reported that a cast-iron cylindrical shaft, nine inches in diameter, had been sunk ninety feet, with a rise of water to the height of seventy feet in the tube. The corporation thereupon resolved to suspend boring, and introduce a pump, which worked so poorly, that in October, the pipes were ordered to be taken up, and a well dug on the same spot in the usual way. Thus ended the corporation's great bore.

On the 1st of April, Alden Spooner, Esq., commenced the publication of a *daily* paper, called the *Brooklyn Evening Star*, which was discontinued at the end of six months, from want of sufficient patronage. On the 7th of this month, the *Brooklyn Savings Bank* received its charter. This institution was primarily projected, in the summer of 1826, by the directors and friends of the Apprentices' Library Association, with a view to benefit adult mechanics. Its first officers were Adrian Van Sinderen, president; Hezekiah B. Pierrepont and Adam Treadwell, vice-presidents; Abraham Vanderveer, treasurer; James S. Clark, secretary; Robert Nichols, accountant, all of whom served without compensation.

September 9th. An election of village officers took place under the amended charter, Mr. Joseph Sprague being reelected president, without opposition. In three of the five districts, there was no opposition ticket. On the 25th, the corner-stone of the *African School House* was laid, with appropriate ceremonies, by the Woolman Benevolent Society. On the same day a meeting was held, to consider the feasibility of establishing a female seminary, which resulted in the erection of the edifice on Hicks street, now known as the Mansion House. The *Brooklyn Collegiate Institution* for young ladies, was incorporated in 1839, with a capital of

$30,000, the whole of which was expended in the erection of this building. The institution after a few years' evanescent prosperity, was abandoned from lack of patronage, and is now occupied as a hotel and boarding house, under the name of the Mansion House. Sept. 26th, the board of trustees voted to pay a salary of $500 to the justices and $200 to the clerk of the municipal court; and Sept. 27th is memorable as the date of the *first night boat* on the Fulton Ferry.

1828. On the 7th of February, Messrs. Leffert Lefferts and Jeremiah Johnson, a committee of the town, and Messrs. E. Raymond, Hez. B. Pierrepont and D. Leavitt, a committee of the village of Brooklyn, held a conference on the subject of a separate and distinct jurisdiction. Among the reasons adduced in favor of this action, were the following: 1. It was improper to have two distinct and separate powers operating in the same place. 2. The town collectively was too populous for the proper transaction of business at town meetings. 3. It was impolitic to have an agricultural community and their concerns controlled by those of other occupations. 4. The existing laws relative to paupers and the management of the poor house were not applicable to a population of 12,000; and the district provisions in relation to the support and maintenance of the village poor, and the poor of the residue of the town would be destructive of economy. 5. Because the town's people were not properly represented in county matters. 6. Because taxation, legislature and representation ought to be connected.

March. The first proposition to light Fulton street was made, the cost of each lamp being estimated at $14.31 per annum. The excise of the year was estimated in the town account, the same as the previous year, at $2,865.65; $5,000 was also raised to support the poor, and pay the present debt of the town.

April. An ox cart, owned by the village, and used for collecting and removing dirt and garbage from the streets, was found so economical, as to cause a proposition for the purchase of another. Two months later, these ox carts, the suggestion of the worthy president of the village, Mr. Sprague, were stated to have fairly paid their cost and the labor of gathering the manure.

May. A *theatre* was erected, about this time, in Fulton street, between Nassau and Concord streets, but was subsequently abandoned, and converted into dwelling houses.

August 9th. President Adams visited the Navy Yard at this place.

1829. February. The president made a report relative to fitting up a prison room under the market, for *debtors!* A public meeting was held for the purpose of relieving the great distress, which prevailed among the poor, for whose benefit $5,483.22 was this year expended.

April. The road of the Wallabout and Bedford Turnpike Company was accepted as a public highway. Furman, in his *Manuscript Notes*,[1] speaks, under date of April 7th, of returning from Bedford by the *new road, just opened* from near the Brooklyn Alms House, at the Wallabout to Bedford. "This road," says he, "runs through a pleasant country, but there is not now a single house on the whole line of it."

On the 6th of this month, the *Kings County Sabbath School Society* was formed. Its object was to concentrate the efforts of sabbath school societies, to disseminate useful information upon the subject, to circulate moral and religious publications, and to establish sabbath schools whenever it may be practicable and expedient in the county. Its officers were Nehemiah Denton, of Brooklyn, president; John Terhune, vice-president; N. W. Sandford, 2d vice-president; Abraham Vanderveer, treasurer; Evan M. Johnson, secretary. Managers for *Flatbush*, Messrs. Rev. Meeker, Rouse, Strong, Butie, Crookshank and Carroll; for *Flatlands*, John Lefferts, Dr. Vanderveer, David Nefus, Johannis Remsen; for *Gravesend*, B. C. Lake, John S. Garrison; for *New Lotts*, John Williamson, John Vanderveer; for *Brooklyn*, Eliakim Raymond, Adrian Hegeman, Richard M. White; for *Bushwick*, Peter Wyckoff, James Halsey. This society, which was auxiliary to the Southern Sabbath School Union of the state, comprised the following schools: Presbyterian Church, Baptist, St. John's Episcopal, Reformed Dutch Church, Baptist Church, corner

---

[1] *Manuscripts*, VI, 90.

Jackson and Nassau streets, African School, Bedford, Wallabout,[1] Gowanus, Gowanus Lane, Second Baptist Church, Brooklyn; Gravesend Village; Gravesend Neck; Bushwick Church; Flatbush, male school, Flatbush, female school; Narrows; New Utrecht Lane, New Utrecht Village; Flatlands; Williamsburgh; New Lotts.[2]

The village at this time contained some 300 youth, 200 of whom attended the public schools; two teachers were employed, and $1,100 received for tuition, part of which was devoted to the colored schools. A new school district was also set off, located between the ropewalks and military garden, whereon a school-house, already built, had been gratuitously offered.

May. A correct numbering of the houses, by order of the corporation, having been finally effected, a directory is published at the *Star* office.

Furman's Manuscript records, at this time, that "the people still continue digging for Capt. Kidd's money, in and about Brooklyn. On the hills it is no uncommon thing to see several large round holes where they have been searching for money."[3] Similar searches also occurred in New York island, about this time. Mr. H. E. Pierrepont, informs the author that several cases have occurred within his personal knowledge, of such explorations taking place on the Pierrepont estate, and at other places along the Heights. When building the wall on Furman street, which protects and strengthens the face of the Heights, under his present residence, two of the laborers unearthed a large sum of money, in coin, amounting it was said, to nearly $3,000, with which, it is needless to add, they made tracks to other parts.

---

[1] THE WALLABOUT SABBATH SCHOOL.—In the year 1830, a sabbath school was formed in the old Wallabout school house, then situated but a few blocks from where the present flourishing Lee Avenue school is now found, and the late venerable Gen. Jeremiah Johnson, its first and only superintendent. "The neighborhood," says W. S. in the *Christian Intelligencer*, 1858, "was then thinly settled, consequently the school was small; but well do I remember the interest there felt, as every returning sabbath brought us together in that place, superintendent, teachers and scholars. I have now gifts in my possession from Jeremiah Johnson as proofs of the interest he felt for the spiritual welfare of the children of his school, one of which a Bible, contains a few words of wholesome counsel, with his well known autograph. We little thought then, as we assembled from sabbath to sabbath in the old red school-house, that in a few years, and at a short distance from that place, one of the largest and most flourishing schools in the city would be established."

[2] *Furman's Manuscript Notes.*

[3] *Furman's Manuscripts*, IX, 406.

On June 4th. A frightful accident occurred at the Navy Yard, by the blowing up of the steam frigate *Fulton*, forty-three persons being killed and wounded.[1] The following interesting account of the accident, was written on the morning after the explosion:

> The *Fulton* has ever since the war been occupied as a receiving ship, and was moored within two hundred yards of the shore. The magazine was in the bow of the ship, and contained at the time of the explosion but three barrels of damaged powder. The explosion was not louder than that produced by the discharge of a single cannon; and many persons in the Navy Yard supposed the report to have proceeded from such a source, until they saw the immense column of smoke arising from the vessel. Others about the yards saw the masts rising into the air before the explosion, and immediately after, the air was filled with fragments of the vessel. It is not a little remarkable, that a midshipman, who was at the time of the accident, asleep on board of the frigate United States, within two hundred yards of the Fulton, was not at all disturbed by the report of the explosion, and was not aware of the occurrence, until he was told of it after he awoke.
>
> The Fulton is a complete wreck; the bow being destroyed nearly to the water, and the whole of this immense vessel, whose sides were more than four feet thick, and all other parts of corresponding strength, is now lying an entire heap of ruins, burst asunder in all parts, and aground at the spot where she was moored. Although she was but two hundred yards from the Navy Yard, and many vessels near her, not one of them received the least damage; nor was the bridge, which led from the shore to the Fulton, at all injured. The sentinel upon the bridge received no wound whatever, and continued to perform his duty after the accident, as unconcerned as though nothing had happened. The sentinel on board the ship was less fortunate, and escaped with merely (a light accident on such occasions) a broken leg. There were attached to the Fulton, by the roll of the ship, 143 persons; and at the time of the explosion, there were supposed to have been on board the vessel about sixty persons.
>
> It happened fortunately that sixty-two men, formerly attached to the frigate, were drafted on Tuesday, and had proceeded to Norfolk to form part

---

[1] The *Fulton* was launched, October 29th, 1814.—*H. B. Pierrepont's Journal.*

of the crew of the frigate Constellation, then on the eve of departure for a foreign station. The band, seven in number, were on shore. This dreadful accident was occasioned by the gunner's going into the magazine to procure powder to fire the evening gun. He was charged by one of the officers previously to his going below, to be careful; and soon after the explosion took place. We understand that he was a man between fifty and sixty years of age, and had just been appointed to that office; the old gunner having been discharged the day before. He was desired by Lieutenant Breckenridge to be careful with the light, and to place it in the location invariably provided for it, on such occasions, viz: behind a reflecting glass in the partition, through which the rays of light are thrown. It is supposed he had been careless in that particular, and that having carried the candle into the magazine, some of its sparks were communicated to the powder; but as he is among the dead, nothing certain on this point can ever be known. Lieutenant Mull states, that the necessary precautions had been taken for opening the magazine, and a sentinel placed at the hatch before he left the deck, and that after being in the ward room some twenty minutes, the explosion took place. At the time of the explosion, the officers were dining in the ward room. The lady of Lieutenant Breckinridge, and the son of Lieutenant Platt, a lad about nine years old, were guests, and one account says both were slightly wounded. Another account says, Lieutenant Mull, who was sitting next to the son of Lieutenant Platt, with great presence of mind, caught hold of him, and placed him in one of the port holes, by which means he escaped uninjured. Lieutenant Platt had returned only on yesterday morning, having been absent one month on leave. Commodore Chauncey, with the commander of the frigate, Captain Newton, left her only a few minutes before the explosion, the former having been on board on a visit of inspection. The escape of Midshipman Eckford seems to have been almost miraculous. When Commodore Chauncey (who was one of the first to reach the vessel) got on board, the first object he saw was young Eckford hanging by one of his legs between the gun deck, whither he had been forced by the explosion. A jack-screw was immediately procured, by means of which the deck was raised and he was extricated from his perilous situation.

The room in which the officers were dining, was situated about midships. The whole company at the table were forced, by the concussion, against the transom with such violence as to break their limbs, and otherwise cut and bruise them in a shocking manner.

The magazine was situated in the bow of the vessel. This part of the ship, as may well be imagined, is completely demolished. Indeed, the ship remains as complete a wreck as was ever beheld. The timbers throughout appear to have been perfectly rotten. Many of the guns were thrown overboard, and some of them (of large dimensions) hung as it were by a hair.

The bodies of the dead and wounded were brought on shore as soon as circumstances would permit. The former, after being recognized, were put in coffins. The latter were carried to the hospital of the Navy Yard, and every attention paid to them. The bodies of the dead were shockingly mangled; their features distorted, and so much blackened, that it was difficult to recognize them.

Commodore Chauncey and the officers of the station were on board the wreck, after the explosion, giving directions to remove the scattered timber, in order that a search might take place for such bodies as might be buried in the ruins. The tide being at the ebb, immense quantities of the fragments of the wreck floated down in front of the city, and hundreds of small boats were seen busily engaged in securing them.

What is a very remarkable circumstance, although several of the persons at dinner in the ward room, escaped with their lives, and some of them uninjured, not a vestige of the table, chairs, or any of the furniture in the room remains. Everything was blown to atoms.

The Fulton was built with two keels, or rather was in fact two boats, joined together by the upper boats. The sides were of immense thickness, and the whole frame, was, when built, probably the strongest of the kind ever constructed. But the timbers had now become very rotten, and the whole hulk was, as it were, kept together by its own weight. It is supposed that the rotten state of the vessel, making her timbers give away easily, rendered the destruction greater than if she had been new and sound.

Midshipman Eckford was standing in the starboard gangway, and was strangely tumbled to the inside, instead of being blown out upon the platform. He was then caught under one of the beams, where he hung fast by one leg. While he hung in this painful condition, not a groan, nor a complaint, nor a word of supplication escaped him. His cheek was unblanched, and his features composed, while he held on to the beam with his arms to keep his head up. Attempts were made to raise the beam, but there was such a mass of materials above, that no muscular force could move it. In this emergency, Commodore Chauncey, with great promptness, ordered the jack-screw to be brought from the shore. This took time, and it was not then the work of a moment to apply it, and bring it into action. An hour went by, ere the youth was extricated; and yet, not a single murmur of impatience was heard from his lips. His only words were in direction or encouragement to those who were aiding him — exclaiming from time to time, "Hurrah, my hearties!" "There it moves!" His only reproof was to the sailor, who, when the beam was raised, attempted, rather rudely, to withdraw the fractured limb. The sailor supported him while he performed the office himself.

The whole number of killed were thirty-three, including Lieutenant Breckenridge and the three women. Twenty-nine were reported as wounded, but there were many more, who were slightly injured. Nearly every person on board received at least a scratch. The greatest part of the mischief was done by the force of the fragments and splinters. These were driven into every part of the ship. Captain Newton, who commanded the ship, employed all the force he could spare, to clear the wreck, and find the bodies of the unfortunate sufferers. Twenty-four were taken out of the ruins at the time, but some of the others were not found till a considerable time after. One was found horribly mutilated, and driven on shore, on Staten Island. Another got fastened to a beam, and was picked up. Two were picked out of the water near the wreck.

June. A *temperance* society was organized in Brooklyn; A. Van Sinderin, president, A. Mercein, vice-president, F. T. Peet, secretary.

October. A committee was appointed, and the sum of $500 appropriated for the purpose of making a legal investigation into the water rights of the town. On the 24th, the corner-stone of the *Collegiate Institute for Young Ladies* (see *ante*, page 227), was laid. The *Roman Catholic Orphan Asylum* was founded, although not chartered until 1834.

1830. The events of this year were rather unimportant. The county supervisors purchased a poor house farm at Flatbush; and the support of paupers cost the town $7,223,13. The taxes at this time in Brooklyn amounted to sixty cents on every hundred dollars of the valuation of real and personal estate. Village expenses were estimated at $10,000, and the population of the town as $15,292.

In February a public meeting was called, at which measures were taken to establish a *dispensary*.[1] November 10th, the *Brooklyn Colonization Society* organized and appointed officers; and during the month of December, meetings were held in the several districts to amend the village charter.

---

[1] This institution published its *first* annual report March, 1831.

One of Mr. Spooner's editorials in the *Star*, in April of this year, discusses the architectural features of Brooklyn, in the following vein of quiet humor: "Beauty in architecture, solidity in structure, taste and neatness in public grounds, have been entirely disregarded. There are a few ornamented *fronts*, but scarcely one well designed and proportioned edifice within the limits of the town. The houses generally are run up with a most frugal economy of brick and mortar, or scantling and planks, as the case may be. One may look in vain for a public square, a well shaded avenue, or even a sufficient cemetery. The whole object seems to have been to cover every lot of eighteen by twenty-two with a house, to project and open unneeded as well as unheard of streets, and to tumble the hills into the valleys. * * * * *Grandeur* is more applicable to public edifices, but Diogenes in his tub could not have accused the *Apprentices' Library* of excess in this respect, whatever his opinion might have been of the Presbyterian or Episcopal churches, or the Female Institute. *Spires*, too, are in most places considered an appropriate and beautiful decoration of churches, but we studiously pursue a system of *docking*, which may be in good taste when applied to the tails of horses, but is hardly so when applied to the steeples of churches. We have not a single public square, and the only walk that our townsmen can enjoy, is the crumbling margin of the Heights, left open by the liberality of some, and the necessity of removing fences in others, of the owners of adjoining lots. Even this promenade is totally neglected by the hand of improvement; no path is laid out, no tree planted, and no terrace regulated, either for beauty or safety."

The *Hamilton Literary Association* was this year founded; also, the *Brooklyn City Tract Society*, auxiliary to the American Tract Society.

1831. An application was made for a rail road between Brooklyn and Jamaica, and an attempt was also made to establish a *whaling company* in Brooklyn. The season was extremely severe. On the 15th, a snow storm occurred here, which lasted thirty-six hours and was followed by intensely cold weather, without a parallel since the year 1761.[1] About this time, Samuel

---

[1] *Furman's Manuscripts*, VII, 219.

E. Clements was appointed post-master in place of Erastus Worthington, who deceased January 12th. Mr. Clements, however, resigned in December, and was succeeded by Mr. Joseph Moser.

May. The village appropriations amounted fully to $10,000, the extent allowed by law. It was also calculated about this time that the village could be lighted with public lamps at an expense of $1.00 per lot annually.

December. Meetings were held by the inhabitants, and a committee reported (on the 14th) in favor of uniting the town and village of Brooklyn under a *city* government.

The number of houses in the village of Brooklyn licensed as taverns, this year, was 128, the number actually required being only 22. The number of male inhabitants above the age of 18, residing in the village, was near 40,000; which, supposing each male above 18 to visit these places for drink, gave nearly 32 customers to each tavern. In addition to these taverns, there were many grocers licensed to sell liquor, by the gallon, and not to be drunk on the premises.[1]

The Roman Catholic *Church of the Assumption* was organized.

1832. February 1st. The *Star* of this date contains a letter from a Mr. G. B. White of 100 Fulton street, to Mayor Sprague, on the subject of providing water works for Brooklyn. He proposes the formation of a company, to be called the Brooklyn Water Company, with a capital of $25,000 (in 1,000 shares of $25 each), for which sum Mr. White agrees to unite the requisite number of springs on the East river shore, and by tide power to raise it to a sufficient height above the highest point on Clover hill, at the end of Cranberry street, and to construct a reservoir of the capacity of 1,000,000 gallons.

February. A contract was made for cleaning the streets for one year, for $400.

April. *The Brooklyn and Jamaica Rail Road Company* was incorporated on the 25th of this month, but the road was not completed and opened until April 18th, 1836, on which day ground was broken for its continuance through the island, by the Long

---

[1] *Furman's Manuscripts*, IV, 308.

Island Rail Road Company, which had been incorporated April 24, 1834. It was continued to Hicksville, and cars put thereon in August, 1837; to Suffolk station in 1841, and on the 25th of July, 1844, the first train of cars passed from Brooklyn to Greenport, ninety-five miles, which event was duly and appropriately celebrated.

Pierrepont street was ceded to the village.

June 20th. The dreaded cholera made its appearance in New York, and a medical board was established for the village of Brooklyn. Up to July 25th, when it ceased, there had been ninety cases, of which thirty-five died. These cases occurred in Tillary, Jackson, Hicks, Willow, Fulton, Marshall, Gold, Front, Furman, Main, High streets, and Red Hook.

On the Saturday evening previous to the 20th, Schenck and Birdsall's Distillery, at the foot of Joralemon street, was destroyed by fire.

Furman's Manuscripts also preserve the following temperance statistics:

Number of taverns in the village of Brooklyn, in 1832, compared with the population of the last census preceding:

VILLAGE DISTRICTS.	LICENSED.	NOT LICENSED.	TOTAL.	POPULATION.
First - - - -	7	8	15	1,452
Second - - -	48	31	79	2,801
Third - - - -	10	3	13	2,191
Fourth - - - -	16	15	31	3,557
Fifth - - - -	29	11	40	2,301
	110	68	178	12,302

The number of families estimated at 1,780, being a tavern to every *ten* families; and in the 2d district, a tavern to every 35 persons. In 1833, a determined effort was made by the trustees to reduce the number of licenses; and the movement, in spite of the opposition which it met, so far succeeded that in 1835, with a population of nearly 30,000, there were only *fifty* taverns in the whole city.[1]

---

[1] *Furman's Manuscripts*, IV, 308.

In October, the *Brooklyn Bank* commenced operations. It was the second established in the town, and was incorporated February 21st, preceding, with a capital of $200,000, which was reduced in 1840 to $150,000. Samuel A. Willoughly was its first president.

1833. January. The principal measures at this time before the public, were, the location of the County Court House, the establishment of the South Ferry, and the widening of Fulton, near Front street. The locating of the Court House in Brooklyn, long discussed and often attempted, had at length been rendered probable, owing to the fact that the old one at Flatbush had been destroyed by fire in December previous. In view of the rapid increase of property and population which had taken place in Brooklyn, it seemed most appropriate that the new edifice should be erected here. This town then had 2,266 electors, whereas all the rest of the county had only 710; 553 jurors and the other towns 270; and taxable property assessed at $7,829, 684, while that of the rest of the county was only $1,600,594. The proposition, however, to locate the court here, and to increase the representation of the village in the board of supervisors, met with strenuous opposition from the other towns of the county. An act was finally passed, in the month of April authorizing its location in Brooklyn, and appropriating Messrs. L. Van Nostrand, Joseph Moser, and Peter Conover, as commissioners to fix upon a site.

February. At a meeting of the citizens, it was resolved to establish a soup house for the poor. A crown glass company was established in the village, and a second attempt was made to establish a whaling company here.

The *Protestant Orphan Asylum Society* was this year instituted, but not incorporated until 1835.

April. The plottings and plannings for a city incorporation, which had so long interested the citizens of Brooklyn, culminated at length in a determined effort to secure the coveted boon from the legislature of the state. A bill for the incorporation of the *City of Brooklyn*, and the erection of the *Town of Gowanus*, in Kings county, was introduced and passed the assembly (April 12), but owing to the strenuous opposition made by the city of New York, was lost in the senate (April 27). The Brooklynites, however, received (May 15th), a sort of *placebo* for their disappointment, in the shape of an amended village charter, obtained through the efforts of Judge John Greenwood, which embraced several sections of the proposed city charter.[1] So desirous, however, were a portion of the citizens, of being under a city government, that they proposed the annexation of Brooklyn to the city authority of New York.

June. The village was honored by a visit from the president, vice-president and many other distinguished United States officials.

October. On the 10th, the *Brooklyn Lyceum* was organized, for the promotion of intellectual and moral improvement, and Hon. P. W. Radcliffe was chosen president.

During this fall, speculation in lands and lots increased so rapidly as almost to amount, in some cases, to a mania. At an auction sale of Mount Prospect lots, two and a half miles from the ferry, the sales were from $60 to $200, mostly above $100 per lot. The property lately occupied by Parmentier's splendid garden, at the junction of the Jamaica and Flatbush roads, purchased for $57,000, was sold in lots at auction, for between 60 and $70,000; while ten acres of ground at Red Hook, owned by the heirs of Rynier Suydam, sold for $47,000! The farm of R. V. Beekman, at Gowanus, comprising 26 acres, 18 perches, was purchased at auction by Charles Hoyt, for $25,000.

About the same time also, the old John Spader farm (vol. I, 84), was purchased by Pine and Van Antwerp, auctioneers in New York, but residing on Flatbush Hill. They soon laid out the beautiful avenue now known as Clinton avenue, from the river to the Jamaica road, lengthwise through the farm. The land on either side was sold in sections of half an acre each, or lots of eighty by one hundred feet. The first settlers were Messrs. Baxter, Van Dyke, Halsey, Hunter and others; St. Luke's (then Trinity) church was erected in 1835, and soon the avenue began to assume the beautiful appearance which now renders it one of the chief ornaments of our lovely city.

---

[1] Sections 41–49, 52–62, 65.

Meanwhile (1830 – 1835), another settlement was springing into existence along the shores of the Wallabout bay. The beginning of the Wallabout village as it was then called, has been kindly sketched for us in the following letter from the Rev. Jonathan Greenleaf, the late excellent and well known pastor of the Wallabout Presbyterian church, in a letter dated Brooklyn, N. Y., April 28th, 1860 :

You requested of me to put on paper some of my recollections of East Brooklyn, as it was when I removed here in the month of October, 1842. I gladly comply with your request.

The Wallabout village, as it was formerly called, but now known as East Brooklyn, dates not very far from the year 1830. The territory assigned to it was bounded on the north by Flushing avenue, on the south by the old Jamaica turnpike, west by Clinton avenue, and east by Division avenue, which separated it from the town of Bushwick. At the above date the land within these limits lay in farms, being traversed on what is now Flushing avenue by the Newtown turnpike, which entered into Brooklyn proper, through a toll-gate and over a bridge, built on the outlet of the mill-pond, which then covered the Park, lying west of the Navy Yard. An old road was also traveled from what was called Cripplebush, passing the old stone house of Mr. J. J. Rappalye, and thence through Nostrand avenue and Bedford avenue to Jamaica turnpike. From about the year 1832, streets were laid out from time to time, not all at once, and in 1835 Myrtle avenue was graded and paved from the City Hall to Nostrand avenue, which afforded a new facility of entrance from the Wallabout into the older part of the city. Not long after, a section of Flushing avenue was paved, extending from the Navy Yard Hospital gate to Bedford avenue, and also Bedford avenue, Skillman street, Franklin and Kent avenues from Flushing to Myrtle avenue, and Classon avenue from Flushing to Willoughly avenue. On the south side of Myrtle avenue there were no pavements, with the exception of one block as above stated, and none of the streets were cut through, except Bedford and Classon avenues, which had been ploughed up and levelled like a country road. Such was the state of the streets when I removed my family here on October 8th, 1842, having commenced preaching here two weeks earlier.

The beginning of the village, so far as the houses are concerned, was in the year 1830, when the ropewalk was built on the open space between Classon avenue and Graham street.[1] At or near the same time a large stone building was erected at the northern end of the ropewalk, which was finished off in separate tenements to be occupied as dwellings by the operatives in the ropewalks. That building is now used as a store house for hemp, cordage, etc. A few dwellings were soon scattered along on Flushing avenue, and on the other avenues north of Myrtle; and in the year 1836, the public school house was built on Classon, near Flushing avenue. At this time (1842) the greater part of the population resided north of Myrtle avenue, for there was but one house on the south line of that street from Division avenue to Fort Greene, and that was the large house now standing on the corner of Myrtle and Classon avenues, the corner of which was occupied by Mr. Evans as a drug store, and is now a meat shop. At that time the whole space from Division avenue to Fort Greene, and from Myrtle avenue to Jamaica turnpike, being a tract of ground about two miles in length from east to west, and one mile in breadth from north to south, contained only thirty houses. Adding to this space the ground lying north of Myrtle avenue, and the whole population was small compared with that found at this day on the same ground. In the autumn of 1842, soon after I commenced preaching here, I took a census of the people, as accurately as it was practicable to make it, and the following is the result. Whole number of families 344, who were divided among the several religious denominations, as follows: Presbyterians, 81; Baptists, 11; Reformed Dutch, 20; Roman Catholics, 72; Methodists, 44; Episcopalians, 21; leaving 95 families unclassed, whose denomination was not ascertained. These families were all residing in what is now called the Seventh ward of Brooklyn. The progress of the population in the ward may be seen in the fact that, in 1842, the total amount of population, as ascertained by my census, was 1,679, and the population of the ward as reported in the census of 1850 was 6,371.

---

[1] Tucker & Cooper's ropewalk was burned Dec. 12, 1845 ; insured value $20,000.

The consideration of another fact will exhibit the great increase of population here in the last 18 years. When the Wallabout Presbyterian church was organized, Dec. 20, 1842, there were 3 others in operation between Fort Greene on the west, and Division avenue on the east, viz: St. Luke's [Episcopal] church, on Clinton avenue, near the Long Island rail road; St. Mary's [Catholic] church on Classon avenue, near Myrtle, and the Methodist church on Franklin avenue, near Park avenue, and these were all feeble, and no one of them could stand alone. On the same ground, adding a small portion of the Ninth ward adjoining, there are now 28 organized churches, at least half of them having large and self-supporting congregations.

I have thus, sir, given you about all that I can recollect of the origin and progress of the settlement at East Brooklyn, so far as I have judged it necessary for your purpose. * * *

1834. January. The Brooklyn people, undaunted by previous defeats, and confident in their own resources, and the justice of their claims, again renewed their application to the legislature for a city charter. The city of New York, with the spirit of "the dog in the manger," still threw the whole weight of her wealth and influence against the movement. Her objections, as stated in the report of a special committee of the common council, on the 30th, were substantially as follows: That the limits of the city of New York, ought to embrace the whole of the counties of Kings and Richmond. That all commercial cities are natural rivals and competitors, and that contentions, inconvenience and other calamities grow out of such rivalries. That the period was not far distant when a population of 2,000,000 would be comprised within the three counties of New York, Kings and Richmond. That the limits of the city of New York already extended to low water mark, on all the shores of Brooklyn, east of Red Hook. That an act of legislature, passed in 1821, relative to the village of Brooklyn, was virtually an encroachment on the rights of New York, inasmuch as it provided for the election of a harbor master, whose duty in Brooklyn would be *within the city limits* of New York; and further, that the sheriff and civil officers of Brooklyn were allowed to execute processes on board of vessels attached to the wharves of Brooklyn, etc., etc.

The real key, however, to the opposition made by New York, was undoubtedly to be found in the fears of her real estate speculators, and her municipal authorities. The former, who held large quantities of land in the upper portion of the city, foresaw that the incorporation of Brooklyn as a city, would give a new impetus to her growth and population; and that Brooklyn lots would soon become formidable rivals to their own, in the market. The latter saw, in the energy of their youthful and aspiring neighbor, a power, which when grown to maturer strength, might wrest from New York her long-contested, and profitable water and ferry rights. So capital, speculation and monopoly, joined hands in a most formidable league against the aspirations and endeavors of Brooklyn. Despite their exertions, however, Brooklyn triumphed, and by an act passed on the 8th of April, was fully invested with the name and privileges of a city.[1] The joyful event was duly celebrated on the 25th, by a civic procession, and public exercises in the First Presbyterian Church, where an oration was delivered by William Rockwell, Esq. The first election under the new charter was held on the 5th of May, and in several of the wards, a union ticket was elected. The following gentlemen composed the FIRST BOARD OF ALDERMEN: *First Ward*, Gabriel Furman, Conklin Brush; *Second Ward*, George D. Cunningham, John M. Hicks; *Third Ward*, James Walters, Joseph Moser; *Fourth Ward*, Jonathan Trotter, Adrian Hegeman; *Fifth Ward*, William M. Udall, Benjamin R. Prince; *Sixth Ward*, Samuel Smith, William Powers; *Seventh Ward*, Clarence D. Sackett, Stephen Haynes; *Eighth Ward*, Theodorus Polhemus, John S. Bergen; *Ninth Ward*, Robert Wilson, Moses Smith.

This board on the 20th of the same month elected *George Hall*, as the first mayor of the city of Brooklyn.

GEORGE HALL was born in New York, on the 21st of September, 1795. In 1796, his father purchased the farm now known as the Valley Grove farm, in the neighborhood of Flatbush, where he lived for a short time, and then removed to Brooklyn, which was then but an inconsiderable village. George received a good English education at Erasmus Hall, an old and excellent institution of learning at Flatbush; and, after he left school, took up his father's trade of a painter and glazier. In early life he was noted for his convivial habits, and old Brooklynites still remember with amusement his youthful pranks and the skill with which he used to sing the Cruiskeen Lawn. Yet, even in those days of his budding manhood, he displayed that frankness of disposition, energy of purpose, persevering industry and active spirit of benevolence which soon distinguished him among his companions and neighbors, and rendered him the chosen and trusted counsellor of all his associates, the friend of the poor, and the warm and effective advocate of every measure calculated to benefit his fellow men. In his business which he commenced on his own account, in 1820, his talent, integrity and straightforwardness won for him a reputation and a mercantile credit, which soon placed him on the pathway to success; and never was a competency more fairly the reward of labor and of merit.

---

[1] The act went into effect on the 10th. At the time of this incorporation, the *village* had a village market debt of about $22,000, and was involved in the Patchen law suit, amounting to some $20,000, being a total of $42,000, which was assumed by the newly corporated city. The *town* of Brooklyn, on the contrary, owed nothing, and owned the poor house establishment, together with nineteen and a half acres of land, including a part of Fort Greene; one half an acre of meadow, as a landing-place, adjoining the poor house property; also a landing place at Atlantic street ferry; a lot at foot of Doughty street, on the East river, on which a store had been built without right, and several other landing places.

As years rolled by they brought changes; the village grew, large accessions of population were made, legislation became necessary to provide for the welfare of the increasing numbers, and Mr. Hall, active, honest, and public-spirited, was chosen in the years 1826 and 1832, trustee of the Third ward of the then village of Brooklyn. The duties of this office he discharged so much to the satisfaction of his neighbors and associates, that in October, 1833, he was elected president of the village, in a closely contested election brought about by his strenuous endeavors to exclude hogs from the streets, and to shut up the shops of unlicensed retailers of rum. Upon the incorporation of Brooklyn as a city in 1834, he became its first mayor, and most honestly administered its affairs. In 1844, Mr. Hall was defeated as the temperance candidate for the mayoralty; and again in 1845, as the nominee of the Whigs for the same office. On both of these occasions hundreds of the most intelligent and wealthy citizens came out warmly in his behalf, and the vote which was polled showed, at least, that he was personally regarded by the people of Brooklyn as most worthy of an office which could add no honors, but only impose labors on such a man. In 1854, Mr. Hall was nominated for the mayoralty by the Know-nothing party, and was elected, though his opponents endeavored to defeat him by raising a question as to the place of his birth, asserting that he was born in County Wexford, Ireland. But Mr. Hall proved that, though his parents were Irish, he was born in this country. He thus became the first mayor of the incorporated cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburg. During his term of office the cholera raged with considerable virulence in the city. The people became very much panic-stricken, and there seemed to be no one with sufficient courage to face the epidemic until Mr. Hall literally took it in hand. He went right into it; superintended the removal of victims, cleaned out houses, took responsibility after responsibility, and his efforts met with deserved success. But he did not pass untouched. The epidemic seized him, and then was shown the determination of the man. Going to his home he sat down before a very hot fire, called for one medicine after another, until he had taken a large amount of various mixtures, and apparently by his determination not to succumb to the disease, fought it off. A report was circulated that he was dead, which report brought him to the front of the City Hall that people might see he was not dead, and did not intend to die just yet. His fellow citizens were so gratified by, and so much admired, his courageous efforts that they presented him as a testimonial the house No. 37 Livingston street, in which he died. The testimonial avowedly took this shape for the reason that his friends knew that he would not keep money in his possession while there was distress to be relieved.

In 1861, Mr. Hall ran for the office of registrar as a Republican candidate, against what was known as the Fort Greene Union ticket. Though he received a very complimentary vote he was defeated, and never afterwards took any part in politics. There was scarcely a Brooklyn institution of public benefit in which Mr. Hall was not interested, either as having helped to found it, or as having helped its progress with ready hand. He was for a number of years, president of the *Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor ;* and for some time president of the *Fireman's Trust Insurance Company*, a position that secured him a modest competency, without overtasking his strength.

He died, after a brief illness, on the 16th of April, 1868, and his funeral on the following sabbath, was such a scene as Brooklyn has seldom, if ever witnessed. The flags upon the City Hall were displayed at half-mast, and long before the hour of the services, the dwelling was crowded to excess. All the neighboring stoops were filled with spectators, and a crowd of three or four thousand collected in the street, in front of the house, and were addressed by Rev. Henry Ward Beecher, in one of his characteristic and eloquent addresses. At its close, the coffin, covered with wreaths and flowers, was carried to its last resting place in Greenwood, escorted by the temperance societies in full regalia, and accompanied by a large number of Brooklyn's oldest and most distinguished citizens, among whom were five ex-mayors and nearly all the acting officials of the city.

As the advocate of the temperance cause, it is almost superfluous to speak of George Hall. How many men owe to him their very lives snatched, by his means, from the degradation, worse than death, of intoxication. To how many families his presence, assistance, and counsel have been like the gracious ministry of an angel. He was the first man in his city in the field for temperance. He was the first to sign in Brooklyn the Old Temperance Pledge, and the first to sign the Washingtonian Pledge. Of those engaged in the deadly liquor traffic or connected with it, he was ever the unswerving, uncompromising enemy, as well as of everything in the social and political system that gives encouragement openly or slily to drunkenness. It was this earnest antagonism, no doubt, which prevented to a large degree that advancement in political life, which might reasonably have been expected from his peculiar fitness for public office, as well as from the confidence reposed in him by his fellow citizens. His services in this cause, for a long series of years, were conspicuous, and his personal example was thoroughly consistent.

Even in his last sickness, when his medical attendants thought his failing strength needed to be sustained by stimulants, and prescribed brandy for him, it was with the utmost difficulty he could be got to try it; and when the taste of that was in his mouth, which he had fought against all his life, he spat it out again, and died as he had lived. It was characteristic of him that even when dying, the old battle feeling was in him yet, and having fought this mischievous agent all his life, he fought it also in death, and would not be subject to it even for the hope of being healed by it.

George Hall possessed strong physical health, sound practical sense, and true moral energy. He was one who never shrank from the performance of any known duty. Said Mr. Beecher at his funeral: "He was one of those few men who, let them but once get the scent, and he laid his nose to it and followed it up to the end. Many men did not like this trait in his character, while he was in public life. When he obstructed some of them in wrong courses — when in the pursuit of bad gains he stood in the path, lion-like before them, and threatened the evil doer, many voices reviled him and many oaths were sworn against him. But it was safe to say that in the brothels and grog shops of Brooklyn to-day, none would speak a word against the memory of George Hall, now that he was dead. They would admit that he but did his duty — that he acted the part of a man, and did the right thing. He was not merely a moral man. He shaped his ideas of duty upon the word of God. He was not simply a philanthropist — he was a Christian man, though not ostentatious. He did not make a parade of his religious feelings Since 1850 or 1851 he had been a communicant in the Presbyterian church, and those who knew him best knew how consistent was his life, and that the secret spring that moved him to zeal was religion. He lived as one who felt that he would have to give an account before the bar of God.

"He was a faithful counsellor, a wise man, a disinterested, unselfish, unambitious and truly patriotic citizen, and those who really loved the welfare of the community had faith in him. He was a man who took straight paths of action; was fearlessly in earnest, and had a pure and exalted idea of the good of the public. But while he was a stern magistrate, there was never a softer heart beat in woman's bosom than his. With a face like granite, never was there warmer blood or gentler sympathies than in him. He would rebuke the wrong doer, and feared not to face opposition in any shape; yet, when the presence of want was made known to him, he would swing a basket on his arm, and take food from his own larder to feed the suffering poor. He was not content, as many were, to stand by, saying to others, 'be ye good,' but he went down among them to converse with them, and try to elevate them out of vice and evil doing. His was the example of a true man, as well as of a philanthropist and a Christian." Generous even to extravagance, it may be questioned if he ever refused a call in the name of charity. He was probably more easily imposed upon by the pretenses of suffering and sorrow than any other man, and his liberality was bounded by only the money at his command. The poor always found in him a friend, and large numbers of poor widows and families were accustomed to apply to him for assistance. Yet his name was very seldom seen on any published or printed subscription list. His likes and dislikes were very strong, and he never hesitated to give his opinion of a person or subject, whatever it might be. He seemed to be unconscious of fear, and his enemies, if he had any, knew him as a most determined man, while to his friends he was an equally constant and reliable friend.

In relating *the* great event of the year, we have neglected to notice some of considerable importance which occurred during the earlier months of 1834. In *January*, after a period of extravagant speculation in city lots, greatly facilitated by the too free issue of paper currency by the banks, it was announced that great numbers of the laboring classes were discharged for want of cash; and so formidable did the danger appear, that a meeting of merchants, mechanics, manufacturers and other citizens of Brooklyn was convened for the purpose of deliberating on measures necessary to be adopted to avert the pecuniary distress. During this month, also, *omnibuses* and the now almost forgotten *cab*, were introduced into use in Brooklyn.

That the thoughts and aspirations of Brooklynites were tending hopefully towards a future *civic* dignity, is manifest from a proposition made to the corporation in March, to furnish the village with a supply of water from the springs at the Wallabout. A committee thereon, finally reported the plan as feasible, and that the modest sum of $100,000 would cover all expenses of reservoir, steam engine and eleven miles of pipe. They further expressed their opinion that the village could be amply supplied with the purest water at an annual expense of $10,000 for interest and cóst. The financial aspects of the times, however, probably forbade any attempt at a realization of the project, as it seems to have been dropped from the public mind.

In July, having then attained to the honor of being a city, it was resolved, at a public city meeting of which the mayor was chairman, that $50,000 should be raised to purchase ground for a *city hall* at the junction of Fulton and Joralemon streets.

The South Ferry was proposed, about this time; but met with the usual opposition from New York city. This and the condition of the Brooklyn ferries generally kept the good folks in a considerable sweat, and public meetings, and newspaper articles seem to have been then, as now, their favorite, though ineffectual method of warfare.

September. Permission to occupy Atlantic street, was granted by the corporation to the Jamaica rail road company, and this, we may add, proved a most unfortunate bone of contention, until the change of terminus, in 1861.

December. Garret Nostrand's farm of eighty acres, at Cripplebush, was sold for $80,000.

Christ Church (Protestant Episcopal), and the *Third Presbyterian Church* were this year organized.

The *Long Island Rail Road Company* was this year incorporated.

CHAPTER IV.

THE CITY FROM 1834-1855.

The charter, under which the new *city* of Brooklyn commenced its existence, divided the municipality into *nine wards*, the first five of which corresponded to and were identical with the five *districts* of the former village, and retained the same limits and numbers as said districts. The legislative power was vested in a mayor and a board of aldermen. This board, constituting and denominated the common council, was composed of two aldermen, elected annually from each ward, and a provision was made whereby no member of the common council could hold office as mayor and alderman at the same time. The mayor was to see that the ordinances of the common council were complied with, and offenders against the same prosecuted; and he was to be assisted in his duties by an inspector or inspectors who should report all such breaches of law to him, or to the attorney of the board, as the common council might direct. He was to have no vote in the common council, although he possessed a qualified veto power. The common council were to have the management and control of the finances and of all property, real and personal, belonging to the said corporation; and, within the said city, they could make, establish, publish, alter, modify, amend and repeal all ordinances, rules, regulations and by-laws, usual and necessary for the regulation, protection, etc., etc., of the various city interests, including the powers of a board of health, of police and of excise.

1835. January. A perfect survey and plan of the city being very desirable, the corporation resolved to apply to the legislature for the appointment of commissioners for that purpose; and a committee of the corporation reported in favor of purchasing the low grounds at the Wallabout for a *city park*.

March. Eight acres of the Jacob Bergen farm were sold, at the handsome figure of $10,000 per acre.

In April, Brooklyn obtained her contested act establishing a south ferry, only four members of assembly dissenting.

May 11. *Jonathan Trotter, Esq.*, was elected by the board of aldermen, as mayor of the city.

HON. JONATHAN TROTTER was born in Newcastle-upon-Tyne, England, in the year 1797; he emigrated to this country in 1818, and began business in Roosevelt street, New York city, as a morocco dresser. Subsequently he established himself still more extensively in Ferry street. In 1825, he built an extensive factory for the dressing of leather, in Stanton street, near Gold, now the 5th Ward, Brooklyn; and a few years after, in 1829, became a resident here. His business proved very successful, and he became one of the most prominent citizens of the village of Brooklyn. His residence was in Bridge street, between Tillary and Chapel. In 1834, the charter for a city was obtained, and the deceased, then a trustee, was elected alderman of the 4th Ward. Hon. George Hall was then mayor, and in May, 1835, Mr. Trotter was chosen to this office, and reelected in 1836. He held the chief municipal office until May, 1837; in 1840 he moved to New York. While mayor of Brooklyn, he laid the corner-stone of the City Hall, *as originally* planned, on the 28th of April, 1836. During his term, also, Myrtle avenue was opened, and the extensive arrangements for opening up the outlying portions of the city were made. In 1837, Mr. Trotter was among those unfortunates, who were caught with outspread sails, when the great financial storm burst upon the country, and he went down from wealth to a very moderate competence. He returned to New York and reestablished himself there, but never again was enabled to assume a prominent position in either politics or business. His death, April 5th, 1865, closed a long life of earnest work, in which some few powers were conspicuous, but nothing permanently developed beyond a good, courteous, practical manhood. He left a wife and seven children, the two eldest of whom are in business in the leather trade in the Swamp. Mr. Trotter was the first president of the Atlantic Bank of Brooklyn, and, at one time, vice-president of the Leather Manufacturers' Bank of New York.

The board, also, voted $50,000 to liquidate past and future expenses.

July. The real estate of the late Samuel Jackson was sold at the highest rate of any during the rage of speculation; amounting to $570,000. A convention of twenty citizens were at work, this month, on a *city plan;* and a smallpox visitation led to a general gratuitous vaccination of the poor.

September. Fulton street, from Front street to Water, was widened by the demolition of the buildings on the east side.

A plan of the proposed City Hall was submitted and approved.

October. The Wallabout toll-bridge was made *free;* and General Johnson having informed the corporation, that the city owned a *public landing* at the Wallabout, it was forthwith ordered to be surveyed and reclaimed. At this time also *native American* political associations were formed in Brooklyn, and John Dikeman, their candidate for assembly, was elected, by seventy-eight votes, over N. B. Morse. In February following, forty citizens of King's county petitioned the legislature to vacate Mr. Dikeman's seat in the assembly, on the ground of his being a *clergyman* (he being a Methodist, occasionally exhorted or preached); the petitioners, however, were allowed to withdraw their petition.

November. The population of Brooklyn was ascertained to be 24,310, being a gain of 9,015 in fifteen years.

December. A proposition was made to the common council for the establishment of a *permanent water-line* in the front of the city; and the same body declined to accept the city map and plan submitted to them by the citizens' convention.

The close of this year, found a City Hall in process of erection, the Lyceum building nearly completed, the Jamaica rail road finished, and several boats almost ready for use on the new south ferry.

The *Erin Fraternal Beneficial Association* was chartered this year.

1836. January. The corporation commenced the year with a notice of their intention to apply to the legislature for an act authorizing the election of the mayor, by the people. Gen. J. G. Swift made a report on a *permanent water line* for the city. He recommended a line of bulkheads "from the outer end of the wharf east of Jackson street ferry, extending thence to the outer end of the wharf near to Jay street, and thence to the outer end of wharf near to Adams street, and thence to a point in the East river, that is two hundred and thirty-seven feet from the edge of the dock at the end of Fisher street, and thence to a point in the

East river, that is one hundred and one feet from the outer end of the easternmost wharf on the east side of Fulton Ferry; again commencing on the southerly side of the south-west wharf of Fulton Ferry, at the outer end of that wharf, and extending to a point in the East river that is two hundred and seventy feet from the north side of Furman street, in a range with the east side of Cranberry street, and thence to a point in the East river that is two hundred and forty-five feet from the north-east corner of Joralemon street dock; again commencing at the point last named, and extending thence to a point in the East river that is eight hundred and sixty-five feet from the south-west corner of J. Cornell's mill, in a range towards the south-east corner of the East wharf and Governor's island, and thence extending to a point in the East river that is 1,308 feet from ordinary high water mark, at the end of Chauncy street, and thence to a point in the East river that is two hundred feet in front of the outer end of the wharf at Red Hook."

The general, in a note to the author, in 1860, says "this line became the law of the city, but my plans, and report, and all other documents, and resolutions of the common council suddenly disappeared from its records, and whether ever returned I do not know, but the anxiety to extend lots into the water has done some injury to that water line."

The corporation, also, entertained a project to purchase the Apprentices' library (subsequently known as the City Buildings, whose site is now occupied by the City Armory) for the sum of $11,000. The purchase was completed in August following.

On the 25th of this month, the first locomotive engine was placed upon the Jamaica rail road, and on the 18th of April following, the ceremony of breaking ground for the Long Island rail road took place at Jamaica, whereat were processions, addresses, etc., appropriate to an event of such public interest.[1]

March 10th. It is announced that Samuel Cheever, Isaiah Tiffany and Alonzo G. Hammond are appointed as commissioners to lay out the city.

---

[1] See *Prime's History of Long Island*, 56, 57.

On the 28th of April, the corner-stone of the City Hall was laid, with appropriate ceremonies, and an address by the mayor, Jonathan Trotter, Esq. This was one of the greatest undertakings into which the nascent city of Brooklyn had been betrayed by the pride of its new dignities, as well as by the sanguine spirit which universally prevailed in that day of speculation and extravagance. How grand the expectations, and how buoyant the spirit of its citizens then were, may easily be inferred, from the following description of the new building, as published at the time:

> Brooklyn City Hall, now erecting, is situated at the intersection of Fulton, Court and Joralemon streets, occupying an entire block, forming a scalene triangle, of 269 feet on Fulton street, 250 on Court street, and 222 on Joralemon street. The exterior of the building is to be constructed of marble, and to have porticoes on the three fronts, with columns 36 feet, 6 inches high, ornamented with capitals of the Grecian order, from the design of the *Tower of the Winds*, resting on a pedestal base, 17 feet high, which when finished, will be 62 feet from the ground to the top of the cornice. The angles are to be surmounted by domes, and rising from the centre of the building will be a tower, of 125 feet high, which will be enriched with a cornice and entablature, supported with caryatides standing on pedestals. The whole will have a most splendid and imposing appearance when finished.
>
> The interior will be finished in the most chaste and durable style of architecture, calculated to accomodate the different public offices, courts, etc., attached to the city of Brooklyn.

Unfortunately for the pride of Brooklyn, yet perhaps a blessing in disguise, the walls of this ambitious structure, were suddenly arrested before they had scarcely risen above their foundations, by the lack of means, consequent upon the severe commercial revulsion of 1836–7. And when, after ten years of patient waiting, they began again to rise towards completion, it was on a reduced scale of architectural grandeur, and consequently at a much diminished rate of expense.

May. Jonathan Trotter, Esq., was reelected mayor of the city, by the board of aldermen; and the *Atlantic Bank* of Brooklyn, was established by act of the legislature. On the 16th of this month, the boats on the new south ferry commenced their trips.

August 23d. A collision occurred between the steam ferry boat on the Jackson and Walnut street ferry, and the steamer Boston, resulting in the sinking of the former, and the loss of six persons, together with a number of horses and wagons. On the 27th, the corner-stone of the *City Jail*, in Raymond street, near Fort Greene, was laid with appropriate ceremonies.

December. During the course of this month, the Brooklyn Lyceum was completed and occupied, and by March following, had already been furnished with a reading room, library and museum.

The *Brooklyn Bank* was also added to the moneyed institution of the city.

Furman (in his *Manuscript Notes*, VII, 337), under date of October, 1836, makes the following note: "In crossing from New York to Brooklyn, this evening, I for the first time became acquainted with the distinction between the two sides of Fulton street, Brooklyn, which I learned from the conversation of two young men. The easterly side is called the democratic side, and the westerly, the aristocratic side. The division means the whole of the place on each side of the street; and, when I think of it, the distinction is founded in truth; and there is as much real distinction in character between the two parts of this city, divided by a line through the centre of that street, as there could be between two distinct and separate places. The easterly part is inhabited by the class of people, from whom the democratic party get their large majorities, and who give them their preponderating influence in the common council of this city. * * * * On the westerly side, reside the men of order, and friends of good government, the *silk stocking gentry*, as the democrats call them." In a note, dated 1838, Mr. Furman adds, "since the above, the whigs have made great inroads upon the easterly part of the city, and having obtained the preponderance and decided majority in the 4th Ward, the above distinction no longer exists."

St. Paul's Roman Catholic and the *First Primitive Methodist* churches were established.

1837. May 1st. General *Jeremiah Johnson* was elected mayor of the city by the board of aldermen.

General Jeremiah Johnson, who has been aptly and justly styled "Brooklyn's first and foremost citizen," was a descendant, in the fourth generation, of Jan Barentsen Van Driest, who came in 1657, from Zutphen in Guelderland, and settled at Gravesend.[1] His father, Barnet Johnson, was born April 2, 1740, married September 8, 1764, to Anne Remsen, of Newtown, and died November 6, 1782, having been distinguished as an active patriot during the Revolutionary struggle. He was encamped, in command of a portion of the Kings County militia, at Harlem, in 1776, and in the following year was captured by the British, and only obtained his parole from Gen. Howe, through the kind interposition of a masonic brother. In order to help on the cause to which he was devoted, he shrank not from personal and pecuniary risks, but suggested loans from friends in his county to the American government, and himself set the example by loaning first £700 and afterwards sums amounting to $5,000, all the security for which was a simple private receipt; given, too, in times of exceeding peril and discouragement, a noble and memorable deed.

Jeremiah, his son and the subject of our sketch, was born January 23, 1766, and was, consequently, at the time of the breaking out of the war, in his eleventh year. He was old enough, says his eloquent biographer,[2] to know all about the mustering of the forces, of the invasion of the enemy, of the catastrophe of the bloody and fatal battle near his very home, of the imprisonment of his father, and of the capture of the city. Right before his eyes, in the Wallabout bay, lay anchored the dreadful prison-ships, in which during the war, eleven thousand five hundred victims perished. He saw the bands of soldiers as they traversed the country, the array of ships of war, the moving of their armed boats upon the water, and his ears were familiar with the sounds of martial music and adventure, and his eyes with the signs of invasion, and of conflict. He heard his father stigmatized as a rebel, and with his own eyes he saw English soldiers intruding on his home domain, and cutting down his finest trees remorselessly.

But that same boy lived to see another sight. In 1783, on the 25th of November, he saw the American guard relieve the British; he saw British troops marching, for the last time, down Broadway to the battery, and embarking in boats to their ships; he saw Gen. Washington and suite, at the head of American troops, marching down Pearl street to the battery; he saw the British flag pulled down, and the first American flag hoisted and waving in the breeze. That these stirring scenes made an indelible impression upon his mind and character, is evident from the fact that the reminiscences, descriptions, maps, etc., of Gen. Johnson, have since formed the largest and certainly the most valuable portion of the Revolutionary lore of Kings county, which has been handed down to our day, and has been largely drawn upon by every local and general historian of Long Island.

---

[1] It has been stated and hitherto fully believed, that the ancestor of Gen Johnson was Antonie Jansen Van Salee. This, however is an error. See *Riker*, note, p. 268; also, an article by Teunis G. Bergen, in *Brooklyn Daily Eagle*, February 20, 1851.

[2] *A Memorial Discourse on the Life, Character, and Services of General Jeremiah Johnson, of Brooklyn*," delivered before the St. Nicholas Society of Nassau Island, on 20th October, 1853. We quote largely from this glowing and truthful biography of Gen. Johnson.

His father dying before the peace, young Johnson was thrown the more upon himself; and, though the distracted times were very unfavorable to regular education, he improved his opportunities as he was able; attended night schools; taught himself, and gradually disciplined and developed the elements of a manly, self-made, and self-reliant character.

"Then, as a good, quiet citizen, he lived upon his farm in faithful industry; married his first wife, ABIGAIL, a daughter of Rem. Remsen, in 1787, who died in her eighteenth year, in 1788; his second wife, SARAH, a daughter of Teunis Rapalye, in 1791, who died in her fifty-third year, in 1825; and was the father of ten children, four of whom are now living (two sons, BARNET and JEROMUS, and two daughters, SARAH ANNE, married to Nicholas Wyckoff, and SUSANNA, married to Lambert Wyckoff), children who well sustain the paternal reputation, following in his steps of virtuous example, of benevolence and usefulness, patronizing the erection of churches and every worthy cause. His mother died on the anniversary of her birthday, in 1792, aged 47 years. The old homestead was taken down and the fine substantial mansion, now occupied by the family, was erected near the same spot, in 1801."

In 1796, he became a trustee of the town of Brooklyn, which office he continued to hold for twenty years, and which was the beginning of his public career. Naturally, of a social turn, of benevolent impulses, and public spirited withal, he took a deep interest in whatever promised to promote the welfare of his native island; and, from his very character, position, and associations, he became early connected with public affairs. Of such offices as were consistent with a home residence, and interfered not with the efficient prosecution of his own business, all were conferred upon him, which a grateful and confiding community could bestow. In 1800, he was chosen a supervisor of the town, which position he held until about 1840, during a large portion of which time he was chairman of the board. And it is within the memory of several, who were in the habit of attending the meet-

president of the United States. On the 13th of the same month, at the charter election, C. P. Smith was reelected mayor.

Cyrus Porter Smith, son of Edward and Hannah Smith, was born at Hanover, N. H., on the 5th of April, 1800. His father being a farmer, Cyrus, during his boyhood, worked on the farm, attending district schools in the winters and gaining such an education as is usually picked up by New England boys. The scanty lore thus obtained, however, so far from satisfying his craving for knowledge, served only to develop an earnest desire to go to college. That his father's slender means would not permit of this, was to the lad a matter of regret, but not an insurmountable obstacle. A liberal education he would have; so, after a season of preparation with his brother Noah, then in college, he entered Dartmouth, and managed, by teaching district schools in New Hampshire and Vermont, every winter, from the time he was eighteen years old, to pay his way through, graduating in 1824, with honor. He then commenced the study of law with chief justice T. S. Williams, of Hartford, Conn., and was admitted to practice in 1827. While at Hartford, he added to his somewhat scanty resources by teaching singing schools, during the winters, in various portions of the state, and, during one of these excursions in Bristol, became acquainted with the lady who subsequently became his wife. Having now secured his collegiate and professional education, he scanned the prospects in one part of the country and another, and finally determined to locate in the village of Brooklyn. Neither he nor any one else could have then anticipated the wonderful growth and prosperity of the place, though the energy, patience and self-reliance which Mr. Smith had already developed in securing his education would have naturally ensured his success in almost any place where he might have settled. But here his choice fell, and hither he came in September, 1827, from which time, until the following April, he neither saw a client nor made a dollar, and then his first fee was five dollars. But he would not be discouraged; and, though he could not compel business, he made friends, who stuck by him. He connected himself with Dr. Cox's (First Presbyterian) church, and was its chorister from 1827 to 1859.

During the Jackson presidential campaign of 1828, also, he came into public notice as an active whig. From 1833 to 1835 he was the clerk of the village board of trustees; and corporation counsel of the new city, from 1835 to 1839, enjoying, also, by this time, a practice equal to that of any lawyer in the city. In 1839, as we have seen, he was chosen mayor by the aldermen, the fourth which the city had had; and, at the first election by the people, in 1840, was chosen again, holding the office until 1842, a period, in all, of three years and four months. He was supervisor in the years 1836 and 1837; and, in 1848, for the purpose of furthering the establishment of a company to supply the city with gas, sought and obtained an election as alderman from the Third ward, and, to his efforts in the public councils and with private capitalists, was largely due the successful inception of Brooklyn's first gas company. Becoming interested, at an early period of his residence here, in the public schools (then under the care of school commissioners), he subsequently became a most active and influential member of the board of education, and was its president for the long period of twenty-one years. The whole vast system of public education in Brooklyn, including, at present, thirty-six schools, attended by 60,000 children, at an annual cost of half a million of dollars, was put into practical operation during Mr. Smith's official connection, and when, in March, 1868, after thirty years connection with the cause of public education, he retired from office and from the board, his associates took occasion to offer their personal and official testimony to his long and important services.

In 1856 and '57, Mr. Smith represented the city in the state senate, where he held the position of chairman of the committee on commerce and navigation, to which was entrusted the important duty of definitely establishing the shore lines of the cities of New York and Brooklyn. In all that pertained to the ferry communication between these two cities, Mr. Smith always took a deep interest; and, at an early day, he became one of the associates of the Union Ferry Company, of which, since 1855, he has been managing director, superintending its vast interests with rare skill and fidelity.

In January, 1869, Mr. Smith was appointed the acting presidency of the Brooklyn City Rail Road Company, with which he has been connected for some years; and, thus, may be said, to hold in his grasp, at the present time, the combined management of the two most important interests of Brooklyn, viz: its means of egress and ingress, and its facilities of local travel and transportation; interests, we may add, which find their surest guaranty in the admirable and comprehensive executive abilities which he has always displayed in every position of public trust.

In the year 1839, during his first term of mayoralty, Mr. Smith, in connection with the late Gen. Robert Nichols, established a city hospital which, under his fostering care, became the present Brooklyn City Hospital,[1] and has ever proved himself to this, as to other beneficent institutions, a most steady, influential and effective friend.

---

[1] See sketch of the institution in this volume.

ings of that body, to have seen Gen. Johnson presiding with a long pipe in his mouth, surrounded by other members addicted to the use of the weed, enjoying also the luxury of a smoke in the midst of their deliberations.

In 1808, and again in 1809, the general filled a seat as representative from Kings county, in the assembly, and, it is almost needless to add, discharged his duties to the entire satisfaction of his constituents.

He took an active part, also, in military matters — a taste, which perhaps inherited from his father, was undoubtedly fostered and increased by the stirring scenes of his boyhood and youth. During the war with Great Britain, from 1812 to 1815, he was at first only a junior captain, but when one was solicited to go out in command on the frontier, others declining he volunteered for the dangerous duty; and so he took precedence by consent, and early became colonel. Meanwhile, he was very active in raising troops, and took great interest in military affairs; and held himself ready at call. He was then honored with a brigadier general's commission, and was placed in the command of the 22d Brigade of Infantry, numbering 1,750 men, and in view of a defense against an invasion, then almost daily expected, was ordered on Sept. 2, 1814, to Fort Greene, in Brooklyn, on which a fort and barracks were erected, a service on which (as he wrote to his children), "I entered most willingly." There he remained in camp for three months, when peace was made between the mother country and our own; never again, we trust, to be interrupted. Whilst there he was conspicuous for his soldier-like ability; he proved himself an excellent disciplinarian; and he was a great favorite with officers and privates, watching carefully over their rights and comforts, and most impartial in discipline, except that he was said to restrain and punish his special friends the soonest and the most. He was fortunate as well, for in that three months' time, no one of his soldiers died. After the peace he was promoted to be a major general, an office which he held during his life, though not in actual command of a division.

When, in 1816, Brooklyn was erected into a *village*, Gen. Johnson's residence was left outside of the village bounds, and of course, he could not, except by his own influence in a private capacity, which he ever largely exercised, participate in its public affairs; but, in 1835, the *City Charter* was obtained, and the bounds were so extended as to include the 8th and 9th wards, which brought his home again within the lines. In 1837 he was elected mayor of the city of Brooklyn, and reelected in 1838 and 1839. As a public officer he was faithful, prompt and indefatigable, while his punctuality was proverbial. The hour of meeting for the common council was 3 P. M., and promptly to the moment, the general was always in the chair, and ordered the roll to be called; if a quorum was present, the business went on; if not, the board stood adjourned to the next time of meeting.

Indicative of this prominent trait of punctuality, is his portrait, now hanging in the City Hall, in which he is represented as holding his watch, with his forefinger pointing to the minute hand, which had traveled past the even hour of the appointment.

In 1840 he was elected again a member of the state legislature, and, in 1841, was reelected to the same responsible position. In 1848 he was chosen the first president of the St. Nicholas Society of Nassau Island, an office for which he was preeminently fitted, and which he held until his death. In 1849, he was unanimously elected an honorary member of the American Institute, of which he had been a member since the year 1836, and at the time of his death he held the position of chairman of its board of agriculture.[1] It may, also, be mentioned in this connection, that, while a member of the assembly, in 1841, he was quite active as chairman of the committee on agriculture, in completing and urging to its final passage the act for the encouragement of agriculture in the state of New York, from the operations of which act, that department of labor has, and it is to be hoped, will continue to derive lasting benefits.

"Besides all these," says his biographer, "there was hardly an occasional or incidental duty in the business of agriculture, of education, of improvements, of reference, of management, to which he was not summoned; as a striking instance of which, I mention as illustrating his business capacity and experience, as well as the reputation and high confidence he maintained amidst the community; that a member of the bar informed me he could hardly go into any search of title in Brooklyn, without coming in contact with his name in all partitions of property in four cases out of five."

The general made no pretensions to literature, and seldom wrote anything for the public eye; he nevertheless wielded an efficient pen, when his feelings were aroused, or his sense of justice and propriety were violated by official malpractices or the wrong doing of others. He was fond of putting down memoranda and scraps of history, and interesting facts which his observation and experience had gathered; though he did it in an incidental way, rather like one meaning to gather them for further arrangement, and as materials for a more labored attempt. Sometimes he did thus bring them into a more collected form, and write them out partially, for a lecture before some lyceum, or society, or for the use of some inquiring friend; still, even in the lecture, often putting down but heads, leaving memory and speech to fill up the intervals. Thus we have reminiscences of Brooklyn, a discourse on the Revolutionary war, notes on the early settlement of Williamsburgh and Bushwick, and Long Island generally, and accounts of some of the old families of the island. He seems, also, to have been fond of taking up some religious or biblical theme, or sacred history of truth, and writing down his thoughts. Sometimes, too, he ventured to indulge the dangerous luxury of courting the muse of poetry, oftener in satiric and political than sentimental strain. Sometimes he is exploring the lines of townships, reporting upon records, searching into titles. One large volume contains all the orders given out by him as brigadier-general, and facts connected with his official military life. Sometimes there is a communication on the finances of Brooklyn, sometimes upon its rights; now an essay on the fall of nations, now some fragmentary folio leaves, upon the reformation in France. Sometimes there are translations from Erasmus, and other old authors. Well acquainted with the language of Holland, he was fond of making translations from its writers; and his excellent translation of *Von der Donk's History of New Netherland*, evincing knowledge of the tongue of the fatherland, is highly complimented by Thompson, in his *History of Long Island*. Indeed, there has not been an author meditating a work upon Long Island, or publishing one, who has not conferred with General Jeremiah Johnson, and treasured up his words; and who has not borrowed and used his communications and his notes, and made grateful mention of him and his assistance. Thompson, Prime, Onderdonk, Strong, Riker, in their histories, all do this; and generally give his personal history and eulogium. Some publish pages of his communications, all have introduced his facts. Thus it has happened, that in one shape or another, these have been long since and repeatedly brought before the public, and form materials of our known and popular histories.

---

[1] At one time, also, he was judge of the Common Pleas.

"He was a modest, consistent, obedient, habitual, conforming Christian. A cheerful, hopeful, and confiding religiousness characterized him, united to an active spirit, ever ready to be serviceable. He belonged to the *old* Dutch Reformed Congregation, in Brooklyn. In that congregation, from boyhood to old age, he was a steadfast worshiper. For fifty years he was there a communicant. He was, we may say, a standing member of the consistory, in and out, alternating, according to the parish method, continually. He was clerk of the consistory for forty years, until his resignation in 1843. On all business committees he was the working member; and, when church or parsonage was to be erected, his name is prominent among the building committee, in council, or for accomplishment. There is also a religious tone in all his lectures and communications, which bespeaks the religious man. And the subject of his compositions is frequently a scriptural or religious one — notes on Genesis, remarks on the Catechism, particularly on the Lord's Supper; the republic of the Hebrews, etc., showing his habitual interest in subjects kindred to his faith. Some of these communications are particularly affecting. One is endorsed "Remarks to my Children, when I took command in the war of 1812," when he knew not how soon he might fill a soldier's grave. Another is a record of the charge given to him by his father, Barnet, an hour before his death, by him recorded, so he writes, "to transmit to his children and their posterity the desire of their worthy father, and to show with what zeal he desired to promote the glory of God; hoping that he may, with this precept, together with the example left them of his piety, inspire them (with the help of God), with principles similar to those he possessed." The charge was this: "My son, I am about departing this life, and earnestly desire that you pay strict attention to the religion I have taken care to instruct you in, and that you in no wise forsake our Dutch church; and further, that you obey the commands of your mother, and assist her in supporting and taking care of your brothers and sisters. Herewith, God give you grace — farewell."

Gen. Johnson was remarkably active, prompt, decided; never idle; of indefatigable industry. His long uninterrupted healthfulness kept up his activity, his elasticity and constitutional cheerfulness; he was kindly to all, very warm-hearted and affectionate; generous in all his instincts, sympathizing with the young. The boy lived on even in his aged heart, and had never died out. He was scrupulous and exact in fulfilling his duties, and attended to his trusts with a peculiarly Holland integrity and fidelity; punctual to the time, and expecting punctuality from others. Quick tempered he was, but he bore no resentment; he was ready to be reconciled. If his indignation was aroused, it was at manifest injustice, cruelty or wrong, and seldom personally, except there were an attempt at imposition or deceit; for frank and above board himself, he expected and allowed no trickery in others. He commanded to an almost unexampled degree the confidence of the community, and he had no sympathy with anything that tended at all to impair private or public faith. He was of social, genial mood; he was fond of his pipe, even to the last, and handled it from his seventeenth year to within a quarter of an hour of his death. He was fond of his gun, relishing such active sport even in his old age. He was fond of walking, and of manly exercise; from youth up, he was an early riser, and he went early to bed. He was temperate and simple in his diet; "one dish" was a general word and practice at his meals. He took pleasure in seeing his friends, was full of conversation, abounded in anecdote, had hopeful views of life, and took interest in passing events, and in personal history. His free, easy, unreserved manners, made him ever a welcome and delightful guest. He could give information upon the gravest and most important themes, he could sympathize with the most common. If there was an ancient tree[1] or stump connected with some memorial of the past, he knew of it, and he was the one to mark it by a monumental stone. If there was any interesting incident, he laid it up in the treasure house of his memory, and brought it out as occasion served. His perception was quick and clear, and his tact admirable; and well nigh to the last, his eye was not dim, nor his natural force abated, and his voice continued full and strong.

His death, which occurred on the 20th of October, 1852, was in harmony with his life — calm, trustful and serene, and caused a wide-spread and profound sensation of sorrow throughout the city of Brooklyn. The union, state and city flags were displayed at half-mast on the City Hall and other public buildings. The municipal authorities, the military authorities, the board of supervisors, the social institutions, the agricultural societies, etc., all immediately held special meetings, passed resolutions of condolence and respect, and attended his funeral as mourners. All the press united to do him honor, and each newspaper gave full detail of his public and private life, and recorded his well-merited eulogy. The last solemn obsequies, in accordance with his own particular request just previous to his decease, were unaccompanied with any military or official display; they were simple, earnest and heartfelt; and now he rests among his kindred in beautiful Greenwood.

May 11th. The three banks of the city, in accordance with the advice of a public meeting of citizens, suspended specie payment. It was a season of great pressure in the money market, and small bills or *shinplasters*, issued by corporations and individuals, were extensively circulated. The new City Hall also succumbed to the hard times, and its erection was suspended in August. In September the common council determined to petition congress to make Brooklyn a *port of entry*.

The *Brooklyn Sabbath School Union* was organized, and reorganized in 1855. The *Ebenezer Methodist Episcopal* church was formed.

1838. April 18th. Gen. Jeremiah Johnson was reelected mayor of Brooklyn. City matters were very dull. On the same day the

---

[1] See *Strong's Flatbush*, p. 39.

Greenwood Cemetery was incorporated as a joint stock company; and on the 11th of April, 1839, was incorporated as an association of lot owners.

St. Mary's Protestant Episcopal church was established.

1839. January. Memorable for the establishment of the *Board of Education.* The commissioners for laying out the city completed their labors.

May 9. *Cyrus P. Smith*, Esq., was elected mayor of the city by the aldermen.

July. The tomb of the martyrs, at the Wallabout, was purchased by Benjamin Romaine, Esq., and appropriate inscriptions added as they now appear (see vol. I, p. 372). During this month, also, President Van Buren visited the city, and received its hospitalities at Duflon's hotel.

August 24th. The Hon. Henry Clay visited Brooklyn, and was escorted through the city, by a grand procession. He made an address to the people *in a field*, near the new City Hall. In September, Gov. Seward visited the city, and was entertained at the City hotel.

August 27th. The Fulton and South ferries were consolidated.

The *Emerald Benevolent Association* was organized this year.

The *Centenary Methodist Episcopal* church was formed.

1840. April 14. The first election of the mayor *by the people*, in conformity with an act of the legislature, resulted in the choice of Cyrus P. Smith, Esq.

The city of Brooklyn, at this time, covered a district of twelve miles square, having a population of over 30,000, thirty-five miles of regulated, paved and lighted streets, two markets, a large police, an efficient fire department, a good government, twenty-three churches, three banks, whose united capital was $1,000,000, one saving's bank, two lyceums (one for apprentices, the other at the Navy Yard), good schools, libraries, etc.

The Atlantic dock company was this year incorporated, with a capital of $1,000,000.

The *Pierrepont street* Baptist, *Calvary* Protestant Episcopal, *and South Gowanus* Reformed Dutch churches were organized.

1841. April 10th. The citizens of Brooklyn united with those of New York in celebrating the obsequies of General Harrison, Few men, as will be seen from this brief sketch, have been more conspicuous in promoting the welfare and progress of Brooklyn, during the most important period of its growth and development (1830 – 1869) than Uncle Cyrus, as he is respectfully called by many of his oldest fellow citizens, and by thousands of the public school children who have grown up around him to positions of usefulness and trust. Never presumptuous in seeking public positions, but always faithful in the discharge of their duties, he has made a lasting impress upon his day and generation, and has secured the approbation of all who knew him.

June 15th. The *Atlantic Dock* was announced as being just commenced.

October 19th. A meeting was held for the establishment of a *Brooklyn Athenæum*, embracing a library, with reading room, etc.

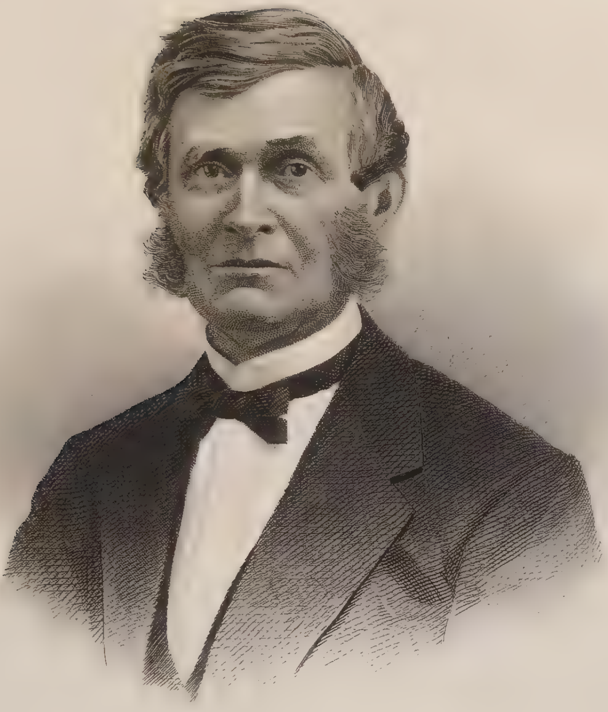
December 29th. The large ropewalk owned by Messrs. P. & A. Schermerhorn and occupied by Schermerhorn, Banker & Co., fronting on Smith street and parallel with and between State and Schermerhorn streets, was destroyed by fire. The house and machinery were valued at $40,000, and the stock at $25,000. It was said to have been the most extensive establishment of the kind in the United States, and was the last one remaining in the compact portion of the city. Its destruction, therefore, removed a barrier to the improvement of property in that vicinity.

The *Brooklyn City Bible Society*, auxiliary to the American Bible Society, was this year established. Also, the *Shamrock Benevolent Society*, and the *Brooklyn Eagle* newspaper.

1842. The principal events of this year were, the consecration, *March* 3d, of *Emmanuel* (Protestant Episcopal) church ; the passage of an act, *April* 1st, by the legislature, incorporating the Hamilton Literary Association ; the purchase during the same month of the grounds occupied by Greenwood Cemetery ; the election (on the 12th) of *Henry C. Murphy*, Esq., for mayor, by a majority of two-hundred and sixty-five votes over the then incumbent C. P. Smith, Esq. ; the change of the Female Institute in Hicks street, into a fine hotel, now known as the Mansion house ; the destruction (on the 15th of *May*), by incendiarism, of the well known Joralemon mansion, owned and occupied by Tunis Joralemon, Esq. ; the consecration, on the 28th of *July*, of Dr. Stone's church (Presbyterian) in South Brooklyn; and the death, *December* 5th, of James B. Clarke, Esq. *St. Luke's* Episcopal, *Sixth* Methodist Episcopal in South Brooklyn, and *Wallabout* Presbyterian, *Church of the Restoration*, Universalist, and the *Christian Disciples*, were this year established.

HENRY CRUSE MURPHY, the eldest child of John G. Murphy (whose biography we have given on page 24 of this volume), was born in Brooklyn, in 1810, and has ever since been a resident of the county of Kings. After receiving a preparatory education in the high school in New York, he entered Columbia College, from which he graduated in 1830. He then commenced the study of the law, with the late Peter W. Radcliff, of Brooklyn, but practicing the profession in the city of New York — one of the best lawyers of his day, and a man of established purity and uprightness of character — and was admitted to the bar, in 1833. In the year following, he married Miss Amelia Greenwood, daughter of Richard Greenwood, of Haverstraw, Rockland county, New York. He soon afterwards entered into partnership with the Hon. John A. Lott, constituting a law firm, which under the name of Lott & Murphy, and subsequently by the addition of Hon. John Vanderbilt, continued for over twenty years a leading office in the city and county. Though applying himself assiduously to his duties of his profession, Mr. Murphy found time to bestow on literary and political subjects, and was a frequent contributor to several periodicals of the day, particularly the *North American Review*, edited by the late Robert Walsh, for which he continued to write for several years. He also early became known in political circles, in which he has since occupied a foremost position.

At the time Mr. Murphy entered public life, the state of New York had been long pursuing, in regard to its moneyed interests, a policy which had placed the banks, in every section of the state, under the control of petty monopolists, created by political favoritism. A convention of the democratic party, to which he has always been connected, assembled at Herkimer, in 1834, to which Mr. Murphy was elected a delegate. On its organization, he was appointed chairman on resolutions, and then, for the first time, exhibited that foresight and energy of character, for which he has since been distinguished. He took occasion at once, to introduce in the committee, and subsequently in the convention, a resolution denouncing the above policy, although the patronage which it created had been distributed for the benefit of his own party. Violent opposition was made to the adoption of the resolution, but it finally passed, with some modification. It was, however, never permitted to see the light, having been suppressed in the official re-



[illegible]

port of the proceedings of the convention. Still it had its effect. The fact that the resolution had been adopted and suppressed soon became known. The *New York Evening Post*, then edited by the late William Leggett, and many other journals, exposed the unfair proceeding, took up the doctrine, and gave it a strength and popularity, which resulted, in a few years, in the utter prostration of the system of monopolized banking in the state of New York.

Mr. Murphy was, soon after, appointed counsel to the corporation of his native city, and, consequently, became familiar with the nature and operation of municipal corporations generally. In 1842, he was elected mayor of Brooklyn. During his administration, he introduced a system of retrenchment, which actually kept the expenditures of that city within its income. He commenced this retrenchment by the reduction of his own salary. Before the expiration of his term of office as mayor, he was elected member of the twenty-eighth congress, and took his seat accordingly in the house of representatives, in 1843. Although one of its youngest members, he at once occupied a high position in that body; and, on the tariff question, advocated a system of duties for revenue purposes only, favoring the doctrine of free trade.

On the question of the annexation of Texas, he advocated the measure, but advised its postponement, in order that Mexico might be afforded an opportunity to give her assent, and that more unanimity might be secured thereby in favor of it in the United States. In view of the events which transpired, immediately upon the adoption of that measure, the wisdom of this recommendation must be admitted. On other questions of public policy, he took an equally prominent position; and, with ability, opposed the alteration of the naturalization laws, and strongly urged the inconsistency of such a measure with the genius of our government, and its bad effects on the settlement of the public domain. For the splendid dry dock, which has been constructed at Wallabout bay, Brooklyn is entirely indebted to Mr. Murphy's zeal and perseverance.

He occupied a notable position as a member of the convention which assembled, in 1846, to frame a new constitution for this state. Here he brought forward several important provisions, some of which were eventually incorporated into that instrument. His course on this, as on most occasions, met the approbation of his constituents, and on his return from the convention, he was again elected to congress by the largest vote ever previously polled in his district, at the election in that year.

During the interval which followed in his occupying an official position, after the close of his second term in congress, he entered zealously into the projects for the advancement of Brooklyn. He took a leading part in the different measures which accomplished the introduction of water into the city, from the streams on Long Island, and prepared most of the laws which were passed by the legislature upon that subject.

On the accession of Mr. Buchanan to the presidency, Mr. Murphy received the appointment of minister to the Hague. Identified, as he had long been, with the efforts made to rescue from oblivion the early history of our state, particularly that portion of it which relates to its first colonization by Holland, the selection elicited general approval. While looking after the interests of his government in that country, he found time to communicate a series of most interesting letters upon Holland, and other parts of Europe, which were published in the *Brooklyn Eagle*, and many of them extensively in other papers. They are considered valuable for the great amount of information which they embody, touching the relations of the Netherlands and their people with our state. When the rebellion broke out, Mr. Murphy was still minister of the United States to the Netherlands. It was exceedingly important at the time, that the governments of Europe should be correctly informed of the precise facts of the case, and of the real relation of the states to the federal government, in order that foreign powers might readily see and adhere to their well-established line of duty. Accordingly, Minister Murphy addressed to the government of the Netherlands, an elaborate exposition of that relationship, and clearly pointed out the absolute supremacy of the general government in all matters committed to it by the constitution, and the equally absolute rights of the states over all matters not delegated to the United States by that instrument. He seized the opportunity to show, at the same time, that the rebellion owed its origin chiefly to sectional hate and the ambition of the leaders. This paper was printed at length in the *Diplomatic Correspondence* of 1861 and 1862, and was highly praised by men of all parties. Upon his return to the United States, he announced his determination to uphold the national flag against secession, and was immediately elected to the senate of the state as a Union man. This position he steadfastly maintained during the whole war. At the state convention of the democratic party, in 1862, he was chosen temporary chairman, and insisted that all citizens, without distinction of party, should support the administration in putting down the rebellion. In the annual oration before the Tammany Society, on the 4th of July, 1863, he took no less patriotic ground in behalf of the Union. Indeed, he was no less zealous in acts than in words; for mainly by his exertions, the Third Senatorial Regiment — the 159th New York State Volunteers, Colonel Molineux — was raised, and the bounties paid to the men, without calling upon either the state, city or county authorities for that purpose. Such, in brief, is the history of his action in regard to the rebellion.

Mr. Murphy has been elected four times to the senate, for successive terms, and is now in his eighth year of service in that body. He has taken a conspicuous part in all important debates and discussions, and particularly distinguished himself in his efforts to repeal the law in regard to ecclesiastical tenures, and to establish an insulated quarantine in the lower bay of New York — measures which he successfully carried through. He has always been in favor of carrying on different internal improvements throughout the state by state aid without regard to the section where they were proposed, provided they contributed to the general prosperity. Having always been a strict constructionist, Mr. Murphy voted against ratifying the amendment to the constitution of the United States abolishing slavery, holding that, as the federal government is one of delegated powers exclusively, and as the subject of slavery was not embraced in the constitution, and was to be disposed of only by the states where it existed, the power of amendment is necessarily limited to the subjects embraced in the constitution, and does not legitimately apply to that of abolishing slavery.

In the convention of 1867 – 8, which was called to remodel the constitution of the state, Mr. Murphy was chosen a delegate from the state at large and took his seat. He was prevented, however, from attending a portion of time occupied by that body in its deliberations in consequence of sickness, but nevertheless took part in many of the most important discussions. Occupying a prominent position in the democratic party, he has twice been unanimously its candidate for the senate of the United States, from the state of New York, but has failed to be elected in consequence of the ascendancy of the other party in the legislature. His long experience in public affairs and his intimate acquaintance with the interests of the state, peculiarly qualify him for the position.

In debate, Senator Murphy always speaks extemporaneously; in argument, he is close and logical; in manner, earnest and apparently severe; and, when he warms to his subject, history, precedent and analogy all seem to rise unbidden to fortify the positions he assumes. In private character, he possesses, in an eminent degree, all the essential elements of a high-toned and honorable gentleman; and no public man has, probably, passed thus far through the trying ordeal of a legislative career, so entirely free from the taint of corruption. Though eminently a practical man, taking a deep and active interest in public affairs — a man of the people — he is a scholar, and a ripe, good one. To the gratification of this taste, Mr. Murphy has given much of his time and means. During his travels, at home and abroad, he has accumulated one of the finest private libraries in America, and possesses the full power to appreciate and enjoy it; and however much he may win honor and fame as a public spirited citizen, or a successful political leader, his claims as one of the *literati* can never be lost sight of, and will constitute for him an enduring fame. Mr. Murphy's contributions to literature are of a very valuable character, and include a number of translations from the Dutch language, of which he is a perfect master.

1843. February 27. A memorial was presented to the legislature, from the common council of Brooklyn, remonstrating against the passage of a bill prepared by the common council of New York, to tax the personal property of citizens of Brooklyn doing business in New York.

April 11th. The charter election resulted in the choice of Mr. *Joseph Sprague*, democrat, by three hundred and eleven votes over David A. Bokee, Esq., whig.

JOSEPH SPRAGUE, born in Leicester, Mass., July 25th, 1783, was the son of William Sprague, and the eldest of fourteen children.[1] His father was a wealthy farmer, at which occupation Joseph was kept, with such intervals as were necessary to enable him to obtain an education, until the age of twenty-one. At that period, finding his strength unequal to this calling, and desirous of some larger sphere of action, he went to Boston, where he became clerk in a wholesale store. After spending about two years in this situation, he accepted the offer of some friends to furnish him with credit, and became a country merchant, "timorously struggling," as he says "from two to three years, on crackers and cheese, avoiding the expense of board," until affairs in Europe caused an embargo, and orders in council paralyzed active business. Unable longer to keep up, he sold out, paid his debts, and during the few months of leisure, which followed, he took another spell, at Leicester Academy, in the improvement of his education. Shortly after, his father, desirous to have him near him, and partly as a recompense for what he considered his due in suggesting to him, and aiding in the very profitable business of card-making, in which he was then engaged, deeded to him a small farm of forty acres, with house and barn. One year's cultivation, however, convinced young Sprague that farming was not his *forte*, so selling his farm, he invested the proceeds ($700), in wire cards for carding wool and cotton, with which, in 1809, he came to New York, where he immediately engaged as a school teacher, in the meantime disposing of his little stock of cards. Two years later, October, 1811, he married Maria De Bevoise, belonging to one of the oldest and most honorable families of the then village of Bedford, now within the city limits of Brooklyn. For seven years subsequently to his marriage, he resided partly at Bedford, and partly at New York. In 1812, the war which arose between Great Britain and the United States increased the demand for domestic manufactures, and woolen cards rose to an unprecedented price, as high even as ten or twelve dollars per dozen. At this suggestion, therefore, his father and brothers established a card factory at Leicester, Mass., while he managed the sales in New York city, on equal profits. This proving a very profitable enterprise, he left off teaching, and gave his whole time and attention to the sale of American cotton and woolen goods on commission. The declaration of peace, however, changed the aspect of business, and he was induced to invest his little capital in the wholesale dry goods trade; but domestics being soon depreciated by the free importation of foreign goods he sold out his interest to his partner. After this, he purchased, at auction, a valuable lot of card machinery at low rates, and, having secured a contract with a southern house, continued to supply it with cards for three years, with much profit to himself.

---

[1] For genealogy see *Sprague Genealogy*, and *Washburne's History of Leicester, Mass.*

In the year 1819, Mr. Sprague purchased a house (now No. 115) in Fulton street, Brooklyn. It was then a pleasant country residence, surrounded by apple trees, open in front to the East river, and in the rear on vacant lots. This house, in 1854, was the only one standing of those that then existed within many blocks of it, except the Episcopal parsonage adjoining St. Ann's church burial ground. No streets were opened above Middagh, westerly to Love lane which is now closed. The only pavements in town were from Sands street to the two ferries. Only three churches, the Dutch, Episcopal, and Methodist, then existed. In the year 1822 Mr. Sprague became one of the chief founders of the First Presbyterian church of Brooklyn,[1] aided in its erection, and afterwards personally superintended an extension of it, filling in the sunken ground, setting trees and fence around it, etc.

In the year 1823, an effort (three previous ones having failed) was made to obtain a charter for the Long Island Bank. Mr. Sprague spent a winter at Albany, where by energetic and persistent effort he succeeded in obtaining the passage of the desired bill through the legislature. The day following, also, a bill of incorporation of the Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company, passed the same ordeal, having been much indebted to Mr. Sprague's influence. Both of these institutions received the hearty support of the inhabitants of

---

[1] In Cranberry street on site now occupied by Plymouth church.

Brooklyn, which was indebted to them for a new impetus to its growth and prosperity. When subsequently, through the mismanagement of a principal officer, the company became involved, Mr. Sprague's sagacity discovered the leak which had then amounted to forty-eight thousand dollars and his business tact and character redeemed the institution from ruin, and placed it again upon a firm foundation. In 1825, he was elected a member of the board of trustees of the village, and in May, 1827, was chosen its president, at a salary of four hundred and fifty dollars. To this office he was reelected for four successive years, viz: 1828, '29, '30, '31; when, worn down with his arduous duties during the memorable cholera season of 1832, he was superseded by George Hall. The village at this time comprised five districts, each represented by two trustees. In 1826, he, together with Col. Alden Spooner, bought for the sum of three thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars, twenty acres of land since known as Fort Greene, which they offered to the town for the site of a poor house. It was accepted, a poor house built theron, and Mr. Sprague was one of the building committee. At his suggestion, also, five acres of this ground was set apart in town meeting, as a free burial place. In April, 1828, he proposed to the board of trustees the purchase of an ox and cart, with which to remove the filth and garbage from the streets of the village. This, which at first excited much remark and ridicule, proved to be such a public improvement, that a second ox cart was provided, with which the whole street cleaning of the village was performed from 1828 to 1832, at an annual expense of five hundred and twenty-five dollars, or one-half less than it has since cost to clean (?) the streets of a single ward. The manure thus obtained proved to be more than enough to pay the expenses of cleaning, and the whole was done under the personal supervision of this indefatigable public magistrate. Indeed, President Sprague seemed to be actuated solely by the determination not to allow the expense of any department of the government to exceed an economical appropriation; and in carrying out this idea, he often found himself obliged to multiply vetoes, which in turn provoked much censure and opposition. It is a fact honorable to Mr. Sprague, that for these many years, while his days were freely given up to the public interest in the performance of his official duties, *his own work* in attending to the business of his factory, was performed *at night.*

In April, 1833, he was the means of procuring a city charter for Brooklyn, and in 1834, became the first president of the Long Island Insurance Company, which office he held for ten years, during a part of which he carried on his card factory. During his presidency of this institution, politics and speculation ran high, and he found himself obliged to contend persistently against the making of loans on property, then rated far above its normal value, for which action he was often soundly berated. But the financial crash of '37, proved his sagacity, inasmuch as through his foresight and caution, the capital of the company ($200,000) was saved entire. In 1834, the Brooklyn Bank went into operation, but received a severe blow in the dishonesty of its first teller. It was, however, upheld by the exertions of several individuals, among whom Mr. Sprague was conspicuous.

In 1843, he was elected mayor of the city of Brooklyn, by a democratic majority of 311 votes, and was reelected, in 1844, by a majority of 417 over George Hall, the temperance candidate, and by a majority of 791 over Hon. William Rockwell (whig), late judge of the supreme court. During his first term of the mayoralty, the whig members of the common council refused to attend the meetings of the board, whereupon Mayor Sprague had them arrested upon the charge of misdemeanor in the neglect of public business, and compelled their obedience. In 1848, he was distinguished as one of the foremost advocates for the opening of Washington Park on Fort Greene. He was repeatedly a member of the board of supervisors, where he occupied a seat as late as 1851, and where he always commanded a large amount of influence. He was one of the most zealous and efficient members of the board of consolidation which perfected the plan of union between Brooklyn, Williamsburgh and Bushwick. He, was also, chairman of the police·committee in that body, and drew up a plan for remodelling the police department, which failed, however, to meet the sanction of the legislature. He was, also, at the time of his death, one of the directors of the Mechanics Bank, and a member of Hohenlinden Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons, having been for many years grand treasurer of the Grand Lodge of the State of New York.

Thus, rendered independent by the industry and thrift of his earlier years, crowned with the esteem of his fellow citizens, and occupied in the duties of those many offices of trust and honor which they had conferred upon him, he passed pleasantly and gently down the vale of years. His time and talents were ever devoted to the promotion of the best interests of the city of his adoption, and, in regard to all of these, whether it was the reduction of taxes, ferry rights, education, or any useful scheme of public economy, of benevolence, he was ever ready to speak publicly, to write fearlessly, and to labor earnestly.

In politics, he was a leader in the Tompkins and Jackson school of democracy, yet he never allowed his conscience to become subservient to the claims of party. In private business relations his integrity was above all suspicion, while in his public duties he was rigidly honest, evincing a firm determination to have every department of the municipal government carried out with efficiency and economy.

As a Christian he was a most sincere believer in the truth and mercy of God, and a humble and conscientious follower of his word, as was evidenced not less by his life, than by his journals, and especially by a copy of the Bible, his companion for more than twenty years, whose pages were marked at many of their choicest passages.

In short, both in public and private life, few men were ever more highly esteemed, or in death more honored and lamented than Joseph Sprague. Life closed to him on the morning of the 12th of December, 1854, in the seventy-second year of his age. The encomiums of the press, the transactions of public bodies, the flags displayed at half-mast, the large attendance at his funeral, including all the members of the different branches of the city government, and the universal expression of sorrow, which was heard on every hand, testified to the respect which was felt for his public services, and his eminent personal character.

June. On the 13th of this month President Tyler visited the city, and, on the 22d, the Universalist church on Pierrepont street was dedicated.

July 21st. The corner-stone of the Pierrepont street Baptist church was this day laid.

September 9th. The Brooklyn City Guards made their first parade, in fatigue dress; on the 12th, the corner-stone of the new Methodist church in Sand street, near Fulton, was laid; and, during this month, also, a line of omnibuses was established between Fulton Ferry and East Brooklyn.

November 11th. The *Brooklyn Daily News*, edited by John S. Noble, was discontinued.

From a report made to the common council on the eighth of January, 1844, we learn that the whole number of buildings erected, or in progress of erection, during the year 1843, were as follows:

WARDS.	ERECTED.	IN PROGRESS.	WARDS.	ERECTED.	IN PROGRESS.
First	17	68	Eighth	9	2
Second	22	26	Ninth	24	2
Third	24	54			
Fourth	31	8	Total	308	262
Fifth	31	13			308
Sixth	62	55			
Seventh	88	34	Aggregate Total		570

These buildings were chiefly of brick, and seventy-five were with stores. Fourteen were in the place of buildings destroyed by fire, and four were church edifices.

1844. The funeral of William Voris, late president of the Brooklyn fire department, on the 18th of March, was the largest and most imposing public demonstration since the famous interment of the bones of the martyrs, in 1808. The *Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor*, was established on the 26th, and the Pierrepont street Baptist church was dedicated, on the 28th of this month.

April 4th. Was rendered memorable by a riot between the native Americans and the Irish in the neighborhood of Dean and Court and Wyckoff streets. The disturbance was finally quelled, but two companies of uniformed militia were kept under arms during the night, and the public feeling continued in an excited state for some time thereafter.

April 9th. At the charter election, Mr. *Joseph Sprague* was re-elected mayor, by a majority of seven hundred and ninety-one over William Rockwell, democrat, and of four hundred and ninety-seven over George Hall, temperance candidate.

May 24th. The corner-stone of the Long Island Rail Road tunnel in Atlantic street, was laid, and the tunnel was opened for travel on 3d of December following. The (Unitarian) *Church of the Savior*, in Pierrepont street, was consecrated on the 24th of April, and the Rev. F. A. Farley installed pastor; on the 16th of June, congress passed a law directing the construction of a stone dry-dock at the Brooklyn Navy Yard, a measure which was largely due to the persistent efforts of Senator Henry C. Murphy, of Brooklyn. The corner stone of the Church of the Pilgrims (Congregational) corner of Henry and Remsen streets, was laid on the 3d of July; and on the 18th of September, the corner-stone of the Second African Methodist Episcopal Church, in Navy street, was laid.

The *Church of the Holy Trinity* (Episcopal); the *Eighth*, and the *Pacific Street* Methodist Episcopal, the *Ashbury* (colored) Methodist Episcopal, and the *Mariner's Union Bethel Church*, were this year founded.

In May. The *Brooklyn Protestant Benevolent and Library Association* was organized and *Laborers' Union Beneficial Society*.

1845. The ferry question, and the establishment of a permanent City Hospital, were, at this time, the leading topics of interest and public discussion among the citizens of Brooklyn; resulting, in the passage of an act (May 14), vesting the power of granting leases in an independent board of commissioners; and the incorporation (May 8th), of the *Brooklyn City Hospital.*

April 8. The charter election resulted in the choice of *Thos. G. Talmadge*, democrat, for mayor, by a majority of 1,492 votes over George Hall, whig.

THOMAS GOIN TALMADGE (for whose genealogy we refer to *Thompson's History of Long Island*, vol. II, p. 461), was born in Somerset, N. J., on the 22d of October, 1801. In 1819, he came to New York city, where he became a clerk in the mercantile establishment of Mr. Abraham Van Nest, and from 1823 to 1836 was engaged in the wholesale grocery business. In 1823, he married Miss Miller of Morris county, N. J., a sister of Hon. Jacob W. Miller, United States senator from New York; she died in the year 1834, and in 1835, he married a second wife, a daughter of Cornelius Van Brunt, of Brooklyn. In 1836, he was one of the foremost supporters of Martin Van Buren, and was elected a representative from New York city, in the state legislature. From 1838 to 1839, he was a member of the New York common council, and at one time, president of the board of aldermen of that city. In 1840, he became a citizen of Brooklyn, and at once took a prominent position in public life; from 1842 to 1843 representing the 8th Ward; and from 1844 to 1845, the 6th Ward, in the board of aldermen of that city. From 1845 to 1846, he was (democratic), mayor of Brooklyn, and, in 1846, was appointed judge of the county court, by Gov. Silas Wright. In 1848 (his second wife having died in 1843), he married the youngest daughter of Judge Teunis Joralemon of Brooklyn. In 1845, he was appointed by Gov. Bouck, and without his previous knowledge, as Loan Commissioner of the United States Deposit Fund, for Kings county, and, in 1858, became the president of the Broadway Rail Road Company, of Brooklyn. He was, also, a member of the Chamber of Commerce.

During Mr. Talmadge's mayoralty, the new City Hall was erected, and the 8th Ward (Gowanus), to which he removed after his third marriage, is much indebted to his enterprise in developing its progress and growth — the Third avenue being the first one opened, about 1840, along the bay, and the second one being the Fifth avenue; both of which passed through the Van Brunt and Talmadge farms. Buildings soon commenced on that vicinity, and its subsequent growth was rapid.

Mr. Talmadge was a politician of the old school, and was consequently a little out of date with the politicians of the present era. Latterly he affiliated with the national wing of the democratic party, and was chairman of the national general committee. Upright and sincere in all his dealings; dignified and courteous in his bearing, he won the respect and esteem of all who knew him.

M. Talmadge died May 4th, 1863.

July 1st. On this day, a line of omnibuses between Fulton and South ferries was established by George Van Brunt.

October 24th. A large meeting of the citizens of Brooklyn and Williamsburgh was this day held, at which was proposed *the union of the two cities*, as one.

November 4th. The common council, in secret session, discussed the advisability of erecting a City Hall.

The *Long Island Bank* was this year incorporated, and also the *Brooklyn Benevolent Society* (*Roman Catholic*) instituted to carry out the benevolent designs of the venerable Cornelius Heeney, Esq.

The *Atlantic White Lead Company*, *St. Patrick's Roman Catholic* and the *German Evangelical* church were founded this year.

1846. April 14. The charter election resulted in the election of Mr. *Francis B. Stryker*, whig, as mayor, by a majority of 1150 votes over Thomas G. Talmadge, democrat.

Francis Burdett Stryker, son of Burdett Stryker (so named after the English radical, Francis Burdett), was born in Brooklyn, December 11th, 1811, and received such education as the times afforded, partly at the primary department of Erasmus Hall, at Flatbush, and partly at the hands of other teachers in his native village. At the age of fourteen, shortly after his father's death, he became an apprentice to Jeremiah Wells, carpenter, doing business in Poplar, between Henry and Hicks streets, and who was, also, at that time the chief engineer of the village fire department. Having served his time, he continued to work at his trade as a journeyman until 1838, when he was elected one of the three tax collectors of the city. Having discharged these duties, he commenced April, 1839, working at his trade for his brother Burdett; until, in 1840, he was chosen sheriff (on the whig ticket), in which capacity he served for three years, returning then to his trade in his brother's employ. While thus working as journeyman, at twelve shillings per day, he was much surprised in the spring of 1846, at receiving the whig nomination for mayor, to which office he was elected over the then incumbent (T. G. Talmadge), and reelected the next year, 1847, (against Thos. J. Gerald), and the year following, 1848 (against Wm. Jenkins). During the first term of his mayoralty, the only noticeable event was the purchase and erection of Washington Park (Fort Greene), as a public park. In January, 1847, the ship fever broke out in Hudson avenue, near Tillary, having been imported by a ship load of Irish emigrants, and continued to rage in that and other localities, in the 1st, 2d, 5th and 6th wards, during 1847 and '48. Though the mayor and the board of aldermen, at this time, constituted the board of health, Mr Stryker did not call them together officially to act upon the matter, not deeming it best to arouse any alarm in the public mind, or to raise any questions as to the legal propriety of making appropriations for the sick. Calling into practice the lessons of active practical benevolence, which he had learned under the tutelage of his father in the earlier epidemics which visited the village, he took upon himself the burden of personal visitation, superintendence and relief of the sick and dying. Unsupported by the medical faculty, who indeed dissuaded him from exposing himself to contagion, Mr. Stryker, during the long continuance of this epidemic, unremittingly visited the sick, watched with them, cared for them, defrayed all expenses from his own pocket, so that no costs accrued to the city, and aided only by voluntary exertions of William Hewitt (then one of the street inspectors), and Staats Dawson (mayor's marshal), carried on in his own person all the functions of a health board. In the cholera season of 1849, during the term of his successor, Mayor Copeland, Mr. Stryker devoted himself largely to the relief of the sick, and in the fall of that year was elected county clerk (on the whig ticket), which office he held for a three year term. In 1860, he received from the commissioners, the position of superintendent of sewers, which office he still holds.

June 24th. The Atlantic white lead works, corner of Columbia and Harrison streets, were destroyed by fire.

August 19th. An alarm bell, designed for the new City Hall, was raised to a temporary belfry, at the head of Fulton street.

The *Church of the Pilgrims*, corner of Henry and Remsen streets, was dedicated on the 12th of April; the corner-stone of the *First Presbyterian Church*, in Henry street, was laid on the 28th of July, and that of the *Church of St. James* (Catholic) in Jay street, was dedicated on the 20th of September, and the *Middle Dutch Reformed Church* was founded.

During this summer, also, the subject of an *Episcopal Diocese of Long Island* was considerably agitated in the papers of the day, and among the members of that denomination.

December 29th. The *New England Society of Brooklyn* was organized.

1847. April 13. *Francis B. Stryker*, whig, was chosen mayor, by a majority of 1,540 votes over Thomas J. Gerald, democrat. On the 27th, an act passed the legislature, authorizing the opening of Fort Greene as a public park, which evoked much feeling and public opposition.

May 10th. A bill passed the legislature of the state authorizing the calling of a convention for the purpose of making a new charter for the city of Brooklyn.

May 11th. All the public buildings, and a large number of private residences were brilliantly illuminated in honor of the recent victories of the American army in Mexico.

May 12th. The corner-stone of the United States dry dock at the Brooklyn Navy Yard, was laid by Commodore Smith, U. S. N.

Meetings were also held this year, having for their object the erection of a suitable monument over the bones of the martyrs of the prison ships.

The *Emmet Benevolent Society* was organized this year, and chartered in May, 1849.

The churches this year founded were the *Central*, *East Brooklyn* and *Concord Street* (colored) Baptist; the *Plymouth* and *Clinton Avenue*, Congregational; *Grace Church* Protestant Episcopal, on Brooklyn Heights; the *Union*, and *First Bethel* (colored) Methodist; the *Central* and *Siloam* (colored) Presbyterian; and the *St. John's German Lutheran Church.*

1848. March 27th. Gas was for the first time introduced into Brooklyn.

June 6th. Montague Hall, situated on the corner of Court and Montague streets, and built by Geo. Howland, Esq., at a cost of some $22,000, was opened to the public. It was chiefly designed for the accommodation of public and private offices, and its principal feature was a large and elegant assembly room, for suppers, balls, etc.

July 4th, was rendered memorable in the annals of Brooklyn, by the munificence of its venerable and worthy citizen, Augustus Graham. The Brooklyn City Hospital, sorely crippled by lack of means, and struggling wearily against the apathy of the public, was unexpectedly placed upon a permanent foundation, by a donation from Mr. Graham, of bonds and mortgages amounting to $25,000; and the Brooklyn Institute was endowed with the ownership of the elegant granite building, in Washington street, which had been originally erected for the Brooklyn Lyceum.

August 8. The *Cypress Hills Cemetery* was incorporated under the general cemetery act.

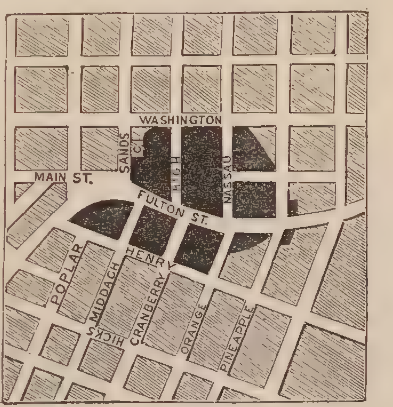
During this year, the *St. Nicholas Society* of Nassau Island; the *St. Michael's* Episcopal church; *First Congregational Methodist; First Reformed Presbyterian* and the Protestant Episcopal parish of *St. Peter's* were organized.

The principal event of the year, however, was the disastrous conflagration of Saturday, the 9th of September, still remembered and spoken of among our citizens, as *the* great fire of Brooklyn. We extract the following account from the columns of the *Eagle*, of the 11th inst.:

> The fire broke out about 11½ P. M., in the upholstery and furniture store of George Drew, at No 122 Fulton street bend, nearly opposite to Sands street. This was a wooden building, and surrounded by a nest of other wooden buildings, which extended through to Henry street, and, indeed, covered the whole block. In consequence of the long drought, these buildings were all as dry as tinder, and hence the flame was beyond all control, before the alarm brought the firemen to the spot. It spread with the most fearful rapidity, and the whole block was soon one vast sea of flame. The wind was fresh from the north-west, and drove the heat over to the other side of Fulton street, and the drug store of William Bailey caught fire several times, but was extinguished by the firemen. The fire finally crossed a little above, and caught in the building occupied by Mrs. Hall, leecher and cupper. From this it spread rapidly among the wooden buildings on that side, being driven forward by the wind south, along Fulton street, and east along Sands street in the vicinity of the Methodist church. The flames had now taken a wide sweep, and stretched towards the south-east, from Henry street almost to Washington street, overleaping the boundaries of the

streets in defiance of all efforts. At four and five o'clock the scene was awful beyond description. The fire had already swept over the greatest portion of the area; the firemen were without water; the streets on the outer border of the fire were lumbered with goods, which had been removed from the buildings already burnt, or in flames; women and children were engaged in carrying furniture from place to place, and in watching over the family goods; firemen were running from point to point, and laboring with all the devotion of men engaged in a desperate enterprise; and the flames, unfettered by every effort, threatened to overrun and devour the whole city.

The fire working from the point of commencement forward and outwards, had made its way to Henry street and along Henry street to Orange street, on that side. On the other side, it had spread along Sands street, destroyed the Methodist church, the Sunday School building, the parsonage, and had extended forward through High and Nassau streets, prostrating in its course the large Baptist church, and some of the most substantial buildings in the city. Carey's buildings and the Universalist church on Fulton street were on fire, and all along Concord street, the heat was terrific. It seemed that nothing could stay the devouring element from crossing to the other side, in which case the large block to Tillary street, and perhaps all that part of the city, must inevitably have fallen a sacrifice.



Map of Burned District, 1848.

It was now that the plan of blowing up several buildings was suggested, and fortunately this last resort proved successful. The fire was stopped at Concord street, though the buildings on the south side were often on fire. The church of Mr. Jacobus, which stands back from the street, assisted in checking its progress in that quarter, and, though in great danger, was preserved without damage. In Orange street, its progress toward Henry street was materially checked by the double wall made by the erection of Carey's buildings. On Washington street, the row of brick buildings stretching between Concord and Nassau streets was on fire and much burnt, but the greater part will not probably require to be rebuilt. The same may be said of the row of brick buildings beyond the Methodist Church on Sands street. The wooden buildings were demolished by the firemen.

The great extent of the fire is to be attributed entirely to the want of water. Our firemen soon drained the cisterns, and had no further resources, They were aided in their labors by twenty or more engines from New York, and thousands of willing hands were rendered useless by the deficiency of water. The Baptist Church in Nassau street, was, we believe, insured in the Brooklyn offices for $12,000, which will probably cover the loss, or nearly so. The Methodist church in Sands street, the parsonage, and Sunday School building, fronting on High street, were all insured.

Mr. William H. Carey was by far the largest individual loser by this fire. Twenty-six houses belonging to him, including the beautiful range of unfinished stores, called the Washington and Franklin stores, and the Franklin building on the corner of Orange and Fulton streets, were destroyed. Their total valuation was $50,000, and they were insured for about half of their value. Ex-Mayor George Hall was also a considerable loser by the fire.

Three church edifices, the First Universalist, Baptist and the Sands street Methodist Episcopal; two newspaper offices, the *Brooklyn Star* and the *Brooklyn Freeman;* and the post office building (a portion of the mails being saved), were also burned in this great conflagration, which devastated a thickly settled part of the city, of several acres in extent, and destroyed property to the amount of one and a half millions of dollars.

Particular mention is also made in the newspapers of the day of Capt. Joshua Sands of the United States navy, who, with a body of marines from the flag ship North Carolina, rendered most efficient aid, especially in blowing up several buildings, by which the course of the flames was finally checked. The City Guard, Union Blues and Columbian Rifles, voluntary military organizations of Brooklyn, performed police duty in guarding property, and in the preservation of order.

Serious as was the calamity, which thus befell this young and growing city, it afforded but another opportunity of showing to the world, that peculiar elasticity of the American mind and character, which not only leads to the inception of great undertakings, but enables it to surmount all obstacles and every disaster. Scarcely had the ruins ceased to smoke, before the burned district became the scene of the busiest activity. New buildings were erected. Fulton street was widened by setting back the building line on the *west* side from Henry to Middagh streets, and on the *east* side from Sands to Concord streets, and in every direction were seen the well directed labors of citizens to regain their losses.

In November of this year, the idea of a *union between the two cities of Williamsburgh and Brooklyn*, appears to have been, for the first time, broached. A meeting of the citizens of the former place was held, at which the subject was discussed; but, aside from some newspaper sparring, it seems to have been unproductive of result.

The benefits accruing to that portion of the city, known as South Brooklyn, from the erection of the Atlantic docks, began to make themselves apparent, in the rapid progress, and increase of population in that vicinity. In March, 1848, Mr. Daniel Richards, the originator of that magnificent enterprise, petitioned the common council for permission to open thirty-five streets in its immediate vicinity. During this year and the next, a plan was also devised by Mr. Richards and others, and received the legislative approbation, for the construction of a large navigable canal, from Gowanus bay to Douglass street, through the centre of the meadows, into which the sewers from the elevated ground on either side should empty. This canal was to be five feet deep below water mark, four feet above high water mark; 100 feet in width and 5,400 feet or about a mile in length, draining some 1,700 acres of land in the southern part of the city.

The great object to be attained by this improvement was the removal of the marsh miasma, which hangs about Prospect hill, and other portions of the city, making them liable to intermittent fevers and other diseases, and thus shutting them out from improvement: also to lay the lands open to use, and to render that portion of the city valuable for commercial and mechanical purposes. The estimated expense of this canal was $78,600, and at its termination it was proposed to construct a large basin for vessels, costing $8,000 additional. Other basins, along the course of the canal, were to be erected by private enterprise, furnishing large and ample depots for timber, coal, lime, cement, brick, etc.

These liberal provisions and plans so stimulated the growth of Brooklyn, that during 1848 and '49, it was estimated that no less than 2,100 buildings had been erected, 700 of which were in the Sixth ward, or South Brooklyn.

1849. January 9th. The charter convention, which had commenced its labor in July, 1847, closed its sessions.

April. *Edward Copeland* was elected mayor of the city.

Edward Copeland commenced business in life, in Brooklyn, as a retail grocer, on the corner of Front and Main streets. He was a graduate of Columbia College, and was first introduced to public notice by his efforts and speeches in aid of the Greek and Polish revolutions, in the years 1828 and '30. He became a member of the village board of trustees, in 1832, and established so fair a reputation as to induce his fellow citizens to tender to him the presidency of the village, in 1833; and a nomination to congress, in 1834, which, however, he declined, although strongly solicited by many prominent citizens to accept. In 1844, he was elected city clerk, without solicitation on his part, and by the special request of the whig and native American members of the common council. He carried into this office his usual systematic method, as well as politeness and suavity of manner, and was reelected to the same position in 1847 and '48. In the mayoralty to which he was called in 1849, he carried the same urbanity, dignity, decision and careful attention to the details of official business. As a scholar, especially in polite literature, few in our city surpassed him in varied acquirements. Through his official papers and in his frequent contributions to literature and science, he fully sustained this reputation; while he was a most pleasing speaker, polished and winning in manner, of an eminently social disposition, liberal, accessible at all times and by all persons; and in habits, refined and unostentatious. As chairman of the whig general committee, he was largely instrumental in contributing to the success of 1837, '38, '39 and '40; and, as a judge of the municipal court, from 1839 to 1840, aided by such men as Judges Eames and Rushmore, he gave to that tribunal a degree of force and dignity, which made it everywhere respected. He was, for many years, a member of the board of education, aiding powerfully by his efforts and influence to give character and efficiency to the system of public instruction, and to establish the reputation of the board.

May 22d. A meeting of the members of the Brooklyn bar was held for the purpose of organizing a *Law Library*.

July 4th. Corner-stone of the United States dry dock was laid. 11th. Father Matthew, the great apostle of temperance, was received by the mayor and common council of Brooklyn, and remained in the city for a short while, actively pursuing his benevolent labors.

The idea of connecting Brooklyn with New York by means of a *bridge*, was not only broached, but seriously discussed in public, and in the New York papers. The *Tribune* thus expressed itself, "The bridge is the great event of the day. New York and Brooklyn must be united, and there is no other means of doing it. The thing will certainly be achieved one of these days, and the sooner the better." Among other plans, was one of a floating bridge, with draw, etc.

December 30th. The Catholic church of *St. Charles Borromeo*, in Sydney Place (a building formerly owned and occupied by Dr. Vinton's Episcopal church), was dedicated.

This year, also, the *Cemetery of the Evergreens*, was organized and incorporated, and the *Zion African* Methodist, *St. Paul's* and *St. Peter's* Episcopal, *Pacific street* Congregational and *Strong Place* Baptist churches were established.

The principal event of this year was the visitation of that dreadful scourge of the human race, the epidemic *cholera*. It appeared in Brooklyn on the 29th of May, 1849, from which time it prevailed here until the 22d of September. During this period there were 642 deaths,[1] being in a ratio to the population (100,000), of one in every 155 persons.[2] Of these deaths 495 were adults, and 147 children; the larger relative mortality among the latter (being one to every three of the former), forming a distinctive characteristic of the epidemic in this city. The sexes seem to have suffered equally, being 321 males and 321 females. Of these deaths, 19 were of colored persons, and as regards their nationality, 75 were natives of the United States, while 420 were foreigners, chiefly Irish and Germans, and 36 were from England, Scotland and France. The oldest victim was a colored woman aged 90 years, and the youngest an infant, one day old, who was born in the hospital, and died with its mother. Twenty-four was the largest number that died in any one day, and the largest weekly mortality was for the week ending August 5th, being 107.

---

[1] Subsequently to the 22d of September, the date of the health physician's final report, some 10 or 12 deaths occurred from cholera.

[2] In New York, during the same period, with a population of 425,000, there were 4,957 deaths, being a ratio of 1 to every 86 persons.

This epidemic commenced in Court street, and was not confined to any particular part of the city, although nearly four-fifths were in different, well-defined localities, in the neighborhood of Hoyt, Bond, Butler, Douglass streets; Fourth place, between Court and Clinton streets; Blake's Buildings, State street; Furman and Columbia; Squire's Buildings in Hicks, near Pacific street; Hall's alley, Furman street; Clark's Buildings, Kelsey's alley, Hamilton avenue and Columbia street. These localities were in the neighborhood of low ground and stagnant water, or where the filth was abundant, and were too crowded, being occupied by a population at least one-half or one-third larger than was consistent with either comfort or health.

Of the victims of this epidemic, a large portion were intemperate, and among those who were temperate, the attack could in almost every instance be traced to some error, or excess in diet.[1]

1850. This year presents but little of special interest. On February 4th, occurred the terrible Hague street explosion, in New York city, which brought sorrow and death to many families, both in that city and in Brooklyn, where some of the operatives and victims of that disaster resided. On the 7th of July, a large fire occurred in Brooklyn; which, in the amount of damage done, may justly be termed the *second* great fire, which this city has suffered. It broke out at 3 A. M., in the large storehouses of Dr. R. V. W. Thorne, on Furman street, in which were stored large quantities of sugar, molasses, salt, saltpetre, hides, etc., etc.; extended to W. & J. Tapscott's sheds adjoining, occupied by naval stores, etc., thence to Bache & Son's rectifying distillery, burning all these buildings, as also the First Ward Hotel, and destroying property valued at not less than $400,000. The most prominent feature of the fire was the terrific explosion of a large quantity of saltpetre, which was stored in one of the warehouses, and which occasioned the utmost consternation, blowing one fire engine and those who were working it, entirely off the dock, into the water. Luckily, however, no lives were lost.

---

[1] The above facts were collected from the report of C. S. J. Goodrich, M.D., Health Officer.

Samuel Smith

This year, also, the subject of *ferry franchise*, which had remained pretty much *in statu quo* since the legislative act of 1845, was again brought into public notice, several meetings held, committees formed, etc.

The Episcopal churches of *The Messiah* and *St. Mark's*, and the *North Gowanus Reformed Dutch* church were this year organized.

The *City Bank* was this year incorporated, with a capital of $300,000. The *Brooklyn Dispensary* was this year incorporated under the general act. The *Brooklyn Female Bible Society*, auxiliary to the B. C. Bible Society, was also established.

In April, Mr. *Samuel Smith* was chosen mayor, to serve from May 1st, until the close of the year, in accordance with an amendment to the city charter which made the term of this and the other municipal officers commence with the civil year.

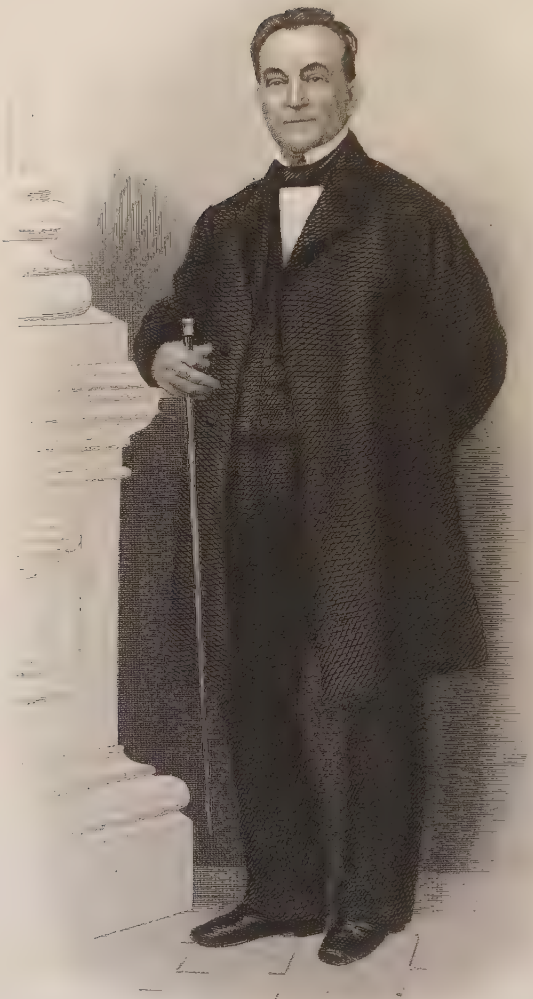
Samuel Smith, the son of Zachariah and Anne Smith, was born at Huntington, Suffolk Co., L. I., on the 26th of May, 1788. His boyhood was spent upon his father's farm in that portion of the town called Old Fields; and his education was mainly acquired at the Huntington Academy. In 1803 he commenced to learn the trade of a cooper, with a brother-in-law, and in 1806, removed to the village of Brooklyn. In 1809 he abandoned his trade; and, in connection with Mr. Richard Bouton, hired the John Jackson place, and went to farming. A year later they left this location and hired what was known as the Post farm (which took in a portion of the present Fort Greene). In 1811, Mr. Smith married Eliza, daughter of Judge Tunis Joralemon, and the next year purchased the easterly portion of the Tunis G. Johnson farm on the southerly side of the Old Road (now Fulton avenue). For this property, comprising nearly fourteen acres, he paid $6,000; in 1815, added to it by purchase, the southerly portion of the original Johnson farm, about six acres, at $500 per acre; and, in 1818, he bought the remainder (bounded by Red Hook lane, Schermerhorn street and a line one hundred feet east of Smith street), eight acres, for the sum of $10,000. Here he pursued the farming and milk business until about 1825, when he turned his attention exclusively to the improvement and sale of his real estate, the value of which was then fast increasing, with the rapid development of the village. Since that time Mr. Smith has managed his property with an ability and success which have made him one of our wealthiest citizens. Few men have occupied more offices of trust, or filled them more entirely to the satisfaction of their fellow citizens, than the subject of our sketch. Commencing with the office of commissioner of highways and fence viewer of the old town of Brooklyn, which he held from 1821 to '25 and also in 1827, '33, 34; he was an assessor from 1827 to '30 inclusive; was appointed justice of the peace in 1831, and for several years thereafter; was a supervisor for several years, and for two years chairman of the board; was appointed by the old council of appointments, a county judge, going out of service on the adoption of the new state constitution; and was appointed by the supervisors of the several towns in the county, one of three superintendents of the poor, entrusted with the establishment of a county system of provision for the poor. In connection with his associates, David Johnson, of Flatbush and Michael Schoonmaker, he selected and purchased the present county farm at Flatbush[1] and erected thereon buildings, suitable at that day, for the accommodation of the poor.

Descended as he was, from an old fashioned democratic family, Mr. Smith has always been found in the ranks of that party; although by no means, a blind adherent to party drill. When the city of Brooklyn was chartered, in 1834, Mr. Smith's farm was brought within the limits of the Sixth ward (now cut up into the Sixth, Tenth and Twelfth wards), and he was chosen as its representative in the board of aldermen, serving from 1834 to 1838, from 1842 to '44, and 1845 to '46, a portion of the time, as president of the board. In the year 1850, he was unanimously nominated by the democratic party for mayor, and was elected by a majority of three to four hundred votes, over Mr. J. T. S. Stranahan, and also overcoming the two thousand majority by which his predecessor Mr. Copeland had distanced his competitor in the previous chartered election. As mayor, Mr. Smith always possessed the confidence of the public as one of that class who would deal with public affairs justly and faithfully as with his own. He was selected as a vigorous economist, and endeavored to do his duty faithfully and to the best of his ability, and always commanded the respect and confidence of the better classes.

At the time of the war of 1812, Mr. Smith belonged to the uniformed militia company known as the Washington Fusileers, and as a member of that organization served in camp on Fort Greene; until finding his business interests suffering from want of his personal supervision, he secured a substitute in the service, as it happened, however, only *eight days* before the discharge of the militia, in consequence of the approach of peace. After the war he received a commission as ensign in the 44th (Col. Joseph Dean's) Regiment, and subsequently was promoted to a captaincy in the same.

---

[1] From Garret Martense, about seventy acres, for about $3,000.



[illegible]

From his earliest coming to Brooklyn, Mr. Smith worshiped with the congregation occupying the old Dutch church which stood in the middle of the road (now Fulton street), near his present residence, and, in 1830, he became a member of that communion, of which he is the oldest living representative. Mr. Smith, also, has been for a considerable portion of his life, strongly identified with the inception and interests of the principal moneyed institutions of Brooklyn, having been a director of the Brooklyn Bank ; a director and, for two years, president of the Atlantic Bank ; an original incorporator of the Nassau Insurance Company, and a director in the Mechanics Insurance and Home Life Insurance Companies.

1851. With the year, began the mayoralty of

Hon. CONKLIN BRUSH, the tenth mayor of the city of Brooklyn. Commencing business in New York, at the close of the war of 1812, and with no resources but a good character, and great business tact and energy, he rapidly acquired the reputation of a safe and successful merchant. The twenty-three years, during which he was engaged in mercantile business, embraced all the periods of great commercial disaster, from 1816 to 1840. During that time, he was at the head of nine successful mercantile firms, no one of which ever failed, and all of which were highly prosperous. In a business subject to such vicissitudes as that of a wholesale commercial house, and in a city in which mercantile reverses and downfall are so common as in New York, it is no slight distinction for a merchant to be able to say that, commencing business without capital, and pursuing it on a large scale, to within a fraction of a quarter of a century, he maintained the credit and secured the prosperity and wealth of the various firms at whose head he stood, and retired at last upon a competency, which he had honorably acquired, "owing no man anything," and without stain upon his character as a man, or as a merchant. That is Mr. Brush's distinction ; and the class to which he belonged, and on which he has conferred honor, will know how to appreciate it.

Mr. Brush has resided in Brooklyn since 1827. Those who then resided here will remember that Brooklyn was but a country village, with ten thousand inhabitants. Mr. Brush's services were eagerly sought by the Brooklyn people of that day, and he served in the board of trustees in 1830 ; and in the common council from 1834 to 1835, serving as president of the board. When he retired from the presidency, he received a unanimous vote of thanks for the manner in which he had filled the office.

In every leading public measure which has advanced the growth and prosperity of Brooklyn, Mr. Brush has taken an active part. When he moved to Brooklyn, there was not a public lamp in the village. In 1832, he took measures to place them in Hicks and Willow streets, and since then they have been gradually extended so as to light all the populous quarters of the city.

In 1834, when the old Cutting ferry lease had about four years to run, a meeting of citizens was called, and a committee on ferry laws and rights was appointed — Mr. Brush was chairman of that committee, and led and directed all its movements. New York clutched her ferry monopoly with an iron grasp, discouraging improvements in ferry accommodations, and refusing to grant any ferry south of Fulton street. The committee made a demonstration in the legislature, and New York taking the alarm, the Atlantic street ferry was reluctantly granted. That movement led to a radical reform in our whole ferry system, so that the Brooklyn ferries are now equal to any in the world. Mr. Brush also led the movement to widen Fulton street, below its junction with Main street, against a most violent opposition. Those who remember the little, narrow, crooked street, which led from the Fulton Ferry — little more than a mere cow path, know what a transformation was made of that great business avenue of the city. So Mr. Brush was one of the leaders in converting the village into the city of Brooklyn.

While this change was in contemplation, Mr. Brush was appointed by a public meeting of citizens, on a committee to select and secure a site for a City Hall, and to obtain authority from the legislature to raise the necessary funds to pay for the land and building. Mr. Brush and his associates obtained the site on which the City Hall now stands. They proposed the erection of a hall substantially like the present building, to cost about $100,000. Unfortunately, other counsels prevailed, and a building to cost from a half to three-quarters of a million was planned and commenced under a democratic majority in the common council — an egregious blunder which finally resulted in a ten years delay in the erection of this much needed public edifice; and, what was worse, in the formation of nearly one-half of the debt which subsequently burdened the city of Brooklyn.

To Mr. Brush, also, in connection with Mr. Daniel Richards, Brooklyn is indebted for the projection and inception of the great Atlantic docks, which was incorporated in 1840, and of which company he was a director, during some six years. In 1848, he erected a grain elevator and several stores connected therewith. In the fall of 1850, Mr. Brush was nominated by the whig party as their candidate for the mayoralty, his opponents being John Rice, democratic, and George Hall, independent. Mr. Brush, however, was successful, and served as mayor of the city during the years 1851 and 1852. The city never had a mayor of more unquestionable competency in all the details of thorough practical service. Diligent and conscientious, his perfect familiarity with financial affairs secured for him the confidence and support of the large property interest, which sensitively requires all due knowledge and caution on the part of public servants. Previous to the expiration of his term of office, the Mechanics' Bank of Brooklyn was organized, and being urged to accept its presidency, he declined a renomination to political office, and entered upon this new position of financial trust, for which he was so well adapted, and which by successive reelections he still continues to fill.

Last, but by no means least, among the many important services which Mr. Brush has rendered to the city, was his connection, from the first, with the great movement for procuring a supply of water; his valuable efforts having been properly recognized in his selection, by the mayor, as one of the board of construction of the water commissioners.

1851. That part of the city known as *South Brooklyn*, began to make rapid strides in the development of those commercial resources, and density of population which now distinguish it. A glimpse of this wonderful transformation is afforded in the following extract from the editorial column of the *Star*, dated May 12th: "On Red Hook, but recently a desert sand hill and unwholesome marsh, we now behold long rows of buildings, and listen to the busy hum of improvement. In a less period than twelve months the tide ebbed and flowed where now are new streets, laid out, graded and paved, and hundreds of eligible building sites are ready for occupancy. The old hill is fast passing away, and soon will be numbered with the things that were. A new dock head and pier has been built at the southern extremity of the point. Van Brunt street, running parallel with the easterly line of Atlantic basin, has been opened and graded from Hamilton avenue nearly to the extremity of the point. On this street, twelve new warehouses have been added the past season to the Atlantic dock storehouses, each 38 by 180 feet and five stories high, being of uniform style and dimensions with those previously erected; further down, a handsome brick mill, 50 by 200 feet and three stories high, for the manufacture of cotton wadding, has gone into operation, giving employment to quite a number of operatives and consuming about 3,000 pounds of cotton daily. Other commodious buildings for manufacturing purposes are in contemplation, and preparations are also making for the enlargement of the Atlantic Basin, and the western shore of the Hook, several new docks are in progress which, when completed, will afford increased facilities for manufacturing and commercial purposes."

There were at this time in Brooklyn a considerable number of *Distilleries*, *Rectifying Establishments*, etc., whose annual products added very considerably to the material wealth, and commercial industry of the city. In East Brooklyn, were the whisky distilleries of Charles Wilson, Messrs. Wood & Co., and the Messrs. Bache. The first named was the oldest establishment of the kind in the city, having been in operation during a period of about seventeen years, and was located on the corner of Franklin avenue, and Skillman street. It contained accommodations for 800 cows, and consumed 120,000 bushels of grain a year, valued at $72,000, and 700 tons of coal, worth $3,800. Its products were 480,000 gallons of whisky per annum, valued at $120,000; and 166,500 barrels of swill were annually disposed of, for $9,150. The establishment had a capital of $50,000, and employed 18 hands, at an annual expense of $6,000, its works being operated by a 20-horse power engine.

The distillery of Messrs. Wood & Co., near Flushing avenue, was erected during the previous summer (1850) at a cost of $35,000. It occupied 8 lots of ground, consumed 14,400 bushels of grain, and 120 tons of coal per month, and produced 57,600 gallons of whisky per month, besides the swill which amounted to about $744 during the same period. Twelve hands were employed; its machinery, all of the newest and most approved construction was moved by an engine of 40-horse power, and was deemed capable of doing a much larger business.

The Wallabout distillery, located on the Williamsburgh line, was erected some sixteen years previously, and had been operated by the Messrs. Bache, under the direction of John A. Cross. In 1850, after lying idle for over two years, having been leased for that purpose, by an association of distillers, at $3,300 per annum, it was fitted up at an expense of $10,000 or $12,000, and put in operation by Messrs. Towers & Rinqueberg. It distilled all kinds of grain, corn, rye, oats, barley, and wheat, consuming 800 or 1,000 bushels daily, or 600,000 bushels annually; consumed 2,340 tons of coal yearly, and manufactured 3,000 gallons of whisky per diem, or about 950,000 per annum. The works covered about eight lots of ground, and gave employment to 20 operatives at a cost of $6,000, the machinery being operated by an engine of 40-horse power.

Blair, Bates & Co.'s establishment, on the corner of Flatbush turnpike and Pacific street, consumed 187,800 bushels of grain, and 1,716 tons of coal per annum, and manufactured 751,200 gallons of whisky each year, while the swill was sold for nearly enough to pay the running expenses of the works. It employed 16 operatives at $6,000 per annum, and had an engine of 35-horse power.

Messrs. Bache, Sons & Co., had a rectifying distillery, located on Furman street, near Fulton Ferry, and covering 6 lots of ground. It was established in 1811, and its business was wholly confined to the rectifying of whisky, and the manufacture of Cologne spirits, gin, brandy, and pure spirits. 18,000 bushels of charcoal, and 300 tons of Lackawanna coal were annually consumed; 12 men, and a small 6-horse power engine were employed, and the daily products were 3,800 gallons.

Messrs. Hunter & Manly had a similar establishment in Doughty street, which had been in operation some ten years, did about half the business of Messrs. Bache's works, and manufactured domestic liquors of all sorts.

Johnson's brewery, erected in the summer of 1850, on Front, corner of Jay street, was formerly located on the corner of York and Jay streets. It covered 6 lots, enjoyed an established reputation, and consumed about 20,000 bushels of grain per season.

The combined statistics of this branch of Brooklyn industry show that 6 distilleries, 3 rectifying establishments and a brewery, employing altogether 179 persons, and consuming grain and fuel to the value of $993,300 annually, produced during the same period 5,459,300 gallons of whisky, valued at $1,364,925, besides $40,000 worth of slops and swill. 2,964,000 gallons of whisky were rectified and manufactured into domestic liquors, pure spirits, etc.

At the same time there was also more *white lead* manufactured in Brooklyn than in any other city or town in America (and probably as much as was made in all parts of the United States), consuming nearly one-third the product of all the then existing lead mines of the country. The Brooklyn White Lead Works, located on Front street, between Washington and Adams, was the oldest in the city and state, and one of the oldest in the country,[1] having been established in 1822, and incorporated in 1825, with a capital of $53,000, by J. B. & Augustus Graham, and other enterprising capitalists. It occupied an entire block of 230 by 200 feet, employing 90 men; and producing annually 2,500 tons of white lead, red lead, litharge, etc., valued at $425,000.

The whole united product of the white lead works of Brooklyn at this time, was from 6 to 12,000 tons annually, and their united capital was over one million of dollars.

We have presented the above industrial statistics, as illustrating more fully than in any other manner, the rapidly increasing value and importance of the city at this period of her existence.

The religious interests of the city, during the year 1851, were increased by the laying of the corner-stone, June 19th, of a new and splendid edifice, for the Strong Place Baptist church; the commencement of a new house of worship (August 12th), for the York street Methodist Episcopal church; the erection, in Adelphi street of the (Episcopal) Church of the Messiah; and the formation of a new Congregational Society, by a secession from the Bridge street church.

July 1st. Not to be forgotten, also, in the annals of Brooklyn, was the laying of the corner-stone of the Old Ladies' Home, a charity which owes its inception, and its subsequent perfect development to the Christian philanthropy and liberality of the late John B. Graham, Esq.

The *Atlantic Insurance Company* was chartered this year, as also, the *Citizens Union Cemetery.*

---

[1] The oldest white lead factory was that of Wetherell, established at Philadelphia, in 1796; next was that of Lewis, in 1800, and then Hinton & Moore erected one at Belleville, N. J., in 1818. There were also a few others, most of them, how ever, unsuccessful.

The *Church* (Episcopal) *Charity Foundation* was incorporated in March, of this year, and the *Free German Society* was organized for benevolent purposes, on the 18th of August.

The *Eye and Ear Infirmary* was also established this year.

The *Weeksville* (colored) Baptist church, *Second* (Unitarian), and *South Congregational; Hicks street* and *Summerfield* Methodist Episcopal Churches; *North Reformed Dutch*, and the *Church on the Heights* (Dr. Bethune's); the Roman Catholic church of *St. John's*, were organized.

1852. On the evening of January 31st, a meeting of the young men of Brooklyn was held, which resulted in the organization of an institution designed to promote the moral and intellectual interest of the youth of the city, more especially of that portion known as South Brooklyn.

It was incorporated under the name of the *Brooklyn Athenæum and Reading Room*, and during the same year an elegant and commodious edifice was erected, on the corner of Atlantic and Clinton streets, for its occupancy. The intellectual advantages of the city were also increased, during the month of February, by the organization of the *Franklin Debating Association.*

November. Mr. *Edward A. Lambert* was elected mayor of the city, for the years 1853 and '54.

The benevolent operations of the city were augmented by the organization of the *Protestant Mutual Benefit Society of Brooklyn*, subsequently reorganized, in 1854, under the title of the *Protestant Episcopal Mutual Benefit Society of Brooklyn;* the *Thistle Benevolent Society*, and the *Brooklyn Homœopathic Dispensary.*

This year, also, witnessed the incorporation of the *Brooklyn, Greenwood and Bath Plank Road Co.;* the *Mechanics Bank*, and the *Nassau Insurance Company.*

Mayor Lambert's communication to the common council, on the 3d of January, 1853, presents a summary of the progress of the city during the year 1852. "Well may we rejoice," he says, "in the increase of population, numbering at the present time some 120,000, and ranking us as the seventh city in our union; in the increase of taxable property, amounting to nearly twelve millions of dollars during the past year; and in the many improvements which have taken place in various parts of the city, evidencing a solid and permanent growth." Fifteen schools are mentioned as under the control of the board of education, giving instruction to 18,307 scholars, while two evening schools had been opened, which were attended by 800 scholars. Twenty-two miles of street mains had been laid down by the Brooklyn Gas Company, being nearly half of the whole number put down since the formation of the company, and 1,202 gas lamps had been erected. The number of buildings erected during the year 1852 was 2,500. The movement, first agitated in 1835, for the securing of a full and permanent water supply for Brooklyn, was this year advanced by the investigations of Mr. Wm. J. McAlpine, an engineer appointed, in 1851, to make the necessary examination; and his report and plans were recommended by the mayor in his annual report. The mayor also then alludes to another matter of interest. "The city of Brooklyn has ever been noted for its quietude on the sabbath; and its citizens for their love of order and respect of the laws. Within the past few years, however, the increase of crime and drunkenness, more especially prevalent on the sabbath; the fearful augmentation of unlicensed shops for the sale of liquors; the introduction of manners and habits foreign to our institutions, have awakened the attention of our citizens, who were annoyed and disturbed, not only by what their own eyes beheld, but also by the baneful influence of these things on the rising generation. Petitions from a large number of citizens, deeply interested in the city's welfare, were presented to the common council in 1850, praying for an ordinance preventing the opening of shops and other places on the sabbath; which resulted in the passage of the law denominated the Sunday ordinance, the enforcement of which has deeply interested the community. Organizations of liquor dealers and others hostile to the law were made, for the purpose of opposing any nominee for office who was in favor of said law. The issue was made by these associations at the last election for executive officers of the city; the result of which was an unprecedented majority voted for those officers known to be favorable to the law; which majority would have been greatly augmented had the opposition been more open, or any doubt of the results of the issue thus made by the opponents of the law, been entertained by our citizens. I am abundantly satisfied, from personal observation and the testimony of those familiar with the sentiments of our citizens, that nine-tenths of the inhabitants of Brooklyn are in favor of the law. Although it has been modified in some slight particulars by the decision of one of our judges, its operation has not been essentially affected thereby. The salutary influence of the law has been seen on the sabbath."

The religious interests of Brooklyn were also increased by the organization of the *Washington Avenue* (Baptist); the *German* (Reformed Dutch, and the *Brooklyn* (Methodist Episcopal) *Home Mission* churches.

EDWARD AUGUSTUS LAMBERT was born in the city of New York, June 10th, 1813. His father, who was master of a merchant ship in the service of one of the old South street shipping houses, was lost at sea with his vessel; and his son, from the age of twelve years, was obliged to depend upon his own efforts. As clerk, he served in an importing house until 1832, entering then into the stationery business. In 1849 he was chosen on the democratic (free-soil) ticket, as alderman from the Sixth ward of Brooklyn; and, on the division of that ward, in 1850, he was elected alderman of the (new) Tenth ward, (formed from the Sixth), and was honored by the presidency of the board. In November, 1852, he was elected, on the democratic ticket, mayor of the city of Brooklyn, for the years 1853 and '54. During the term of his mayoralty, the affairs of the city were administered with strict economy, and the laws were enforced with an impartiality and strictness which secured the universal approbation of his fellow citizens; while his personal devotion to all the duties of his station, whether at or outside of the office, was conspicuous.

During his term of office, charters were granted to, and contracts made with, the horse rail roads which now form so important an element of Brooklyn interests; the introduction of a permanent supply of water was assured to the city, by the purchase of ponds, etc.; the Truant Children's Home was established and the Sunday law rigorously enforced to the great satisfaction of all good citizens. In the spring of 1854, Mayor Lambert's health failed, under the pressure of the official labors to which he had so untiringly devoted his time and strength, and the common council granted his request for a leave of absence. He accordingly spent about six weeks in

Europe, and returning home, June the 1st, found the city of Brooklyn in a state of excitement. Riots had broken out between the Irish and parties affiliated with the Know-Nothing party, and prompt and energetic measures were required to suppress them. These measures were at once adopted by Mayor Lambert, whose characteristic firmness, decision and impartiality rendered him exactly the man for the emergency; and he was admirably seconded by the civil, police and military force which he immediately summoned to his aid. Had the helm of the city's affairs, at this juncture, been placed in any less capable hands, Brooklyn might have had days of bloodshed and disgrace to mar the pages of her record. As it was, the power of the law, the rights of free speech and the proprieties of the sabbath were fully vindicated.

During the war of the rebellion, Mr. Lambert was among the first to promote volunteering, etc., and called the first great war meeting, on Fort Greene, in April, 1861. He was also the recording secretary and an active member of the committee appointed by the citizens of Brooklyn, in June 1862, to provide for the reception, care and relief of wounded and sick soldiers forwarded from the field by government; and when the great Sanitary Fair was organized in 1864, was chairman of the committee on benefits, entertainments and exhibitions, in which capacity, as well as by his labors as a member of the War Fund committee, he rendered most excellent service.

Mr. Lambert has been, for many years, prominently identified with the Presbyterian denomination, as delegate to its synods and treasurer of the Presbyterian committee of Home Missions; and was one of the most active and influential original members of the Lafayette avenue Presbyterian church (Rev. Dr. Cuyler's). He is, at present, the president of the Craftsman's Life Insurance Company, of New York city.

1853. February. The *Myrtle Avenue and Jamaica Plank Road Company* was incorporated with a capital of $25,000, which was subsequently increased to $55,000.

June 9th. The *Exempt Firemen's Association of the City of Brooklyn* (Western District), was this day revived and reorganized.

September. The *Brooklyn Young Men's Christian Association* was organized.

December 17th. The *Brooklyn City Rail Road Company* was incorporated under the general law of the state of New York, and set immediately to work to lay the rails on the several routes designated by their contract with the city authorities.

On the 20th of the same month, the Colonnade row on the Heights,[1] was destroyed by fire. It consisted of eight four-story brick buildings, having on their fronts large wooden columns and balustrades ; and being conspicuous from the river, were much noticed and admired, especially by strangers.

During the year, the common council, acting under authority of the act passed June 19th, 1851, purchased several streams and ponds of water on the island, at an expense of some $44,000 ; and which sources, it was estimated, would furnish a sufficient quantity of water to meet the wants of the city for a period of years, while the quality of the water for purity, etc., was unsurpassed. In June, an act was passed, by the legislature, entitled "An Act for the supply of the city of Brooklyn, with water ;" which act required, that before the adoption of any plan, the same should be submitted to the electors for their approval. A special election was, therefore, held in the month of July, which resulted in the rejection, by a majority of 3,700, of the plan proposed by the common council. A strong opposition was found to be arrayed against the plan, while many citizens, too confident of the success of the undertaking, did not interest themselves in its favor. As, however, the act empowered the common council to submit other plans and estimates, until an approval was obtained, this defeat was but a temporary delay to the progress of the important and beneficent work of procuring a supply of wholesome water for Brooklyn.

The ecclesiastical organizations of the city were this year increased by the founding of the Episcopal churches of the *Redeemer* and of *St. George ;* the *East Reformed Dutch* church ; the Catholic church of *St. Joseph ;* the *United Brethren Protestant Episcopal* (Moravian) church, and the *United Presbyterian* (Associated Reformed) church.

The *Long Island* and the *Phœnix Insurance Companies* this year commenced business each with a capital of $200,000.

---

[1] Corner of Columbia and Middagh streets.

1854. February. During this month, were organized the *Eccleston Literary Association*, connected with the Catholic churches of St. Peter's and St. Paul's; and the *Brooklyn Horticultural Society*, which was incorporated in April following. The *Brooklyn City Rail Road Company* (on the 21st), opened its books for subscription to its stock, which was immediately taken up by 150 persons.

March. The *Brooklyn Female Employment Society* was organized.

April. On the 4th of this month the *Brooklyn Industrial Schools Association*, was organized, having for its objects the reclaiming of poor children from ignorance and vice, and the training to usefulness in society, and teaching them habits of cleanliness, industry, etc., etc.

On the 17th, the legislature, three-fifths being present, passed an "*Act to consolidate the cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburgh, and the town of Bushwick into a municipal government, and to incorporate the same,*" *the said act to take effect on the* 1*st of January*, 1855.

May. The *Pierrepont House*, on the corner of Montague and Hicks streets, was first opened to the public. It was erected by Messrs. Kitchen & Litchfield, was modelled externally after the Prescott House of New York city, was elegantly furnished, and immediately took the position, which it has since held, of the leading hotel of Brooklyn.

During the latter part of this month street meetings and public religious exercises in the open air were inaugurated in this city, by persons connected with the Primitive Methodist church, in Bridge street. The meeting of the 29th, held at the corner of Atlantic and Smith streets, was disturbed by the presence of some 300 New York Know-Nothings, who provoked a fracas on their way home, and were finally driven across the Catharine street ferry.

June 4th. (Sabbath). The ill-feeling arising from the above mentioned affair, culminated this day in a serious riot, an account of which we condense from the columns of the *Eagle.*

> The sermon delivered as usual at the corner of Smith and Atlantic streets, although occasionally interrupted by riotous demonstrations by the immense crowd collected there, was finally concluded at about seven o'clock, and

shortly before that time the deputation of New Yorkers, who were over on the previous Sunday, appeared, to the number of about 150, marching arm in arm, three abreast. Arriving on the spot, they marched and counter-marched, amid cheers and hootings and mingled noises, until they were met, in Smith street, by the mayor, who informed them that the authorities of Brooklyn were able to preserve the peace without foreign aid, and that any breach of the peace would be summarily dealt with. He also ordered them to cease their marching, which they did. The preacher and his friends, as soon as the sermon was over, took their leave, and proceeded quietly home. The crowd now began to disperse, and most of the spectators considered all danger of an *emeute* at an end. After the conclusion of the service, the New Yorkers marched through Smith street, Fulton avenue and Fulton street, and down Main street to the ferry, where a number of policemen had preceded them and where, also, an excited crowd of many thousands of all sorts of people were already collected, among whom were many women and children, all anxiously awaiting the turn of events. Clubs had been collected and laid in the gutters and other places, so as to be handy when required, while stones were gathered by the boys, and every preparation made for a desperate fight. The few policemen who were on hand did their utmost to suppress anything like an outbreak before the New Yorkers arrived; but they had a tough time of it, as the crowd fell upon them and beat them with clubs and other missiles. The police did their duty manfully, however, regardless of the blows that fell upon them thick and fast. Notwithstanding these difficulties, nearly all that were taken hold of by the officers were taken to the lock-up.

When about half of the New Yorkers had passed the corner of Front street, a regular shower of stones, sticks and other missiles was fired among them, but they remained unbroken and marched on. The missiles fell thicker and faster, and now the discharge of fire-arms commenced, the New Yorkers firing upon their assailants. Shot after shot was fired, and volley after volley was thrown, and the scene became indescribable. The Main street crowd became wild with excitement, and pelted the procession as fast as they could gather the materials to do it with, while steadily and with military precision, the procession marched within the ferry-house gates, and fired shot after shot upon the other portion of the mob. Several were hit, but none were killed. "To the wharf," "To the wharf," was now cried, and a large body proceeded to the right of the ferry-house, some climbing upon the sheds, or other eminences, and hurling stones upon the ferry-house and the boat then in the slip, until the windows were smashed and the panels broken in.

The passengers were seriously annoyed and greatly endangered, but the lady portion were soon escorted into the saloon, where they remained comparatively safe, and a portion of the New Yorkers were taken across the river. Those that stayed behind kept up a continual fire through the gates in answer to the shower of stones. The pilots of the ferry boats not deeming it safe to land their passengers, kept moving up and down across the mouth of the slip, until comparative order had been restored on shore. They then entered, and after some arrests had been made of those within the gates, they were permitted to depart.

A short time previous to this the military, with General Duryea commanding, came upon the ground. The sheriff appeared, the riot act was read by the mayor, and a general clearing of the mob took place. The officers were all active in the performance of their duties, and quiet and order was again restored. Instead of an excited populace, the soldiery soon took their place, and if there was an idea of renewing the fight, those inclined thereto wisely determined to let things remain as they were for the present.

Several persons were wounded, by missiles or shots, only one case, however, proving fatal; and many arrests were made. The regiment on duty, during the day, was the 14th, under command of Col. Jesse C. Smith; and the City Cadets, Capt. Edmonds. The following sabbath passed over without disturbance, the angel Gabriel held forth in a vacant lot, and was not interrupted, and the right of free speech being fully vindicated by the prompt and decisive action of the mayor and authorities, aided by the efforts of Bishop Loughlin among his parishioners, in Main street and vicinity, street preaching and ill-feeling gradually subsided.

June. On the 13th, the cholera made its appearance in Plymouth and Pacific streets. It numbered 656 persons among its victims, before the close of the season.

July. On the 3d of this month, the cars of the Brooklyn City Rail Road Company made their first trips over the *Myrtle avenue*, *Flushing avenue* and *Fulton street*, and *Fulton avenue* routes; their first *paying* trips being made on the following day, the 4th. On the 8th of August, cars began to run over the *Greenwood* route.

September 11th. Memorable in the educational history of Brooklyn, as marking the commencement of the *Packer Collegiate Institute for Girls*, which superseded the former Brooklyn Female Academy.

As a counterpart to the Packer Institute, another educational establishment, for boys, called the *Brooklyn Collegiate and Polytechnic Institute*, was incorporated during this same year.

In November, was incorporated the *Union Ferry Company* of Brooklyn, with a capital of $800,000. This new corporation superseded the former Union Ferry Company, which had existed since 1851. There were previously two associated companies: the New York and Union Ferry Company, from 1839 to 1844, and the Brooklyn Union Ferry Company, from 1844 to 1851.

The *Mechanics' Exchange Association* was this year established.

The *Atlantic Street* Baptist; the *Central Warren Street Mission*, and *Park* Congregational churches; the Episcopal *Church of the Good Angels;* the *Second Primitive Methodist* church; the *North Brooklyn* (*Lee Avenue*) Reformed Dutch church, and the Catholic churches of *St. Benedicts*, *St. Bonefacius*, and *The Visitation*, were this year founded in the city of Brooklyn.

CHAPTER V.

THE EARLY SETTLERS AND PATENTS OF BUSHWICK.

On page 26 of our first volume, we stated that the territory embraced within the ancient town of Bushwick was purchased from its Indian proprietors, by the West India Company, in August, 1638; and, on pages 29 and 44 of the same volume, we have indicated the beginnings of its earliest settlement (1641 – 1650) by certain Swedes and Norwegians, or Normans as they were called, together with a few Dutchmen. These persons, such as *Bergen* and *Moll* at the Wallabout, *Carstaensen* and *Borsin* on the East river, *Volkertse* at Green point, and *Jan the Swede* on the site of the subsequent village of Bushwick, seem to have occupied and cultivated their bouweries, independently of one another, and subject directly to the authority of the director and council at Manhattan, from whom they received their patents. And, as we have no evidence of any attempt to lay out a regular settlement, or to organize a town, until 1660, a period of over twenty years from the date of the first patent, we deem it proper, before proceeding with the historical annals of the town, to devote a few pages to a discussion of its original settlers and patents, prior to that date.

I.

In the consideration of Hans Hansen Bergen's patent at the Waaleboght (vol. I, pages 88 to 95), it will be remembered that we reached and somewhat exceeded the boundary line between the towns of Brooklyn and Bushwick. This boundary line, which, according to the earliest patent of the town of Brooklyn, was identical with Bergen's northerly bounds, might be designated on the map of the present city of Brooklyn, by a line drawn from the East river, following the course of Division avenue, to about at its junction with Tenth street, and from that point extending in a somewhat south-easterly direction towards Newtown.

Adjoining this land of Bergen's on the north, was a triangular tract of land, included between the present Division avenue, South Sixth street, and the East river, which was granted by the West India Company, on the 7th of September, 1641, to *Lambert Huybertsen Moll*, a ship carpenter,[1] who had purchased it from one Cornelis Jacobsen Stille, on the 29th of the preceding month.[2] This plantation, which will be recognized as comprising what has more recently been known as the *Peter Miller Farm*, the *Berry Farm*, and *Boerum's Woods*, is described in this ancient patent, as

> "A certain piece of land lying on Long Island, on the East river of the New Netherland, near the Creek of Rinnegaconck, formerly occupied by Cornelis Jacobsen Stille,[3] containing 25 morgens [50 acres], bounded on the south in breadth by Hans Hansen [Bergen], the breadth of the said land appearing by the mark of the West India Company, cut in a tree, where it is bounded on the north by the East river." [4]

Moll probably, left these parts about 1663, in March of which year he received a patent of land at Esopus.[5]

This property was afterwards sold to Jacobus Kip, "of Kipsburg, in the city of New York," to whom it was confirmed by Governor Nicolls, on February 26th, 1667.[6] During his occupancy a blockhouse was established for the safety and defense of the Wallabout settlers, upon its high ground overlooking the East river, probably near its northerly part, towards Kieke or Lookout point.[1] Kip died, seized of this estate, prior to the year 1693,[2] in which year his widow and executrix, Maria Kip and Johannes Kip, brewer of the city of New York, conveyed it to James Bobin, a resident of Long Island.[3] Bobin, who is sometimes called Jacob or Jacobus Bobin, continued in possession of this farm, until the time of his death, about the year 1741.[4] No evidence has been found as to how this title passed from the family of Bobin. But a partition map of a part of the Abraham A. Remsen and the Abraham Boerum farms, made in 1769 by Englebert Lott, marks this land as belonging to Abraham Corson or Carson. This is undoubtedly identical with the name and family of Carshow or Cershow, as the owners next found in possession, interchangeably spelled their name.[5] At all events the land is known to have been in possession of one Abraham Kershow, prior to 1761,[6] and was by him devised to his sons Jacob and Martin, who were in possession in 1786. Mutual partition deeds were executed between the brothers, on the 23d of June, 1786,[1] Martin taking the southerly half, and Jacob the northerly half of the farm. Martin's portion was finally sold in pursuance of a chancery decree, in 1820, and passed into the possession of Jacob Berry, and has since been known as the Berry Farm. Jacob Kershow's portion passed, in 1790, to Peter Miller,[2] who died in 1816, and his estate was divided between his two sons, David P. Miller, who took the northerly portion, which he afterwards sold to Daniel S. Griswold,[3] and John P. Miller, who received the southerly part which he sold, in 1823, to Abraham Meserole.

---

[1] *Dutch Manuscripts,* VIII, 256.

[2] *Dutch Manuscripts,* I, 251. In this it is described as "*a house* and plantation."

[3] In the confirmatory patent to Kip, in 1667, this person is called *Styssen.*

[4] Liber G *Dutch Patents,* p. 43. The boundaries here described, which are somewhat obscure, are explained by the confirmatory patent of Nicolls in 1667 ; in which, after the recital in the words of the original grant, occur the following words, "and on ye North it goes [i. e. from thence it extends north] along ye river 225 rods [deep]." This and synonymous words in the deed of the heirs of Kip to Bobin, in 1693, sufficiently identify the lands included, and show that a line 225 rods deep at right angles from the East river shore, passed over the space between the Brooklyn line and the line of the West India Co., so as to include the 50 acres since known as the *Miller and Berry farms,* and probably *Boerum's Woods.* These Boerum's Woods, together with land known as John Skillman's, containing together about 10 acres (being an overplus in the measurement of the original patent) passed after Bobin's death into the hands of Ab'm Corson. (See a map of partition between the sons of Teunis Bogart, deceased, drawn by Englebert Lott).

[5] *O'Callaghan,* II, 592.

[6] *Patents,* liber II, 175.

---

[1] See vol. I, pages 113 to 115.

[2] Jacob Kip was, in 1653, secretary to the burgomaster of New Amsterdam; and in 1655, he was appointed vendue master of the court of orphan masters. He resigned his clerkship in June, 1657, but continued in office until he had finished transcribing the records. He was, for some years, alderman of the *Out* ward of the city. It does not appear that he ever resided in Bushwick, or on this farm, nor does his name appear on assessment rolls, etc.

[3] Liber II, *Conveyances*, page 26, office clerk, Kings Co., Bobin's house is designated on Ratzer's map, and also on Gen. Johnson's map of Brooklyn during the Revolution, and of the Wallabout during the same period, the latter of which is contained in the first volume of this work.

[4] A deed from Gysbert Bogert to Gysbert Bogert, Jr., of a part of the farm since owned by Ab'm A. Remsen, dated December 23, 1729, bounds north-easterly by land of Jas. Bobin. A deed from Gysbert Bogert to Jeremiah Remsen, dated June 27, 1741, of same land, bounds north-easterly by land of Jas. Bobin; and a deed of same land by Jeremiah Remsen to his son Ab'm Remsen, dated January 28, 1742, bounds north-easterly by land of James Bobin, *deceased*, showing a presumption of his death between June 27, 1741, and January 28, 1742.

[5] Also Kershow or Karshow. It is natural to suppose that these variations are merely corrupt spellings of a French name and pronunciation.

[6] See deed of Ab'm Schenck to Andries Conselyea, Kings Co. Registrar Office, liber VI, *Deeds*, p. 192, dated June 5, 1773.

II.

The next plantation to Moll's, on the north, was that belonging to his son *Reyer Lambertsen* (Moll[4]) to whom it was patented March 23, 1646. In this patent it was described as

> "Lying at [or near] the East point, or cape of Marechawieck, it extends along the beach of the East river north by north-east a little easterly, 135 rods further towards and into the woods, south-easterly by easterly 100 rods; then east by north 50 rods; then 150 rods south-easterly by south. Its breadth behind in the woods southward 80 rods, again to the strand, till to the place of beginning north-west by west a little westerly 316 rods; amounting in all to 57 morgens, 339 rods." [5]

This was evidently on the West India Company's original purchase, and extended northwardly, from Moll's land, over nearly all what was known subsequently as the *Meserole* or *Keikout farm*.[6]

---

[1] Kings Co. Registrar's Office, liber XXVIII, *Deeds*, p. 268.

[2] Deed lost, but proved in 1822 to have been in Peter Miller's possession.

[3] *Kings Co. Conveyances*, liber XVI, 345.

[4] According to the Dutch custom, he took the patronymic *Lambert* as his final name.

[5] *Dutch Manuscripts*, G. G., 140.

[6] March 29, 1647, one Jan Petersen Van Amsterdam, also known as Jan Petersen Borsin (or Borsje), received a patent for a parcel of land, on Long Island, coming to the river *between* Ryer Lambertsen and Claes de Normans, according to the marks, containing four morgens. (*Dutch Manuscripts*, G. G., 204), Claes de Norman was Claes Carstaensen, who owned the land next adjoining this Meserole farm, on the north. It seems evident, therefore, that the farms of Ryer Lambertsen and Jan Petersen Borsin occupied the space between Moll's land near the Wallabout and Carstaensen's.

Reyer Lambertsen (Moll), in February, 1657, obtained a patent of a lot near Fort Casimer, on the Delaware, or South river,[1] and probably removed thither. On the 12th of September, 1667, one David Jochems received, from Governor Nicolls, a confirmatory patent for the above farm, in which it is set forth that Lambert Herbertsen Moll, the father of Reyer Lambertsen (Moll), "who had lawful power so to do," had conveyed, on the 24th of December 1666, to David Jochems the said premises which are described as "lying on the East Hook or corner of the fence belonging to Mareckawick," with the same general boundaries as in the original patent.

David Jochems, of New York, on the 7th of April, 1670, deeded this land, described "as property at Marechkawyck, formerly belonging to Ryer Lambertsen," to Teunis Jansen Van Pelt.[2]

This farm, which may be described as now bounded by the East river, and a line beginning near the foot of South Seventh street, extending to the junction of South Sixth with Seventh street, from thence to about the junction of Sixth street with North First, thence to the East river, and comprising some 107 acres — is next found in possession of Jean Mesurolle (Meserole), a native of Picardy, in France, who came to this country in April, 1663, together with his "wife and sucking child," in the ship Spotted Cow.[3] No deed or patent has ever been discovered, which will enable us to fix upon the manner or the time of Meserole's entrance upon the occupancy of this estate.

At all events he died seized of it, in 1695; and, on the proving of his will in 1717, twenty-two years after his demise, it was testified by a witness, who had known the testator for nearly twenty years before his death, that he *always* owned this farm, but no deed or document title was produced or alleged to be in existence. It was named, and known to within a very late day, as the *Keikout farm*, which appellation was derived from a small point of land jutting into the East river, from near the foot of the present South Fourth street, used in ancient days as a keike, or lookout, for Indians.[1] Jan Meserole left a widow, Jonica, to whom he devised his entire estate, and an only son, Jan, Jr., who would have taken the estate, under the laws of primogeniture then in force in the colony, had his father left no will. Consequently, regarding himself as sole heir-at-law of his mother, he made no attempt to prove his father's will, as a matter not likely to affect the descent of the estate, if not directly from the father to the son through the mother. By his will, made in 1710, and proved in 1712, he attempted to devise the premises to his two sons John, 3d, and Cornelius.[2] Unfortunately, he died only five days before his mother Jonica, who, if the will of her husband, John the elder, had been duly established, would have died seized of the freehold; and the same could not pass under the will of John, Jr., he never having owned the property, either by heirship, or otherwise. Some five years after the death of John, Jr., as above, his eldest son John, 3d, produced proofs of his father's will in chancery, and by making these proofs relate back to the grandfather's death, and claiming the entire estate as sole heir-at-law of his grandmother Jonica, under the laws of primogeniture, he succeeded in obtaining a chancery judgment, excluding his brother, Cornelius, from his rights under their father's will, and vesting the property entire in himself.[3] He remained in possession until his death, in 1756, when he devised it to his sons Peter, John, Jacob, Abraham and Isaac, subject to certain legacies to be paid to his daughters;[1] and fearing, perhaps, that some of his children might follow his example, to the prejudice of the other heirs, he specially provided that any of them commencing any suit of law about his estate, either real or personal, should be cut off from his share by the executors.

---

[1] *Dutch Manuscripts, Patents,* H. H., 75. [2] *Court Assizes, Council Minutes,* II, 499.
[3] *Documentary History of New York,* III, 62.

---

[1] This name came finally to be applied to the whole shore, or rather the highland, overlooking it, through the present Fourth street, and southward to the Boerum land, and so down to the Wallabout bay. The road, also, leading down to these farms from the country, which subsequently became the eastern boundary of the *first* chartered village of Williamsburgh, was called the Keikout road.

[2] The will of Jan Meserol, Jr., of Turtle bay (New York), dated Oct. 10, 1712, proved Dec. 26, 1712 (liber VIII, *Wills*, p. 149, Office Surrogate of New York county), mentions daughters, Margaret *Devoe*, Deborah *Catts*, and Jane Meserole. Numerous slaves were included in the estate. He appointed his wife Mary, executrix, and gives to her all the Turtle bay farm, stock, etc., together with five hands, or slaves, viz: Polly, an *Indian* woman, and her child; Tom and Joe, two negro boys, and Betty, a negro girl, ten acres of land, two acres of meadow, etc., to *dispose of at her pleasure*. In this he shows a spirit of liberality, far ahead of the day in which he lived; for it was a general custom among the Dutch then, to devise property to their wives, so long only as they remained widows.

[3] These facts are derived from the original exemplified copy of the Chancery record, in possession of Mr. Abraham Meserole, Jr., of New York city.

Meserole's heirs subsequently disposed of the estate as follows: that portion since owned by Noah Waterbury and G. & G. C. Furman, was sold to Skillman the husband of their sister Sarah. A parcel of some twelve acres, near the present Grand street ferry, was sold by Isaac Meserole to the elder Frances Titus; and the balance of the property was released to Abraham Molenaer (*alias* Miller) and by his will, dated August, 1779, was devised to his sons. The Meserole family, after the sale of the Keikout farm, became somewhat scattered, and Jacob and Abraham removed to Greenpoint.[2]

OLD MILLER HOUSE.

The old Meserole homestead, or Miller House, of which we present a view, was, within the memory of many persons now living, a dilapidated structure standing on a projecting bluff, facing the East river, on the northerly side of South Fourth street, a little east of First street. The time of its erection cannot be precisely stated, though the presumption is that it was nearly coeval with the first settlement of the town.

---

[1] Liber xx, *Wills*, p. 171, Surrogate's Office, New York county.

[2] Jacob Meserole, son of John 3d, may have removed to Green point prior to his father's death, as we have a memorandum of a deed from John Meserole to Jacob

The parcel of twelve acres above mentioned as having been purchased by Francis Titus, was by him given, together with other lands, to his youngest son Charles. Adjacent to the south side of this gift, Charles Titus owned a farm, which he purchased of Thomas Skillman, husband of Sarah, daughter of John Meserole in 1785, some twenty-eight acres. Charles Titus is described as an active and intelligent man, who occupied the offices of supervisor, justice of the peace and town clerk of Bushwick, but after the death of his wife (Sarah, daughter of Folkert Rapalye of Brooklyn), he gradually became intemperate, improvident and careless. Before his death, about 1802, fifteen acres, including land received as a part of the above mentioned as a gift from his father, was sold by him to Samuel Titus, of Newtown. Titus released his deed to Richard M. Woodhull, who laid out the property into city lots, and named the place WILLIAMSBURGH.

By Charles Titus's will, the balance of his estate was vested in his sons Folkert and Charles; the former receiving the homestead farm, subject to a payment of £1100 to his sisters, and the latter taking the adjoining farm, originally purchased from Thomas Skillman, subject to a similar payment of £900. These legacies thus charged in their father's will, being paid on the same day by both brothers, and full releases given for the same by their sisters and their husbands, the respective farms came into the possession of Folkert and Charles Titus.

Charles married Anne Jenkins a niece of Justus Thompson of Bushwick, and resided on his farm, until his decease, without issue, on the 28th of October, 1807.

Meserole, dated September 4th, 1750, of sixty-four acres of clear land, which the said John had purchased of Peter Praa at (Praas point), between Maspeth and Norman's kill. In the description in this deed, one of the corners runs to a stake standing to the south of Jacob's house." We infer from this, Jacob must have resided at this time on the father's, which he occupied at the time of his death.

Folkert Titus, however, sold his portion, the original homestead farm, to Thomas Morrell, squandered the money, enlisted in the United States army, was wounded at the taking of Fort George in Canada, returned to Bushwick in 1815, and after remaining there some three years, went to South Carolina, where he died intemperate, and unmarried.

Morrell, the purchaser of Folkert Titus's farm, sold out parcels to Thomas Hazard, the widow Titus, the mother of Tunis Wortman, to David Cannon and others. And shortly after, he, together with Hazard, mapped out the balance of the farm into city lots, secured the grant of a ferry, and commenced the establishment of a city to which they gave the name of *Yorkton*, in the fond anticipation of rivaling Williamsburgh.

III.

We next proceed to consider the patents comprising the land lying between the northerly line of the Meserole farm, and Bushwick creek; and between the East river and a line drawn about equidistant between Fifth and Sixth streets, from the junction of that branch of the creek, which now rises near Ninth and Grand streets, to the north-westerly corner of the Meserole patent. These patents, three in number, belonged respectively to *Claes Cartensen*, sometimes termed "Claes the Norman,"[1] to *George Baxter*, the English secretary to the Dutch council,[2] and to *David Andrus* or Andriese.[3]

Carstensen's patent was granted to him, by Director Kieft, September 5th, 1645, in these words:

"Land for a plantation, lying on Long Island, in the rear of Jan de Swede extending along the river, 217 rods, beginning at the Halve Hook [half corner] inclusive, and into the woods south south-west, 180 rods; further on south, 45 rods; west by south, 51 rods; and further on to the river north-west, 100 rods; amounting in all to 29 morgens, 553 rods; [attached] to the said land, is also given him the half of the marsh lying on the kill."[1]

---

[1] So named in his marriage license, 1646, also as "from Norway."

[2] For further information of this somewhat notorious individual, the reader is referred to *Brodhead's History of New York.*

[3] If *Andrus,* he must have been an Englishman, but it is more probable that the latter name, *Andriese,* is the correct one, in which case he was a Dutchman.

Baxter's patent is dated July 6th, 1643, and is as follows:

"25 morgens, lying on Long Island, back on [along] the kil of Dirck the Norman, extending in front by the valley in length, 50 rods, and on the side of Dirck the Northman into the woods, 150 rods, and back in the woods in breadth, 150 rods, and further on to the side of Jan de Swede's in the length of a bend of the marsh."[2] This would seem to have been at the head of Bushwick creek.

Of *Andriese's* patent we have not been able to find any record. It is not probable that any of these individuals ever occupied their farms. Baxter became a patentee for Gravesend in 1645, was subsequently much employed in public affairs, and finally, on account of his political rascalities, was obliged, in 1656, to leave the country; of Andriese nothing whatever is known, and Carstaensen in some way became possessed of their shares of this property. At all events, on May 15th, 1647, a tract of some one hundred and thirty acres, described as having formerly been in the possession of Carstaensen, Baxter and Andriese, was granted by the governor and council to Jan Forbus.[3] On the 21st February, 1660, this property was transferred to Peter Jans de Norman,[4] whose widow subsequently married Joost Cockuyt.[5] He sold the farm to Paulus Richards, on the 14th of August, 1664, and Richards took out a confirmatory patent for the same,

---

[1] *Dutch Manuscripts, Patents,* G. G., 113.

[2] *Dutch Manuscripts,* G. G., 76; described as "in rear of Dirck the Norman."

[3] *Dutch Manuscripts,* G. G., 217. It is specified as sixty-five morgens with marsh, or meadow. Forbus, as is evident from *Dutch Manuscripts,* II, 97, had this plantation (and paid for it in part) from *Carstensen.*

[4] Mortgage of this property in April, 1649, *Dutch Manuscripts,* III, 34.

[5] Or *Kookuyt.* He took the oath of allegiance in 1687, as having been in the country twenty-seven years, which would fix the time of his arrival at 1660. "Joost Jansen, Cocqunt, from Flanders," as the marriage record says, was married October 6, 1662, to Lysbet Jansen, widow (see *Valentine's Manual for* 1861, p. 652). She was married to her first husband Peter Jans the Norman (Pieter Jansen, from Norway, as the marriage record calls him), July 7, 1647 (see *Valentine's Manual,* 1861, p. 643), and is then mentioned as coming from Amsterdam.

December 3, 1667, from Gov. Nicolls.[1] These lands are then lost to the records for the forty years next subsequent, but at length are found vested in Teunis Mauritz Covert, of Monmouth, N. J., a son of Mauritz Covert, whose widow Antie Fontyn married Francis Titus of Bushwick. By his deed, dated May 16, 1719, it was conveyed to this Francis Titus, "his loving father-in-law," and is described as the farm then occupied by the grantor, of fifty-eight acres, *together with the one-half the meadow valley lying on the creek*, in the precise words of the early patents.[2]

This Francis Titus was a son of Capt. Titus Syrachs de Vries, who was part owner of a grist mill at New Utrecht, in 1660.[3] He seems to have married a second wife, Elizabeth, and died about 1760, leaving five sons named Francis, John, Jan, Charles and Titus, and five daughters named Antie, Helena, Elizabeth, Aentje, Jannetie and Christina. He resided on what has since been known as the Col. Francis Titus farm, in Williamsburgh, consisting of fifty-eight acres of upland and about four acres of meadow, to which he added forty acres adjoining on the easterly side, by purchase of one William Latin,[4] and about twelve acres near the present Grand street ferry, bought of Isaac Meserole, and being a part of the original Keikout farm. He also purchased, from Joseph Skillman, the northerly half of the Jacob Boerum farm in the Sixteenth ward of the present consolidated city, about twenty-five acres, and also acquired, probably through his wife, a title to between twenty and thirty acres, east of the present Bushwick avenue. He also had a share of the New Bushwick lands, of about forty acres, mentioned in his will as the woodland he bought of Abraham Duryea; and he had another portion of woodland purchased from Nicholas Wyckoff.

---

[1] Liber *Patents*, II, Secretary State's office, Albany.

[2] *Conveyances*, liber IV, Office Clerk of Kings Co. It appears from this deed, that Francis Titus had faithfully supported and educated the grantor; as well as the other children of Mauritz Covert.

[3] See *Riker's History Newtown, L. I.*, p. 133). Francis Titus was the ancestor of the Dutch family (for there is also an English family of the name on Long Island), of Titus, once quite numerous in Bushwick. The name was pronounced Teetus.

[4] The Sharp and Sutphen title is derived from this Latin purchase, a portion of which was devised by Francis Titus (will dated November 1, 1758), to his son Jan.

This property was devised by his will, proved in 1764,[1] to his sons, the eldest of whom, Francis, occupied the homestead farm, and also acquired, in addition to this, some eighteen acres of land by purchase of one David Woortman, situated between the present Sixth and Ninth streets, and mostly between Grand and North First streets. He died May 14, 1801, leaving the homestead to his son known as Col. Francis Titus,[2] and who built a house, which yet remains standing, cornerwise to First street, near North Sixth, and is now used as a grog shop.

IV.

East of the farms of Meserole and Carstensen lay that of *Jan de Swede*, or John the Sweed. Its bounds, in the absence of any recorded patent or deed, cannot be precisely stated, but from allusions in deeds of contiguous property, etc., it is probable that it comprised most, if not all of the land bounded south by the farms of Bergen and Moll; on the west by those of Meserole and Carstensen; and on the east by the ancient road known as the Sweed's Fly. This road (the course of which will be best understood by a reference to the map), marked the easterly bounds of Jan de Swede's meadow, which is mentioned as one of the westerly boundaries of the township of Bushwick, in its patent of 1687, and was itself the easterly boundary of the first chartered village of Williamsburgh, in 1827. John the Swede's meadow, therefore, was between Eleventh and Twelfth streets; and possibly, he was, also, the original proprietor of the back lands owned by Wortmans. He seems to be first mentioned in Baxter's patent, in 1643.

John by will (dated September 9, 1794, *Kings Co. Wills*, liber I, 162), gave all his farm to Francis, son of his brother Johannes, deceased. This Francis (J). Titus, (May 30, 1799, *Kings Co. Wills*, liber I, 276), devised equal shares to his two sons Johannes and George. His estate not being sufficient to pay his debts, this parcel of seventeen acres was sold to David Van Cott, R. M. Woodhull and John Boerum. Van Cott sold his share to John Skillman, and in 1826, it was sold to John Sutphen (*King's Co. Convey.*, liber XX, 182), who sold half to Peter Sharp (*Kings Co. Convey.*, liber XXIV, 300.

[1] *Wills,* liber XXIV, p. 415, New York Surrogate's Office.

[2] *Wills,* liber I, p. 347, Kings county Surrogate's Office.

V.

The extensive tract between Jan the Sweed's land and Bushwick avenue, comprising land, which subsequently contained nearly one-third of the city of Williamsburgh, was owned, a little more than a century ago, by one Daniel Bordet. This is designated on our map as lands of John Devoe, William P. Powers, Abraham Meserole, James Scholes, Abraham Remsen, Conselyea McKibbin and Nichols, and others. The Remsen and Scholes parcels were conveyed by Bordet and Annetie his wife, May 3, 1750, to Abraham Remsen, the father of A. A. Remsen. The Miller). And land was devised to David Van Cott, probably William P. Powers parcel was equally devised by his (Bordet's) will,[1] to three grandchildren, Maria, Annetie and Elizabeth, children of his daughter Maria, wife of Abraham Mollenaer (*alias* that, on our map, of Van Cott, and of Conselyea; and to John Devoe, probably identical with that marked on the map as " heirs of John Devoe."

VI.

In the year 1667, Gov. Nichols patented to one *Humphrey Clay*, then of the city of New York:

> " Lands lying and being within the limits of the town of Bushwick, over against the land of Richard Britnells [of Newtown], stretching, as by the survey it doth appear, along the west side of the [Newtown] creek, 210 rods, and on the south side from the first mark standing by the creek-side, along the land of Uddens, to the land or mark in a certain white oak tree west, and by south and east and by north, 110 rods, and from the mark along the land of Laurens Petersen, to a mark in a walnut tree, north-west and by north and south-west and by south, 8 rods, and from the said tree along the forest land, upon the north and south line, to a mark in a chestnut tree, 80 rods, and from that tree to a mark in a small tree at the creek-side; north north-east and south south-west 35 rods, according to the known old marks." [2]

---

[1] *Wills*, liber xxv, p. 350, New York Surrogate's Office.

[2] Date June 24, 1667. See *Patents*, II, 58.

This tract, lying on both sides of what is now Meeker avenue, adjoining Newtown creek,[1] had just been patented to Adam Mott, in August, 1646, by him transported to William Goulding, and by him transferred to Claude Berbine and Anthony Jerve, of Maspeth kil. These parties on the 7th of January, 1653, conveyed the property, "with the houseing thereupon," to Jacob Steendam. And "whereas the said Jacob Steendam," says the old patent to Clay, "hath been absent and gone out of this country, for the space of eight years, during which time the houseing, which was upon the said land, is wholly come to ruin, and the land hath been neglected and unmanured, without any care taken thereof, by the said Jacob Steendam, or any that hath lawful power from him, contrary to the laws established in such cases, within this government," the said land was declared to be forfeited. And therefore, "to the intent that no plantation within this government should lie waste and unmanured, and that a house, or houses may be built upon the old foundations, as also, for divers other good causes, and considerations," the same was fully granted to Humphrey Clay. Clay probably came to New York, from New London in the colony of Connecticut, where he had been an inn-keeper, perhaps from as early a date as 1655. In 1664, he was fined 40s. and costs, for keeping an inmate contrary to law, and his wife Katherine was "presented for selling liquors at her house, selling lead to the Indians, profanation of the sabbath, card playing and entertaining strange men." Upon trial before the court of assistants, Mr. Clay and wife were convicted of keeping a disorderly house, and fined £40, or to leave the colony within six months, in which case half the fine was to be remitted. They chose the latter course and removed, as we have seen, to New York, and then in 1667 to Bushwick.[2] Perhaps he came over to Long Island somewhat before this, as in 1666, he married a second wife, Sarah, the widow of James Christie, of Newtown.[1] As late as 1670, he was keeper of the ferry at Mespat kill, between Newtown and Bushwick. The creek, at this time, was crossed above by a bridge on the old highway from Brooklyn to Newtown, and both the road and bridge being so badly out of repair, as to occasion not only inconvenience, but danger to life and limb, attracted the notice of the court of sessions, who directed the two towns to take immediate measures to have the bridge repaired, and the road to be cleared; "their several new fences having blocked up the usual old way, which causes many inhabitants, as well as strangers, to lose themselves in the woods."[2] Humphrey Clay himself was afterwards indicted by the grand jury of Kings county, for closing up a way over his own farm to the Newtown creek, which it was alleged, had been used by the townspeople, as a free way to the creek, for *forty years previous.* At his trial, however, in 1702, he was acquitted.[3] He died on this farm, and his son and heir conveyed it to one Alexander Baird.[4]

---

[1] Described on Field's map of Williamsburgh and Greenpoint, 1852, as land belonging to heirs of John Waters, Anthony Hulst, and Ed. Bridges, and adjoining the south-easterly side of the farm late of Lambert Wyckoff.

[2] *Miss Caulkins's New London*, pp. 88, 448; *Hinman's Catalogue of Puritan Settlers of Connecticut*, (larger edition), p. 616. Also *Savage's Geneal. Dictionary, New England.*

VII.

Abraham Rycken, or de Rycke, the progenitor of the present Rycker families in New York, New Jersey, and other parts of the United States, received in 1638, from Director Kieft, an allotment of land on Long Island, which land has been located, by Thompson, in Gowanus,[5] and by Riker in the Wallabout of Brooklyn.[6] A closer examination of the original patent, however, has convinced us that it was located in the territory, then recently purchased from the Indians by the West India Company, which afterwards formed the old town of Bushwick.

---

[1] *Riker's Annals of Newtown, L. I.*, p. 59, marriage license granted by Gov. Nicholls, June 25, 1666, *Council Minutes*, II, 77.

[2] *Ibid.*, p. 84.

[3] One Humphrey Clay (perhaps a son of the above) being a quaker, at Beverwyck, (Albany) in 1673, refused to take the oath of allegiance. See *Albany Records*, vol. XXIII, p. 307.

[4] Liber V, 114, *Kings Co. Register*, April, 11, 1717.

[5] *History of Long Island*, II.

[6] *History of Newtown*, 301. It is but justice to Mr. Riker, to state, that on submitting the opinion to him, with the accompanying proof, he adopted our views — saying in a note appended to our manuscript, "that there were other reasons for locating Rycker's farm at the Wallabout. In 1643, Rycker's plantation is described as *situated on Long Island by Remmert Jansen's land* (leased to Wm. Hutchinson,

The patent which he took out for this tract, August 8, 1640, specifies it as

> "A certain piece of land lying on Long Island, *over against Ruunegacanck*, where Gysbert Rycken lies on the one side, and the highway leading to the kil, into the woods east north-east and west south-west, and Hans Hansen for the most part lies next to the said highway, containing along the creek 500 paces; to which aforesaid parcel of land is added a third part of the hay meadow, lying in the rear of land of Joris Rapalije and Gysbert Rycken." [1]

The expression, "over against Runnegaconck," which we have italicized above, probably led Thompson into his very palpable error; and the fact that Rycken's patent is mentioned as contiguous to that of Hans Hansen Bergen, and other well known settlers in the Wallabout, has caused the similar error of locating him in that neighborhood. We feel confident, however, that Rycken's land fronted 500 paces along Mespath or Newtown creek, from which stretching back in an east north-east, and west south-west direction it abutted in the rear against the land of Hans Hansen Bergen.[2] On one side it was bounded by the highway to the the kil, probably identical with the old Brooklyn and Newtown

---

II, 63, July 2, 1643). As Remmert or Rem Jansen, was known to have owned the farm at the Wallabout, lately occupied by Gen. Johnson, it helped, together with the allusions in Rycker's patent to Rennegaconck, and the lands of Joris Rapelje, to induce the conclusion that Rycken's land lay in close proximity to the Wallabout; while the omission in his patent of any reference by name to Mespat kil, served to divert attention from that direction. However, I have full confidence in the result of your closer investigation of this and the adjacent patents." (J. R).

[1] *Dutch Manuscripts, Patents* G. G., 37. The original ground-brief or patent to Abraham Rycken is still in existence, and in possession of Mr. James Riker. It is written upon parchment in a neat Dutch text, and is probably the earliest of the Brooklyn patents extant.

[2] Another translation of this patent describes this land as "stretching from the kil, into the woods east north-east and west south-west *against* Hans Hansen [Bergen], and along the same and in just [i. e. the same, or equal], breadth along the kil, 500 paces."

turnpike,[1] mentioned in the previous article on Humphrey Clay. As to Gysbert Rycken's land, no record exists, and, indeed, about the only mention made of him in our early annals, is the reference in the above patent. Newtown creek, in our opinion, is the the only stream opposite Runnegaconck, from which a tract of land could run in a north north-east and a west south-west line till it met with farm of Bergen. And Rycken's patent therefore is probably nearly identical with the lands embraced between the creek, Lombard street, Metropolitan avenue, and the old road running from junction of Metropolitan and Bushwick avenues, to Porter avenue near Anthony street.[2] It is by no means probable, that he ever settled or improved this grant, for in 1642, he is found at Nieuw Amsterdam, where he resided for many years on his own lot in the present Broad street. He and his wife were also members of the Dutch church within Fort Amsterdam, where most of his children were baptized. In 1654, he received a patent for a farm in Newtown, at a place called the Poor bowery, to which was afterwards added the island called Riker's island; and on this farm he resided until his death, in 1689.[3]

This land of Rycken's in Bushwick, or a portion of it with an addition of the meadows as far as Luquier's mill, is afterwards found in possession of one Jochem Verscheur,[4] who in 1712, conveyed it to Cornelius, Johannes and David Van Catts, by whose family name it has since been known.[5]

---

[1] Now Bushwick and Meeker avenues. See map.

[2] Designated on map as lands of Beadel, C. & G. Debevoise, Wm. Cooper and Joseph Conselyea.

[3] *Riker's Newtown.* For a careful and interesting genealogy of the Riker family, see page 299.

[4] *Wills,* liber v, 84, *Kings county Surrogate's Office.*

[5] This deed, dated April 1, 1712 (Record, June. 1737, in liber v, *Kings county Conveyances,* p. 84), specifies the farm "as it is now in fence, and in the tenure and occupation of said Jochem, containing 150 acres, be it more or less, and bounded north by land of Humphrey Clay, north-east by Mespath kil, so called; and south-east by a meadow, and by lands of heirs of Wm. Luquier, deceased; west by common highway, and north by land of Peter De Witt, deceased." Also a house-lot, bounded south and west by common highway, north in rear by land of John Luquer, etc.

VIII.

Green-Point. The greater part of the present 17th ward of the city of Brooklyn, was known from its earliest settlement as Green-Point,[1] being in fact, a neck of land embraced between Maspeth kil, now Newtown creek, and Norman's kil, now Bushwick creek.[2] It was originally granted, in 1645, to *Dirck Volckertsen*, surnamed the Norman;[3] and was by him conveyed, Sept. 9th, 1653, to Jacob Hey.[4] The fact is also recited in a confirmatory patent granted by Governor Lovelace, on May 1st, 1670, to David Jochems (who had married Christina Cappoens, the widow of the said Hay), in the following words:

> "Whereas, Dirck Volkertse [the Norman], did, by virtue of a ground-brief granted to him, bearing date y^e^ 3d of April, 1645, transport and make over upon y^e^ 9th day of September, 1653, unto Jacob Hay, a certain piece of land upon Long Island, lying and being at Mespath kil, beginning from y^e^ hook or point of y^e^ said kil, and so going along by y^e^ river south-west and by west, 75 rods, then stretching alongst Mespath kil, south-east and by south, 200 rods from Mespath kil into y^e^ woods, striking south-west and by west 75 rods, then going back to y^e^ river side almost upon a north-west and by north line, 200 rods: it contains about 50 acres or 25 morgens. And, also, a parcel of valley or meadow ground in y^e^ tenure or occupation of y^e^ said Dirck Volkerse, at y^e^ end of y^e^ said land in breadth, and in length 90 rods, making about 12 acres, or 6 morgens."

On the 20th of January, 1682, David Jochems and Christina Cappoens, executed a sort of double will, quite lengthy and curious in its details, whereby he devised the whole of his property to his wife, and she, in turn, devised her whole property to her husband, and to Maria Hayes, a daughter by her first husband. The property was to be held wholly by David Jochems, until the said Maria Hayes should become of age, or married, when it was to be divided. This will, which shows Christina Cappoens to have been quite a wealthy woman for those days, was admitted to probate, July 7, 1682. This daughter, Maria Hayes married first Joost Adriaense Molenaer, and, in 1684, after his death, Captain Peter Praa of Newtown, the son of Peter Praa, a highly respectable Huguenot exile from Dieppe, in France, who came to this country with his family in 1659, and died in Cripplebush, March 6, 1663. Captain Praa, who was born at Leyden, in 1655, during his parent's temporary stay at that place, was a man of much enterprise and public spirit. After his marriage he spent the greater portion of his life at Bushwick, where he commanded the militia, and was especially distinguished for his superior skill in horsemanship. In September, 1693, his mother-in-law Christina Cappoens, widow of Jochems, and who then resided in New York, by a codicil to a will dated June 17, 1687, gave to her daughter Maria Hayes, her "small house with land from rear to front," situated in the city, also "land or bowery and meadow, lying on Mespath Kil now by lease possessed by herself and her husband" *in trust* for her two grandchildren Sara Molenaer, daughter of Maria (Hayes) Praa by her first husband Joost Adriaensen Molenaer, and Catrina Praa, by her second husband Captain Praa. Praa was to enjoy the use of this bouwery or meadow, after his wife's death, but in case of his remarriage he was to pay 10,000 guilders, wampum value, to the executors of the estate.[1]

---

[1] *Thompson's History of Long Island*, II, 156, second line, Green hooke, or Green point, is a mistranslation; the original being *Hout hoek*, or Wood point.

[2] See Supreme Court, Samuel I. Hunt vs. James Cunningham, Jabez Williams, John T. Williams and Samuel Sneden. Copies of Documents, F. R. Tillou, Attorney, New York, 1855.

[3] Volkertsen, whose business was that of a ship carpenter, lived on the northerly side of Bushwick creek, near the East river, in an old stone house, which was demolished some years since, and on the site, Messrs. Samuel Sneeden and Jabez Williams built large and fine dwellings. Volkertsen, in old documents, is frequently called Dirck the Norman, and thus from his lands and dwelling in that vicinity, Bushwick creek derived its ancient name of *Norman's kil.*

[4] *Dutch Manuscript Patents*, H. H., 46.

Having thus become possessed, by inheritance, of a portion of the Volckertsen patent, Captain Praa purchased the balance, in 1719, from Dirck, Philip and Nicholas Volckertsen, sons of the original patentee. By a deed, dated March 16, 1718–19, and in consideration of the sum of £1,625 to them paid, he became the owner of the farm "situate, lying and being at a place commonly known or called Norman's kil, within the limits of Bushwyck town in Kings county," described as

---

[1] The widow Jochem also bequeaths to her granddaughter Sarah Molenaer, the great house and lot, in New York where she then resided, and in case of her death it was to pass to the other granddaughter Catrina Praa.

She also releases her negro woman *Isabella* from servitude of all sorts, and bequeaths to her her daily wearing clothes. The daughter of this woman Lysbett is to be the slave of Maria Hayes Praa, but to be freed at madame Praa's death.

> "Containing by estimation one hundred and sixty-four acres, be the same more or less, butted and bounded as follows, viz: Beginning at a place commonly called the Hont Poynt, upon Norman's kil, and running along the highway, unto the fence of Peter Jansen de Witt, deceased, and thence along the fence of the said Peter Jansen de Witt, unto a small creek that runs into Mespath kil, and so along the west side of said creek, until it comes to the meadow of Annetie Scamp, and so along the meadow of Annetie Scamp, until it comes to the upland of said Dirck, Philip and Nicholas Folkers [Volkertsen], (meadow being about one acre of meadow or thereabout, be it more or less), and then along the upland, until it comes to the meadow of John Mezeroll, and so along the meadow of the said John Mizeroll, until it comes to the fence of Peter Praa, and thence all along the fence of the said Peter Praa until it comes to the river called the East river, and round Norman's kil, unto the place where it first began." [1]

In addition to this property, he acquired large tracts in various places, among which may be mentioned Dominies hook, in Newtown, which he purchased from the heirs of Anneke Jans, of Trinity church notoriety.

Peter Praa lived in an old stone dwelling house upon the farm, since of David Provoost, near the meadow on the east side of Green-Point. This old house and the Provoost farm, on the death of Praa and his wife, came into the possession of their daughter, Christina, the wife of David Provoost, and was occupied by her, during the summer months, she being a resident of the city of New York, until her death about 1795. From that time, it was occupied by her descendants until its destruction by fire in 1832, or the premises bounded by the East river, H, I, and Washington

---

The executors of this will were Nicholas Bayard, mayor of the city, Jacobis Verhulst (whose place being made vacant by his death, was filled by codicil by Mr. Rip Van Dam); and her good friend, Mr. John Harpendeigh, all wealthy and prominent citizens of New York.

[1] *Conveyances*, liber CXXXIII, p. 138, Kings Co. Register office.

'33, after which David Provoost, her great grandchild, and the father of Hon. Andrew J. Provoost, built the house now occupied by his son-in-law, J. W. Valentine, on its site.

Capt. Peter Praa died in 1740, and by will his dated in 1739, divided his property to his children. These were *Catherine*, born in 1685; *Maria*, born in 1688, who married Wynant Van Zandt, and died before her father, leaving two sons, Peter Praa, and Johannes Van Zandt; *Elizabeth*, born in 1691, who married Jan Meserole (and to whom was devised, "all that tract or lot of land and meadow, which I purchased from Dirck Volkertsen, adjoining to the land I now live on, upon the west side thereof, bounded easterly by lands of John Meserole, and to begin at the lands of said John Meserole, and to run northerly on the north-east side, as the fence stands, and on the south-west side by a ditch, till both lines come to the river)." *Anna*, born in 1694, who married one William Bennett; 2d, Daniel Bordet,[1] and received all the Dominies hook property in Newtown;[2] and *Christina*, born in 1698, who married one David Provoost; 2d, Rev. John Aronda, and who received property in the city of New York.

As we have already seen, in the discussion of the Meserole patent (*ante* 304), two of Jan Meserole's sons, Jacob and Abraham, after the sale of the Keikout farm, removed to Green Point, where they settled on land which their father had purchased from Peter Praa.[3] *Jacob* devised his share, by will, dated July 18, 1782,[4] to his wife, for life, with remainder in fee to his sons, Peter and John; who, in 1791, made a division, Peter occupying the northerly half, and John the southerly.[5] *Abraham*, who died in 1801, was the father of John A. Meserole, who inherited streets, on which he lived for many years, and died intestate, in 1833. One of his daughters, Mary, married Neziah Bliss, who now resides upon this very property, and in the old Meserole mansion, on the banks of the East river, which house has been recently enlarged and modernized. Thus by purchase, and through their mother, the greater part of the Praa estate came into possession of the Meserole family.[1]

---

[1] The same Daniel Bordet mentioned on page 310.

[2] "Except the little island in the said piece of land, which I will my old negro, Jack, shall have so long as he lives, to maintain himself out of it, and if he cannot maintain himself from it, then he shall have his choice, which of my children he will live with," otherwise the island was to revert to Anna Bordet, and to her children after her.

[3] *Deeds*, dated January 4, 1749-50, and Feb. 4, 1750. This land was on the north side of the old Wood point road. Jacob may have resided at Green-Point before his father's death.

[4] *Wills*, liber I, 14, Kings Co. Surrogate's office.

[5] Liber XLIII, 452, Kings county Registrar Office.

That portion granted by Praa to his daughter Annetie Bodet, descended to her son William Bennet (see page 318) who died in possession, in 1805, having owned it upward of twenty years. It was by him devised to his sons Tunis and Richard, and, in 1813, was sold at auction, under foreclosure of mortgage, and purchased by Ammon T. Griffing. After his death in 1814, it remained in possession of his heirs, until 1834, when it passed to Gen. Jeremiah Johnson, who in 1835, conveyed it to Mr. Neziah Bliss, and he in 1835 and '42 transferred it to Eliphalett Nott.[2]

Of the more modern history and progress of Green-Point, the reader will be fully informed in a subsequent chapter.

"There were," says Mr. Stearns in one of his published articles on this subject, "considerable tracts of land, to which neither patent nor possessory titles were acquired for many years after the settlement of the place. These lands were known as commons, and embraced several pieces of meadow on Newtown creek, and a space of land by Ninth street, and North First and

---

[1] *Jan Meserol,* had sons, Jacob[1] and Abraham[2]. *Jacob*[1] had sons, Peter[3] and John.[4] *Peter*[3] had eleven children. *John*[4] married Elizabeth ......, and died in 1831; his children were Francis and John[5]. *John*[5] died Feb. 1, 1850, leaving widow, Hannah ..... and children Jacob, Francis T., John H., Elizabeth T. (wife of S. F. A. Shonnard); William R., Cornelia (wife of B. U. Shreve); George W., Sarah A., Hannah M., Peter A.; Caroline (wife of Abraham Vandervoort). *Note.*— Capt. John, in 1847, in order to make the division lines of estate more certain, in conjunction with his uncle Peter's heirs, deeded and dedicated *Union* (now Norman avenue) street, running east and west, and 60 feet wide.

Abraham A.,[2] had John A., who died August 12, 1833, wife Magdalen — *children,* Gertrude (wife of Wm. Sackett); Abraham, John, died 1842; Peter A., Archibald K., Mary Ann (wife of Nezia Bliss); Jeremiah, died in 1827; Christina (wife of Cornelius Van Cleef), died 1822.

[2] See also deed of Peter Praa Van Zandt, merchant of New York, to Jacob Bennet, Jr., of Kings Co., L. I. (April 23, 1776), of land devised to him and his brother Johannes, by his grandfather Praa, for £440, reserving the right of burying in the private burying ground of the Provoost family. This burial place is still in existence.

Second streets, in Williamsburgh, said to have been left open for the convenience of watering the cattle of the neighborhood, as it embraced a pond of *fresh* water that emanated from the springs, which the new Water Company, recently incorporated, 1854, have proposed to appropriate in supplying our city with water. This common embraced between one and two acres of land, and is mentioned in old deeds before the year 1700. A legal controversy concerning the title to this common, may be noticed hereafter. Besides, the meadow lands and *the commons* referred to, the town of Bushwick in the rights of all its several freeholders assumed to own the tract of land known as New Bushwick, embracing most of that part of the town south-east of the Cross roads, or the present Brooklyn and Newtown turnpike road. Whether this claim of title was based on a special grant, or assumed as an incident of the charter of Gov. Nicoll, I am not advised. It is well known that all the several freeholders in the town claimed to be seized of an undivided share as tenants in common of the New Bushwick lands. The deed from the executor and the heir of Jacob Kip, of the Berry and Peter Miller farm, we have mentioned as having been executed to James Bobin, in 1693, conveys, with the land it particularly describes, all the right, title and interest, which the said Jacob Kip had in the common lands at New Bushwick, from which we infer that the partitions of these lands had not then been made. This, however, was effected previous to the year 1703; when, as we have mentioned, we find that the several owners of those lands were in possession from East New York along the Brooklyn line.

"John Meserole, son of the John Meserole mentioned above, by his will, dated in 1710, proved 1712, devises to his wife Mary, also one piece of upland lying at New Bushwick, between John Prau's land and Francis Titus, containing about 45½ acres (*New York Surrogate's Records*, liber VIII, *Wills*, p. 149).

"The quantity of land allotted to most of the claimants in New Bushwick, was about 40 acres each. A lot of land consisting of 20 acres, was laid out for the use of the Dutch church of Bushwick, as is recited in their deed, dated May 1st, 1718, confirming a sale made of the same, to one Lawrence Cook, in 1701, and assigned by him to one Jocham, or Yoham Verscheur.

"That it was laid out by *the joint consent of all the freeholders of said parish.'* * * * 'Bounded to the lot of ground formerly belonging to James Bobin (1718), and bounded by the lot of *Ouka Renierse*, and further bounded by the land, which did belong to said *Yoham Verscheur.'* It is also recited in that deed, for the better improving of said church's estates, that said land was sold at public vendue, by Jurian Nagle, Ouka Renierse, and Derck Folkerts, the three deacons entrusted by said parish, to receive and take the revenues and profits arising to the said church. The deed is signed by Paulus Van Enden, Abraham Duryee, Isaac Bucar, and Baron Cole, as deacons of said church, at the time this deed of confirmation was executed. The original deed is in the possession of the heirs of William Covert, Esq., the twenty acres probably being a part of his farm, or that of the late Abraham Duryee, deceased.

"These New Bushwick lands were probably reservations for woodland, to supply the people with fuel, as old wills are found devising the right to cut and carry away fuel to burn, but not to sell, from parts of those lands claimed by the testators. The salt meadows that became, in separate parcels, appurtenances of the different homesteads in the town, were distributed at a much earlier date. Many of them were vested by the original patents, and all that were capable of use and improvement were made the means of sustaining the cattle of the earliest settlers through the severe winters of those times, before artificial grasses were cultivated on the uplands. Some portion of those meadows, however, were too sunken to be of use, being below the ordinary tides, and hence remained without a claimant, till they were sold within a year or two since, by the towns of Williamsburgh and Bushwick." [1]

---

[1] We have counted twenty-six farm maps, to which we have had occasion to pay attention, besides the following sections of the village, of which we have seen no farm map, but of which such maps may exist, if not filed. (1). The north-easterly section of the new village of Williamsburgh, embracing land of Andrew J. Conselyea, and others. (2). The land of Gen. Samuel I. Hunt, and land late of Lewis Sanford. (3). The homestead of the late Col. Fancis Titus, and seven acres of land next to Brooklyn, bought by John Skillman, Sen., in 1807, of Barnet Bloom.

As a matter of curiosity, we enumerate the maps on file.

(1). The John Skillman farm. (2). 939 lots, of Wm. P. Powers. (3). 64 lots of Mackerel, Richardson, and others. (4). Land of the Methodist Episcopal church. (5). Meserole farm. (6). Meserole homestead. (7). Boerum farm. (8). Land of McKibbin Nicholls, including the Boerum farm, and all the land in the village, south-east of it. (9). Land of Abraham A. Remsen. (10). Land of James Scholls. (11). Land of Holmes Van Mater. (12). Land of Abraham Meserole, in the 1st district. (13). Land of John Miller. (14). Land of Samuel Willetts. (15). Land of Jacob Berry. (16). Lands, late of Frederick Devoe. (17). Lands of G. C. & G. Furman. (18). Loss's Map of Yorkton. (19). Loss's Map of Willamsburgh. (20). Poppleton's Map of Williamsburgh. (21). Land of Sharpe and Sutphen. (22). Land of heirs of David Van Cott. (23). Land of Frost, O'Handy, Butler and Sinclair. (24). Map of 141 lots filed by David Codwise. (25). Land of the shore, water rights, etc., at the mouth of Bushwick creek, filed by Paul J. Fisk. (26). Land of Robert Carnley. (27). Land of Carnley and Waterbury. (28). Land of Lemuel Richardson, south side of No. 4th street. (29). Land of John Luther, on North Third street.

These several farm maps in some cases overlay each other, and are overlaid by smaller maps, which in some cases do, and in others do not, retain the old farm numbers.—*J. M. Stearns, Esq.*

CHAPTER VI.

HISTORY OF BUSHWICK, 1660-1708.

The scattered agricultural inhabitants of the territory now comprised in the eastern district of the city of Brooklyn, seem to have made no attempt towards a regular settlement, or the organization of a town government, for a period of over twenty years from the date of its purchase from the natives, by the West India Company. In February, 1660, as will be seen from page 113, of our first volume, the troublous condition of the times led to the enforcement, by the government, of stringent precautionary measures for the protection and safety of the established towns upon the western end of Long island. "Outside residents, who dwell distant from each other" were directed also to "remove and concentrate themselves within the neighboring towns, and dwell in the same;" because says the order "we have war with the Indians, who have slain several of our Netherland people." A village and blockhouse was accordingly erected by the Waal-boght residents during the month of March, 1660, on the high point of land, on the East river, near the foot of the present South Fourth street, reference to which may be found on pages 113, 114, 115, of our first volume.

Simultaneously, almost, with the issuance of the above order, the first steps were taken towards the establishment of a settlement in another and more remote portion of the territory. On the 16th of February, according to the record, "as fourteen Frenchmen, with a Dutchman, named Peter Janse Wit, their interpreter, have arrived here; and, as they do not understand the Dutch language, they have been with the director general and requested him to cause a town plot to be laid out at a proper place; whereupon his honor fixed upon the 19th instant, to visit the place and fix upon a site."

Accordingly, three days after, on "February 19th, the director general, with the Fiscal, Nicasius de Sille and his Honor Secretary Van Ruyven, with the sworn surveyor Jaques Corteleau, came to Mispat [Mespath] and have fixed upon a place between Mispat kil [Newtown creek] and Norman's kill, [Bushwick creek] to establish a village; and have laid out, by survey, *twenty-two* house lots, on which dwelling houses are to be built."

On the 7th of March, according to the record "Evert Hedeman, having erected the first house, between William Traphagen and Knoet Mouris, near the pond, came to dwell in the same." Other houses were erected during the same year.

Again, after the lapse of a year, on "March 14th, 1661, the director general visited the new village, when the inhabitants requested his honor to give the place a name; whereupon," taking his inspiration, no doubt, from its immediate surroundings, "he named the town *Boswijck*," *i. e.*, the Town of Woods.

The citizens then applied for the following privileges:

Firstly. For pasture-land for their cattle and hay land for their stock, which they requested might be bounded as follows: from the east side of Smith's island,[1] southwards to the hills and along said hills westward to the heights of Merck's plantation,[2] and from said heights northerly, by Merck's plantation, to Bushwick, being a four cornered plot of ground.

Secondly. To have meadows to mow hay, for their stock according to the landed rights.

Thirdly. To have roads for the purpose of going to the river and kills, to wit: one road between the land of Hendrick Willemse Baker and Jan Cornelis Zeeuw; the second upon Dirck Volkertsen [the] Norman's land, which is named the Wood Point; the third, over [Jacob] Steendam's land, to come to Mispat kil; the fourth, over Albert de Norman's land to get hay and other things.

Fourthly. That all the citizens who dwell within the limits and jurisdiction of the town of Bushwick, and already have village lots, shall remove to the same, according to the order of the director general.

---

[1] *Riker's Newtown*, p. 51. This island is now known as Furman's or Maspeth's island. It was previously occupied by the settlement of *Aernhem*, which was broken up by order of the director and council in the spring of 1661, and its grant to Boswyck was the occasion of a dispute which was waged between the towns of Bushwick and Newtown, until 1769. A detailed account of this matter will be found in *Riker's Newtown.*

[2] Marcus de Suson, who had a plantation near Cripplebush, Smith's island.

Fifthly. This is undersigned by the citizens, viz:

1. Peter Janse Wit,
2. Evert Hedeman,
3. Jan Willemse Yselstyn,
4. Jan Tilje,
5. Ryck Leydecker,
6. Hendrik Willemsen,
7. Barent Gerritsen,
8. Jan Hendricksen,
9. Jan Cornelisen Zeeuw,
10. Barent Joosten,
11. Francois de Puij,
12. Johannes Casperse,
13. Francisco de Neger,
14. Pieter Lamot,
15. Carel Fontyn,
16. Henry........,
17. Jan Catjouw,
18. Jan Mailjaert,
19. Hendrick Janse Grever,
20. Gysbert Thonissen,
21. Joost Casperse,[1]
22. Willem Traphagen,
23. Dirck Volkertse,

The governor also took occasion to call the attention of those living outside of the village to the great danger to which they were exposed, and to recommend their instant removal to the greater security now offered them by the erection of a number of neighboring dwellings.[1] He, furthermore, commanded the villagers to nominate six of their number, from whom he would select three as magistrates for the town of Boswyck. The people, therefore, nominated six of the most prominent of their number, viz: Gysbert Theunis, Jan Catjouw, Ryck Leydecker, Peter Janse Wit, Jan Cornelis Zeeuw and Jan Tilje, of whom the last three were selected by the governor and confirmed as magistrates of Boswyck, by the following proclamation of March 25, 1661.

> "The director general and council of New Netherland. To all those who shall see these or hear them read, Health: Be it known, that for the public good, for the further promotion and increase of the newly begun village of Boswyck, and for the more convenient administration of justice, they have thought necessary to establish in the aforesaid village, a subaltern bench of justice, which shall, provisionally, consist of the following named commissaries, viz: Pieter Jansen Wit, Jan Tilje, and Jan Cornelis [Zeeuw]."[2]

---

[1] Ancestor of the Newtown *Springstons*, a Dutchman and brother of Johannes Casperse.

See also *Dutch Manuscripts*, IX, 562.

[2] *O'Callaghan*, II, 430; *Dutch Manuscripts*, IX, 570, date March 31, 1661.

The subaltern court of justice thus appointed, entertained, "at the first instance, all questions, actions and disputes which may occur in said village between man and man," also all "criminal acts originating in faults," etc., except judgments of over fifty guilders, which might be appealed from. Boswyck, like New Utrecht, having no schout of its own, was subject to the jurisdiction of Hegeman, the schout of Breuckelen, Amersfoort and Midwout, and the district became thenceforth known as the Five Dutch Towns.

The village seems to have had a rapid accession of new settlers, for in May, 1661, we find the magistrates preferring the following request:

"To the honorable general and council in New Netherland.

We [desire to] represent, with all due respect, that the *new* settlers of the village of Boswyck, who accepted the new lots, are much in need of some meadows, on which [account] we have chosen ten men to make a search for meadow land which, so far we know, is not already disposed of by deed. There are only a few meadows, for the use of the inhabitants of our village, near their lands, but these they need themselves, and we have no other of which we have not informed them. But the aforesaid ten men explored the meadows where every person mows, who arrives there first [i. e. common meadows], viz:

"At Smit's island [now known as Furman's, or Maspeth island],	6 morgen.
Adjoining it, formerly the land of Elbert Elbertsen, who was killed by the savages,	4 morgen.
Two lots of Severy Oesis, who also was murdered by the savages,	5 morgen.
About a morgen in the woods, in fresh *vleyen*,	4 morgen.
Total	22 morgen.

"Therefore, it is their humble request, as well as ours, to the general and council, that these ten men may enjoy the use of the aforesaid meadows, inasmuch as they have taken the new lots, because it is impossible for them to reside in our village, if they can obtain no meadows, not knowing where they could mow any grass. Supplicating most humbly that they may be favored by the director general and council, and expecting your honor's answer hereto, we remain, &c.,

"Peter Jans de Wit,
——— Leclercq,
Jan Cornelissen [Zeeuw]."

To this request, the authorities returned a favorable answer, providing that the said lands, if not included in any previous patents, might be granted and laid out in lots, by the commissaries of Boswyck.[1]

In March, 1662, the magistrates of Boswyck received from their fellow citizens the following request:[2]

> "The community of Boswyck, finds that the path, which was formerly laid around two spots of underwood, and which makes a circuit of nearly a mile before it reaches the water, is of little or no use, when they most need it; inasmuch as the owners of the land now threaten us, although the director granted us this wood, which they now take by forcible possession, and obstruct all the path to it, which course, we find, is actuated by passion. Wherefore, our request to the commissaries now is, that the paths shall be to the west of the village, one rod distance from the gate, and straight along the side of the valley [meadow], and then running in a straight course to the kil, to the spring of the well, and so again along the length of Henry Backer's land, and that of Barent Gerritse, and so along the meadow side, and then in a straight course in the path to the wood. This is solicited by the undersigned, written on the 24th of March, 1662.
>
> "Jan Willemsen,
> Everhardt Hedeman,
> Geertje + Jansen,
> Wessel + Gerritse,
> Joost + Casperts,
> Jan + Cornelissen,
> Barent Gerritse,
> Willem Traphagen,
> Gerret + Petersen,
> Carel + Fonteyn,
> Andries Backer,+
> Gilbert Thomas,+
> Ryck Lydecker,
> Johan *Remsen*,
> Dirck Volkertsen,
> Jan + Catjouw,
> Hendrik Barent Smith,
> Johannes Casperse,
> Barent Gerritsen consents as far as his land extends in the road."

This request was presented to the council by the magistrates, who also desired "that a few hovels, which though decayed were yet remaining on the place of New Arnheim, might be either removed or demolished, lest they should again be occupied by any person who might prove a detriment to the village."[3]

---

[1] *Dutch Manuscripts*, IX, 635. [2] March 24, 1662, *Dutch Manuscripts*, X, 97.

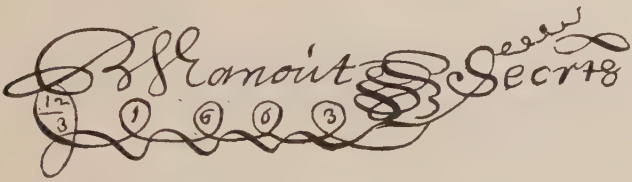
[3] *Dutch Manuscripts*, X, 99, March 30, 1662. The director had already refused

Again, at a meeting of the council, May 25th, was "presented and read the petition of Peter Jansen Trimbel, requesting permission to make a *concentration* of four families on his land, situated on the south side of the Norman's kil, as this would accommodate the village of Boswyck to bring there their canoes and schuyts." The request was granted.[1]

On the 28th of December, following (1662) "the magistrates of the village of Boswyck, appeared before the council, representing that they in their village, were in great need of a person who would act as *clerk* and *schoolmaster* to instruct the youth; and, that, as one had been proposed to them, viz: *Boudewyn Manout*, from Crimpen op de Lecq',[2] they had agreed with him, that he should officiate as *voorleser* or clerk, and keep school for the instruction of the youth. For his [services] as clerk he was to receive 400 guilders in [wampum] annually; and, as schoolmaster, free house rent and firewood. They therefore solicited, that their action in the matter, might meet the approval of the director general and council in Nieuw Netherland, and that the council would also contribute something annually to facilitate the payment of the said salary."

The council assented, and promised, that, after he had been duly examined and approved by the reverend ministers of the city, they would lighten the annual burden of the village by contributing annually *f* 25, heavy money.[3]

Manout was afterwards appointed court clerk, upon which office he entered January 5, 1663. We present here a fac simile,


B Manout Secrts
12
3
1 6 6 3

taken from the old Bushwick records, of Manout's signature, curious for its combination of the date with the name.

May 30th, 1661, to allow Peter Terragon, Jacob Begyn, and others to reside at New Arnheim.—*Dutch Manuscripts*, IX, 637.

[1] *Ibid.*, X, 136, May 25, 1662.

[2] A village in Holland, situated on the river Lock. Another of the same name is located on the Meuse.

[3] *Dutch Manuscripts*, X, 297.

In December of this year, the director and council, hearing that Hendrick Barent Smith, "in contempt of the published and recently renewed orders," continued to reside "on his separated plantation in the neighborhood of Boswyck, to the detriment and injury of said village," ordered him to break up his building within twenty-four hours; and in case of his default, the magistrates were empowered to demolish it.[1]

Amid the numerous evidences of increasing prosperity among the settlers of Boswyck, during this third year of its existence, we must chronicle the gratifying and creditable fact that they voluntarily subscribed the sum of forty-seven guilders, "to ransom Tunis Craeyen's son Jacob, then a prisoner among the Turks." The list of subscribers,[2] as given in the old Bushwick record, under date of March 30th, 1662 is as follows:

Peter Jan de Wit,	*fl.* 10	Francois de	*fl.* 3
Jan Tiljou,	3	Barent Joosten's ——,	2
Jan Corn. Zieuw,	4	Ryck Lydecker,	3
Pieter Lamotze,	1	Dirck Volkertse,	3
Barent Joosten,	4	Jan Hendricks,	2
Jan Catjouw,	2	Koert Mauritz,	2
—— ——,	2	Jan Maljaert,	1
Barent Gerritse,	2	Gysbert Teunise,	4
Peter Jan Wit's ——,	1		—
William Traphagen,	3	Total	47

On the 8th of February, 1663, the magistrates of Boswyck stated to the council that, whereas;

> "Several persons are soliciting permission to settle with their families within the aforesaid village, and whereas, there are at present no lots, except those which are already occupied, and no others can be found east of the village, except on the land of one Jean Mailjaert, a Frenchman, and inasmuch as they had conversed with the said Mailjaert, relative to his parting with a few lots of his land, for the accommodation of these new comers, to which he would not consent; which, indeed, is a great detriment to the village [the more so], as with this design, a new lot was granted to him, which he again abandoned, therefore they request an extension of the village to the limits first contemplated."

---

[1] *Dutch Manuscripts*, x, 298.

[2] *Dutch Manuscripts*, x, part II, 24. Signed Peter Jan De Wit, Jan Corn Zieuw Ryck Leydeeker, Le Selier.

After a full hearing of the case, Jan Mailjaert, "as the welfare of the village of Boswyck requires it," was ordered to give up sufficient land for six lots, each lot being six rods broad, and five and a half rods long, on payment by the new comers of 25 guilders in seawant, for each lot.[1]

April 5, 1663, Dirck Volkerts, Gysbert Theunis, Hendrick Willems, Barent Joosten, Peter Jansen Wit, David Jochemsen, Jean Mailjaert, Barent Gerrits, and Mr. Jacob Stryker, acting as attorney for Jacob Steendam[2] in view of the great expense of individually fencing their land, said expense being greatly increased by the scarcity of wood in their neighborhood, petitioned the director and council, for leave to enclose their land near Boswyck, within a *common fence*, viz: "from Norman's kil, to the south of the village, and so extending to Mispat kill;" each person paying in proportion to the quantity of his land, so enclosed. They estimated the land at about 450 morgen, and the expense of fencing the same at nearly 400 guilders, whereas the cost of fencing it privately, would be nearly 4,000 guilders. They further proposed to erect a town gate in this fence, about at Peter Jan de Witt's lot.[3]

This was met, on the 7th of the same month, by a counter petition from Evert Hedeman, Jan Yselstein, Jan Hendricks, Willem Janevier, Charles Fontein, Hendrick Barent Smith, Alexander Conquerare,[4] Jan Cornelissen and Joost Caspersen, inhabitants of Boswyck, who, having been informed that their fellow citizens had solicited permission.

"To place a fence from Norman's to Mispat kil, and to place therein, on the village road, a gate, which must cause great injury to your Honor's supplicants, inasmuch as three roads are included within that [proposed] road fence, viz: one to the Woodpoint, the other towards Mispat kil, and another from the west end of the village of Boswyck towards Norman's kil. While, furthermore, there yet remains a small tract of the [West India] company's land which would be included within that fence, to [the use of] which we are equally entitled with those who proposed to erect the contemplated fence. Moreover we shall be compelled, whenever we convey our goods with our oxen to the strand, to take a servant with us, to drive our oxen again from the strand through that gate, which, by going and returning, amounts to nearly three miles; otherwise, if we perform it ourselves [i. e., without the aid of a servant] we must run the risk of having our goods stolen, [while driving the oxen back from the strand], inasmuch as we will not be permitted to unyoke our oxen in the public road. Besides, our hogs are, [owing to this fence] prevented from approaching the kil, where they obtain the greatest part of their food. Your Honor's petitioners, therefore, desire to enjoy the same privileges as those who are endeavoring to rob us of them, for the road from the village of Boswyck to the Wood point is partly laid on land belonging to the company, which he [Dirck Volkertsen the] Norman presented to the village, and the road was partly on Norman's land, and was at that time woodland, etc."

---

[1] April 5, 1663. *Dutch Manuscripts,* x, part II, 57, 61, 63.

[2] *Jacob Steendam,* "the first poet of New York" has had his biography written, and his poems felicitously translated by the Hon. Henry C. Murphy, of Brooklyn, in the *Anthology of the New Netherland,* published by the Bradford Club, in 1865.

[3] *Ibid.*, 65.

[4] Alexander Cochiveer became an inhabitant of Bushwick in February, 1663, *Dutch Manuscripts,* x, part II, 26.

This petition is concluded with an expression of their desire to maintain "peace harmony and love with all," and a hint that the new comers "are aiming" to aggrandize themselves at the expense of others.[1]

The director general, having visited the place in dispute, on the 19th of April, decreed that each person ought to be allowed to fence his own land in such manner as he deems best and least expensive. As, however, good roads are essential to the public welfare, it was the opinion of the council that the first petitioners should be allowed "to enclose their united lands in one common fence;" and, whereas, the community need a public wagon road through the said lands, to the strand, such road should be secured by a fence, and constantly kept in good repair. But, if the people of Boswick, or a majority of them, declined to incur this labor and expense, then the first petitioners should be permitted to fence in their land with a common fence, leaving only a lane, or wagon road towards the strand, which road they might secure with a gate at the end of the village, "provided they erect, on the strand, an enclosure, and keep it in repair, in which the passenger shall be obliged to secure his oxen or horses, during the time that he remains at the strand, in order that the owners of the lands may receive no injury [from said cattle], in their crops."[1]

---

[1] *Dutch Manuscripts*, x, part II, 65.

On page 28 of the old Bushwick record, is the following muster roll of officers and soldiers of the town in 1663; *Captain*, Ryck Lydecker (Schout); *Ensign*, Jan Tilje Casperse; *Secretary*, Boudwyn Manout; *Sergeant*, Evert Hedeman; *Corporals*, Pieter Jans Wit, Jan Hendricks, Alexander Conquerare; *Privates*, Gysbert Tunissen (Schepen), Barent Joost (Schepen), David Jochemsen, Hendrick Grever, Jan Malljaert, Andries Barentse, Jan Parys, Evert Mauritz, Charles Fontain, Jan Cornel Zeieuw, Corn^s^. Janse Zeieuw, Joost Caspersen, Johannes Caspersen, Melle Caspersen, Francois de Puj, Jan Williams Essellstein, William Traphagen, Barent Gerretse; (*Drummer*), Dirck Volkertse, Volkert Dirckse, Jan Botzer, Wessel Gerrits, Nicolaes Jones, Tunis Martin, Carel Carelsen, Claes Wolf, Wouter Gysbertsen, Jacob Gysbertsen, Cæsar Barentse, Carel Reyckwyl, Francois d'Meyer, Antoin d'Meyer.

Thus quietly engaged in agricultural pursuits, the little community of Boswyck maintained the even tenor of its way, until disturbed, in 1663 and 1664, by the political excitements which preceded the conquest of New Netherland, by the English. It is unnecessary to repeat, in this place, the detailed account of public events, which has been given in a previous chapter,[2] suffice it to say, that throughout those times, Boswyck remained loyal to the states-general.

On the 8th of July, 1663, the inhabitants of Boswyck complained of having money extorted by the company, for the rights of citizenship.

At a meeting of the magistrates of most of the Dutch towns in the province, convened on the 1st of November, 1663, to discuss the condition and affairs of the country, Boswyck was represented by *Ryck Lydecker*, and *Gysbert Teunissen*, to whom was granted the following power of attorney:

---

[1] *Dutch Manuscripts.* [2] Chap. III, vol. I.

"Whereas a letter has been sent by the lords general and supreme councillors of New Netherland to the magistrates of Boswyck, whereby they are enjoined to send two delegates from their town to the Manhatts furnished and provided with the proper authority; Therefore, the aforesaid magistrates have chosen and named two persons from the same, with the knowledge and consent of the majority of the inhabitants, viz: Ryckus Leydecker and Gysbert Teunissen, to whom they give full power, authority and special command to protect, defend, uphold and vindicate and determine in their name and on behalf of their constituents, the matters affecting the aforesaid town of Boswyck which shall be laid before them, as needs may require, and to do in every respect therein as their constituents might and could do, if they were all there before their eyes, holding the same to be affirmed, good, fast and true, the aforesaid constituency promising the deputed to aid, uphold, and bear all costs, losses, charges, etc., herein, they the constituents hereunto pledging their persons and goods, and submitting the same to the constraint of all courts and judges. In witness whereof this is subscribed this last of October, 1663, in presence of me B. Manout, secretary." [1]

January 1664. The council received a petition from Abraham Jansen, carpenter, requesting permission to erect a mill near the village of Boswyck. He was required to appear, together with the magistrates of that village, before the council, and explain as to the proposed location. They did so, on 1st of February, and the magistrates of the town, on being interrogated, expressed a cordial wish to have the water mill erected on Mispatt kils, which was accordingly granted.[2]

In February, 1664, William Traphagen, for insulting one of the magistrates of Bushwyck by calling him a false judge, was sentenced by the governor and council, to appear with uncovered head before the court of Bushwick, and, in the presence of the fiscal, to beg pardon of God, justice and the insulted magistrate; and to pay, in addition, thirteen guilders to the overseers of the poor of the town, with costs.[3]

In May, of the same year, Jan Willemsen Van Iselsteyn, commonly called Jan of Leyden, for using abusive language and writing an insolent letter to the magistrates of Bushwick, was sentenced to be fastened to a stake at the place of public execution, with a bridle in his mouth, a bundle of rods under his arm, and a paper on his breast bearing the inscription: "Lampoon writer, false accuser and defamer of its magistrates." After this ignominy he was to be banished, with costs.[1]

---

[1] *Bush. Records,* 30.

[2] *Dutch Manuscripts,* x, part III, 27, 41, 42, date January 28, and February 1, 7.

[3] *Dutch Manuscripts,* x, part III, 16 and 80.

On the same day, William Jansen Traphagen, of Lemgo, for being the bearer of the above insolent letter to the magistrates of Bushwick, as well as for using very indecent language towards them, was also sentenced to be tied to the stake, in the place of public execution, with a paper on his breast, inscribed "Lampoon carrier." His punishment, also, was completed with banishment and costs.

In the general assembly which convened in April, 1664, to consider the state of the country, the town was represented by Messrs. *Jan Van Cleef* and *Gysbert Teunissen.* And although in common with the neighboring towns on Long Island, the citizens of Boswyck yielded a docile submission to English authority, it is probable that their supineness was due to the natural apathy of their race, rather than to any particular satisfaction with their new masters. If, indeed, they had imagined that any benefit was to accrue to them from the change, they were soon undeceived, for they found that the rule of British governors was, to that of their petulant and arbitary director, Stuyvesant, as the little finger of Rehoboam was to the loins of his father; and that they had gained but little, either in regard to civil or religious matters. The records of Boswyck, from this time forward, present little of interest to the general reader, being mostly occupied with council orders, etc., whose chief value is to show the *more than paternal* care with which the English colonial authorities regulated the affairs of their provincial subjects.

In the Hempstead convention which framed the Duke's laws, this town was represented by Messrs. Jan Stryker and Gysbert Tunissen.

By these presents, beloved friends, you are authorized and required, by plurality of votes, to cause to be chosen by the freeholders of your town, eight men of good name and fame, for the purpose of administering justice for the ensuing year, for which they will be held answerable in their individual capacities, together with the constable which is elected, until the first day of April next (O. S.). You will forward the names of the persons chosen, as is usual, to his Excellency Governor Nicolls, who sends these presents greeting, in the name of God.

---

[1] *Dutch Manuscripts,* x, part II, 215.

Dated in Fort James, March 23, 1665, O. S.

By order of the Governor
C. V. Ruyven.

It is ordered by the constable and magistrate that the old fences be replaced with new material, and we appoint Gysbert Tunissen and Dirck Volckertsen, *fence viewers:* Given under our hands, at Boswyck, May 4, 1665.

Everhardt Hedeman, Constable.
Barent Garretse Letelier,
Pieter Jansen Witt,
Ryck Lydecker,
Jan Cornelisse Zeeuw. } Magistrates.

Very good friends,

This will serve to make known to you, that I have translated the enclosed precept (in the Dutch language), that you may know, that on the next Tuesday, the constable will summon the officers and all the citizens of your town, who understand the English language, to attend the court at Gravesend, on the 20th of July, next.

Your friend,
Cornelis Van Ruyven.
Sworn Translator.

New York, 17th of June, 1665, O. S.

Precept.

To the constable of the town of Boswyck:

You are hereby required, personally, to appear before His Majesty's Court, at Gravesend, on the 20th of July next, and you are required, also, to summon the officers of your town, to appear at said Court of Sessions, and not to leave the same during the term. And you are also required to summon as many of your inhabitants as understand the English language to attend the aforesaid Court, and not to leave the same during the term, on pain of fine.

Dated the 16th of June, 1665, in the 18th year of His Majesty's reign.

Jo: Rieder,
Clerk of Sessions.

York Hill, on Long Island.

A few days later, Secretary Van Ruyven informs the citizens of Boswÿck, of his appointment as clerk of records, etc. His letter, and the formal notification accompanying it, are as follows:

Honored and very good friends,

It has pleased the Honorable Governor Richard Nicolls, to order, that all transports, or conveyances, or obligations for real estate, shall be written and sealed by me, upon pain of being held null and void. Therefore, you are requested to publish this notice to the inhabitants of your town, to the end that they may sustain no damage in relation to the subject.

Your friend,
CORNELIS VAN RUYVEN.

New York, June 19, 1665.

Notification.

To forestall, and prevent all misunderstanding, and to have our records kept in a proper manner, all our inhabitants of the Dutch towns of Long Island, are notified and informed, that no transport, deed, or hypothecation of lands, houses or lot, will be held valid, unless they are passed, registered, signed and sealed by Mr. Cornelis Van Ruyven.

Done at Fort James, in New York, June 16, 1665.

This order was followed by another, viz:

To the constable of the town of Bushwick:

By these presents you are, in his Majesty's name, commanded and ordered, to call a meeting of the officers of your town, who shall within four months after the first day of June, make out a correct list of all male persons, of the age of 16 years and upwards; and also, a correct list or estimation of the estate of every inhabitant of the town, that he holds in his own right, or for others, according to its true value, designating the same particularly, and to whom it belongs in the town, or elsewhere, as the same can be discovered, and the tenure under which the property is held. And also, an account, or list, of every acre of land in the town, and the true value of the same, and by whom owned, and further the tax each person has to pay, from a pound to a penny, for his land and personal property, and also, a report of the situation of the inhabitants of the town; neatly written in the English language.

Hereof fail not, as you will answer for the same,

By me,
WILHELM WELSH,
Chief Clerk.

June 20, 1665.

Having assumed the complete control of civil affairs, the governor next proceeded to interfere with the ecclesiastical concerns of the village, and promulgated the following order:

Beloved friends:

As you have no minister to preach the gospel to the congregation of your town, nor are you able wholly to maintain a minister, therefore, it seems proper to us, that the neighboring towns, which have no settled minister, should combine with you to maintain the gospel ministry, and that you should jointly contribute for that purpose; therefore, we deem it proper to order, and firmly and orderly to establish, according to the desire of many of your people, who have conferred with me, therefore, we have ordered that three or four persons, duly authorized, appear, on Thursday or Friday next, further to confer on that matter, for themselves and the timid, and the other inhabitants.

Whereupon, we greet you cordially, as honored and respected friends, and as your friend,

RICHARD NICOLL.

Fort James, Oct., 17th, 1665.

This specious and courteously worded letter was based upon the gratuitous assumption that Boswyck enjoyed no religious advantages whatever, an assumption which was as unfounded in fact, as it was unjust to the character of the settlers themselves. For Governor Nicolls well knew that the people of Boswyck then were and had been since the first establishment of the town, in 1660, in connection with the church at Breuckelen, and participants in all its privileges. Under the circumstances, we can only believe that the extreme interest manifested by the governor in the religious welfare of Boswyck, was prompted mainly by his desire to benefit himself, or some favored clergyman of his acquaintance.

Two months later, the community of Boswyck received another letter from his Excellency, on this subject:

"Beloved and Honorable Good Friends:

Before this time our order has been made known to you, that the honorable ministers of this place, in turn, will preach to your people until you are able to maintain a minister yourselves. By our order presented to you, you were required to raise the sum of 175 guilders, as your proportion of the salary; but, in consideration of the trouble, in your town, we have deemed it proper, under present circumstances, to reduce the sum of 175 guilders to the sum of 100 guilders, which we deem reasonable, and against which no reasonable complaint can exist, and ought to be satisfactory; which last sum we demand for the minister's salary; therefore, we expect that measures will be adopted, to collect the same promptly, pursuant to this order; and to ensure the same, we have deemed it proper to appoint Evert Hedeman and Peter Jansen Dewit, giving them power and authority to assess and collect that sum, having regard to the condition and circumstances of the people, and to decide what each of them shall pay, which the said persons shall collect, or cause to be collected, that is one hundred guilders in three installments, and pay the same over to us; the first, on the last day of December next; the second, on the last day of April next, and the third, on the last day of August next ensuing.

Whereupon, we remain your friend, greeting,

Richard Nicoll.

This will be delivered to Evert Hedeman and Peter Jansen Dewit, and read to the congregation:

Fort James, December 26, 1665:

R. N."

"Anno 1665, the 27th of December, the minister, who was sent to preach by the Hon. Gov. Richard Nicolls, preached his first sermon at the house of Gysbert Tonissen."

The name of the minister who preached the above mentioned "first sermon" is not given in the record; neither does it anywhere appear, who his successors were, or whether they were Dutch, English or French. It probably is sufficient for us now, as it was for the good people of Boswyck in their day, to know that they were the governor's favored gentry, and probably in his interest.

The records continue:

"To the inhabitants of Boswyck:

Beloved Friends—I am authorized by the governor, to receive the salary of the ministers, being one hundred guilders, which is due and now collecting in your town, pursuant to order, which I am to pay (over to the requiring ministers).

Your friend, greeting,

Cornelius V. Ruyven.

New York, January 5, 1666:

Anno 1666, January 13. The persons named below have been obliged to pay to Evert Hedeman and Peter Jansen Dewit (compelled collectors), for the ministers salary, the sums set opposite to their respective names, which was assessed upon their sowed lands."

Here follow the names of twenty-six persons, who paid the sum of one hundred guilders for the minister's salary. This odious tax, for such it would seem from the wording of the above record, continued to be levied and collected until the colony was retaken by the Dutch, in 1673. And all this, be it remembered, was in flagrant violation of the 8th article of the Capitulation of 1664, which provided that "the Dutch here shall enjoy the liberty of their consciences, in divine worship and church discipline." In short, after the British conquest of 1664, the Dutch were most rigorously treated by the English. The teachers in those days were the clerks, sextons and choristers of the towns, and were obliged to instruct the children, in the catechism of the Reformed church, and in the scriptures, and also to open the schools with prayer. But after the colony came under English rule, the teachers received no salary from government, no English schools were established, and there was no encouragement given to education. All law proceedings were ordered to be conducted entirely in the English language,[1] and strong and arbitrary measures were taken, as we have seen, to establish an Episcopal church in Bushwick, for the support of which the people were grievously taxed. But, though obliged to pay the taxes, they would not attend the preaching of the parson so officiously thrust upon them, and finally he and his "Beloved Roger" were withdrawn. This attempt to force an established church upon the town of Bushwick, was felt to be a galling injustice, and finally, with other infractions, led to a public meeting of the people of the county, held at Flatbush, in 1684, whereat were passed several strongly worded resolutions, condemnatory of the English, for their faithlessness in violating the conditions of the treaty, and in compelling them to litigate in a language which they did not understand. A significant expression of the feeling of the people on this point, is found in the fact that two cases then pending before the court of sessions, were withdrawn, and referred to arbitrators appointed by the meeting, the parties alleging that they were Dutchmen, "and did not wish to have their rights adjudicated by an English court." It was, also, agreed by the meeting, that they would have nothing to do with the courts, and that they would settle all their differences in future by arbitration. The inhabitants thereafter adhered so strictly to these resolutions, that the courts were seldom occupied by civil causes, and usually adjourned on the first day. No lawyer resided in the county before 1783; and the Episcopal church was not established here until 1776, during the occupation of the town by the British, during the Revolutionary war. The Dutch churches supported all the poor of the county, all who could labor being employed, and no poor tax was raised in the county until the year 1785.

---

[1] Court of Sessions, June 18, 1679, at Gravesend, in a question about a highway in Bushwick, Hendrick Barent Smith, "brought several papers in Dutch, into the court, which not being translated into English, were rejected."—*Furman's Manuscripts*, VIII, 416.

1687. *Patent of the Town of Boswick.*

Recorded for the inhabitants of the town of Boswick.—Lib. *Pat.*, No. 6, page 142.

Thomas Dongan, Capt. Generall, Governour in Chiefe & Vice Admiral in and over the province of New York and Terrytoryes depending thereon, in America, under his Ma^{tie} James the Second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c. To all whome these presents shall come, Sendeth greeting: Whereas, Richard Nicolls, Esq., Governeur Gen^{ll} under his Royal High^{ss} James, Duke of Yorke and Albany, now his present Majesty of all his Territoryes in America, hath, by patent under his hand and seale, bearing date the twenty-fifth day of October, 1667, Given, Granted, Ratified and confirmed unto Peter Johnson, Dirck Norman, Paulus Richards, David Jochem and Long Guisbert, as Patentees for and on behalf of themselves, and their associates, the ffreeholders and inhabitants of a certain town, scituate, lyeing, and being in the West Riding of Yorkshire, now King's County, upon Long island, commonly called and knowne by the name of Boswick, which said Towne was, and now is, in the Tenure and occupaceon of several ffreeholders and Inhabitants, who were seated by authority, and have been att considerable charge in manureing and planting a considerable part of the Lands belonging thereunto, and settled a competent number of Familyes thereupon, which said Towne contains that Tract, together with the several parcels of Land, which already have, or hereafter shall bee Purchased or procured for, and on the behalf of the said Towne, whether from the native Indian Proprietors, or others, within the limitts & bounds hereafter set forth and exprest, viz. that is to say, the said Towne is bounded with the mouth of certain Creek or Kill, commonly called Maspeth Kills, right over against the Dominie's Hook, so y^{r} Bounds go to David Jochem's Hook, then Stretching upon a South-East line alongst the said Kill they come to Smith's Island, including the same, together with all the Meadow Ground or Valley thereunto belonging, and continuing the same course, they Pass along by the fence at the Wood side, so to Thomas Wondall's meadows, from whence, stretching upon a South East and by South line alongst the wood and to the Kill, takeing in the Meadow or Valley lyeing there, they pass unto the land heretofore belonging to Ryck Loedecker, Deceased, & soe stretche againe neare upon a South East and by South line, Six hundred Rodd into the woods, then running behind the Lotts as the Woodland lies, South West and by South, and out of the said Woods; they goe again North West to a certain small swamp, from thence they run behind the new Lotts to Jan the Swede's meadow, so along by a small kil or creek to a corner or hook of Jan Cornelissen's meadow,[1] then over the Norman's Kill to the west end of his old house, from whence they go alongst the river till you come to the mouth of Maspeth Kills, and David Jochem's Hook afore mencioned, where they first begun.[2] All which said Tract and Parcels of Land

---

[1] This sentence omitted by Thompson. *Cornelissen's meadow* is identical with the meadow late one of Francis Titus's near the northerly termination of the present Fifth street of Williamsburgh, and at the junction of the branch of Bushwick creek, which now rises near Ninth street and Grand, and was the former north-easterly boundary of the old village of Williamsburgh.

[2] The boundary, by this patent described, between Bushwick and Brooklyn was about 150 feet east of the present Division avenue. In 1703 this line was corrected, and the commissioners released private title of 150 feet to the former owners, and gave it to Brooklyn. See deed of John V. Duryea to Austin D. Moore, to Lefferts, Meserole, Bobins, etc., (Liber *Conveyances*, VI; letter T or grantors, M).

The *Sweede's Fly Road* is still known, and the lands between Seventh and Tenth streets, and South Third street and a line about equidistant between South Fifth and South Sixth streets, were devised in 1779, by David Miller to his son Peter, as the land he bought of Jacob Roosevelt, at the Sweede's Fly. Hence, we locate the meadow of John the Sweede in the neighborhood of Grand, Ninth and North Second streets; and the westerly line of Bushwick in this patent ran nearly in the same

Meadow Ground and premisses, within the bounds and limitts before menceoned, Described, and all or any plantaceon or plantaceons thereupon, from henceforth to be, appurtaine and belong to the said Towne of Boswick, together with all Havens, Harbors, Creeks, Quarries, Woodland, MeadowGround, Reed land or valley, of all sorts, Pastures, Marshes, Waters, Rivers, Lakes, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, and all other Proffitts, Commodityes, Emoluments & hereditam^ts^ to the said Lands and premissess, within the bounds and Limitts set forth, belonging, or in any way appurtaineing & also freedom Comonage for range and feed of cattle and Horses into the Woods, as well without as within their bounds and Limitts, with the rest of their neighbours, to have and to hold all and singular the said Tract, Parcells of land, Comonage, Hereditaments and premises, with their, and every of their appurtenances, & of every parte and Parcell thereof, to the said Patentees and their Associates, their Heires, Successors and Assigns forever. And, moreover, the said Richard Nicolls, Governor Generall, as aforesaid, did further give, Grant, ratifie and confirm unto the said Patentees and their associates, their heires, Successors and Assigns, all the Rights and Priviledges belonging to a Towne within this Governm^t^, & that the place of their present Habitaceon shall continue & retaine the name of Boswick, by which name or title it shall be distinguished and knowne in all bargaines & sailes, Deeds, Writeings and Records, they, the said Patentees & Associates, their heires, successors and Assigns, Rendring & paying such duties and acknowledgm^ts^ as now are or hereafter shall bee constituted & established by the Laws of

---

general direction from the small swamp mentioned over against the present East New York, west of and parallel to the present Division avenue, to the junction of the two creeks as mentioned, and left out the entire old village of Williamsburgh, from the limits and bounds of Bushwick.

The line mentioned as parallel with the present Division avenue, until run out and settled by the commissioners, in 1703, was within the present limits of Brooklyn, from " the small swamp " mentioned, to the present north-westerly boundary of lands bought by Austin D. Moore, Esq., of the estate of John V. D. Duryea; the westerly boundary of this land of Mr. Moore's being, as is supposed, identical with the town line as located under this first patent. The trustees of Brooklyn released to those who had in possession the strip of land cut off by the new location of the town line; and, among others, Joost Duryea (ancestor of J. V. D. Duryea) was made a grantee by the commissioners (Lib. IV, *Convey.*, p. 90, Kings Co. clerk's office).

The above notes afford an interesting topic for consideration. The purposes of the early charters respected the municipal necessities and protection of the people, rather than to become the basis of any legal estate in lands. Indeed, the lands were nearly all vested by private charters granted to individuals. *And that portion of Bushwick, so counted unworthy of notice in the original charter of the town, subsequently became the centre of a flourishing city.*

this Governm^{t} under the obedience of his Roy^{ll} High^{ss}, now his present Majesty, his heirs and successors, as doth more particularly appeare by said Pattent, Recorded in the Secretaryes Office, Relacon being thereunto had. And whereas, upon a difference ariseing between the Inhabitants of Newtowne & the Inhabitants of the said Towne of Boswick aforesaid, concerning the Limitts & Bounds of their respective Townes, upon applycacon made to Francis Lovelace, late Governour of this Province, under his Roy^{ll} High^{ss}, now his present Majesty. Did order, appoint and Commissionate Thomas Delavall, Matthias Nichols, James Hubbard, Jacques Cortelyou, Elbert Elbertsen, Elias Doughty, to view & inspect the Limitts of their Respective Townes, and to endeavor a composure, and put a period to their controversy, which said Commissioners haveing been upon the place & heard & examined the matter on each side, did further request and desire & consent of persons deputed by the Inhabitants of each Towne, did, upon due consideration of the premissess, & to the end no further dispute or difference may be between the two townes, and for the future that they may live in neighborly friendship, did conclude and determine that there should be a final end of said difference, and adjudge that all the Valley or meadow ground on the Westernmost side of the Creek of Maspeth Kills, shall be and belong to the inhabitants of Boswyck, that is to say, from the mouth of the said Creek, to run through and parte the Meadow ground or valley about the middle, so to go in the Western branch of the said Creek, to a certaine Pond into which the Creek runs, called Scudder's Pond, neare whereunto the fence of Hendrick Barent Smith now stands, and that Smith's Island, comonly so called, and all the valley or Meadow ground on the East side of the Creek adjoining, or contiguous to the said Island, shall be and remain to the Inhabitants of Mespath Kills, or New Towne. Although expressly menconed in the Pattent of Boswick, for that it seems more properly to be writtin the Limitts of New Towne, in considercon whereof, and in Liew of Six hundred Rodd menconed in their Pattent, to run into the woods upon a South East and by South line, as also for an enlargement of their Bounds; as to the upland of which they have occasion; the Inhabitants of Boswick shall have and enjoye all the land, whether upland or other, beginning from the ffence aforemenconed neare Scudder's Pond, to run upon a South South East line till it comes to the Kills, that is to say, all the Land in the Westerne side thereof, including the Plantaceons, both upland and meadow Ground, belonging to the said Hendrick Barent Smith, within the Limitts of their said Towne, or soe much thereof as shall be within the line afores^{d}; and that the said Hendrick be a member of said Towne as by return of said Commissioners, under their hands, bearing date the twenty-eight day of June, 1672, & the confirmacon of the same under the hand of the then Governo^r, Francis Lovelace, Recorded in the Secretaryes Office, relaccon being thereto had, may more fully and at large appear. And whereas, att a councill held att New Yorke before me, upon the twenty-eight Aprill, 1684, severalls Deputed from the Townes of Boswick & New Towne, Produced their Pattents and papers relating to what was done by Governour Lovelace & Governour Nicolls, and likewise the arbitracon made by the Commissioners aforesaid, which, with the advice of my Councill, I thought fitt to approve as by order of Councill. Recorded in the Secretaryes Office, Relacon thereunto being had may more fully and at large appear; the whole as now possessed, beginning from Scudder's Pond, next to the fence of Hendrick Barent Smith, and stretching with a South South East line to the mountaine or hills, and so along the said Hills about three hundred Rodd aboutting to the Limitts of Brookland, beginning againe from the Hills with a North West Line to a Nutt Tree Markt, and standing in the small bushes, and from said tree with a right line between Teunis Guisberts [Bogaert] & Jacob Kipp, to the East River, and along the said river to the Norman's Creek, and further the Norman's Corner and David Jochem's Corner, stretching by the East river, along to the corner of Marspeth Kills, and so along to the depth of s^d Kill at Humphrey Clay's; and from thence to the depth of said Kill to Scudder's Pond, over the Creek to Hendrick Barent Smith aforesaid. And whereas Peter Janselert, Charles Fountaine, Volkert Dircksen, Peter Praa, Jacob Dircksen, Joost Cockuyt, Jacob Jansen, John Meserole, John Meserole, Junior, Jacob Kipp, Senior, Veuter Verscurson, John Luquir, Cornelis Johnson, Peter Johnson, Loy Charles Deniso Claes, Cornelis Catts, Jurian Nagel, Albert Hendricks, Michael Parmenter, Joost David, Lawrence Cooke, Henry Barent Smith, Humphrey Clay, Peter Scamp, Simon Hakes, Adrian Layforce, Alex Cockever, Jan Conselyea, Volkert De Witt, the present ffreeholders and Inhabitants of the said Towne of Boswyck, hath made application to me for a confirmacon of the Premissess by Pattent, under the Seale of the Province. Now, Know Yee, that for divers good consideracons me thereunto moving, and more especially for the Greater Improvem^t the said respective Inhabitants have made of the Land within the Limitts of the said Towne of Boswyck, aforesaid, and also for the Quitt Rent hereafter reserved; I, the said Thomas Dongan, by virtue of the power and authority to me derived from his most Sacred Majesty aforesaid, and in the pursuance of the same, I have given, Granted, Rattified, released and confirmed, and by these presents doe Give, Grant, rattifie, Release and confirme unto,

[The names of the freeholders and inhabitants, as before recited]. the present ffreeholders and Inhabitants of the said Towne of Boswick, and their heirs, successors and assigns. All these before recited Tracts and parcells of Land within the Limitts and bounds aforesaid, butt more particularly within the Limitts and bounds that was adjudged and determined by the Commissioners appointed by Governo^r^ Lovelace, which hereafter shall, forever, bee deemed and esteemed the bounds and Limitts between the Towne of New Towne and Boswick, any Pattent, grant or conveyance to the contrary hereof, in any wise, notwithstanding; and also, all and singular the houses, messuages, Tenements, fencings, Buildings, Gardens, Orchards, Trees, Woods, Underwoods, Pastures, feedings, Comonage of Pastures, meadows, Marshes, Lakes, Ponds, Creeks, harbours, Rivers, Rivolletts, Runns, Brooks, Streams, Highwayes, Easements, mines, mineralls, Quarryes, ffishing, hunting, hawking and fowling (Royal mines only excepted), and likewise, all and singular the allotments, Divissions and Settlements, Land and Plantacons that have been settled and improved by the respective inhabitants of the said Towne, within the Limitts aforesaid, together with all and singular the Rights, Libertyes, Priviledges, Hereditam^ts^, Profitts, advantages and appurtenances whatsoever, to the said Tract of Land, and Respective Settlements, Allotments and Divisions, belonging, or in any wise, appurtaining, or accepted, Reputed, taken, knowne or occupied as Parte, Parcell, or member thereof, to have and to hold all and singular the aforecited tract and parcell of Land & premissess, with y^r^ and every of their appurtenances, unto the said

[The ffreeholders and inhabitants, as before recited].

ffreeholders and inhabitants of the said Towne of Boswick, their, and their respective Heirs and Assignes to the only use, benefitt and behooffe of them, the said

[The ffreeholders and inhabitants, as before recited]

ffreeholders and Inhabitants of the said Towne of Boswick, their, and their respective heirs and assignes forever, to bee holden of his said Majes^ty^, his heires & Successors in free & comon Soccage, according to the tenure of East Greenwich in the County of Kent, in his M'ti's Realme of England; Yielding, Rendring & Paying there yearly and every year forever, on the five and twentyth day of March, at New Yorke * * * * * of Good Marchantable Winter Wheate, in Lieu and in Stead of all Services and Demands whatsoever, unto such officer or officers as shall be appointed to receive the same. In Testimony whereof, I have caused these presents to be Entred upon Record in the Secretaryes Office, and the seale of the Province to be hereunto affixed this Day of February, 1687, & in the second Yeare of his Mat^is^ Reigne.

THO. DONGAN.

It will probably be noticed that the bounds of this ancient patent *do not include* the site of the subsequent village of Williamsburgh, as defined in the charter of 1827. This probably arose, not from any oversight, but from the fact that the site of Williamsburgh was originally surveyed and owned by the Dutch West India Company.

The good people of Bushwick, in common with other towns, had suffered so long from the misrule of the bigoted Duke of York, James the II, that the news of his abdication, in 1688, and the succession to the English throne of his daughter Mary, and her husband William, Prince of Orange, was received with a general outburst of heartfelt joy. The auspicious event was celebrated by a convivial entertainment given at the house of Gabriel Sprong, to which most of the residents of Bushwick were invited. Isaac Remsen delivered a short, but eloquent address, reviewing the griefs to which the town had been subjected by the English, since their conquest of New Netherland, in 1664; and expressing an earnest hope that the Prince of Orange would soon restore to the province a separate government, and that the good old language of the fatherland would again be generally adopted. He reminded them how little they and their fathers before them, had valued the privileges and blessings enjoyed by them before that memorable day, when the brave Stuyvesant had unwillingly surrendered the colony, and the trust which he had so long and so ably defended. Then there were no quarrels, no differences among them; like one great family they had lived together, using individually every effort for the good of the commonwealth. The English came, and with heavy taxes, loss of privileges, etc. But the Prince of Orange, surely, would not neglect the interests of a colony, which was mostly settled by the descendants of his own countrymen; and it was his interest not to forget this, for on them he could most rely in case of war and invasion. Jacob Ryerse, then proposed the health and long reign of William and Mary, which was honored by the company in a full bumper of good cider, and the company separated in high spirits.

The misguided zeal or ambition, however, of certain persons who were impatient of delay, defeated the designs of the new government, and involved the province in scenes of turmoil and strife. Leisler's well meant, but rash assumption of government, the consequent opposition of a great part of the community, who considered his conduct as disloyal, his subsequent deposition, by the arrival of Gov. Slaughter, in 1691, his trial, and execution, forming in the whole a tragedy of rapid and startling interest, afforded little opportunity for quiet.

Added to these things, the people of Long Island were much aggravated by the imperious and severe course adopted by the civil officers, magistrates, etc., appointed over them, and their republican blood boiled over at the insults and exactions too frequently heaped upon them. Owing to these reasons, and probably to some others not now so well understood, the Dutch towns, of Kings county especially, from the year 1691 to 1698, or thereabout, were in a constant ferment of dissatisfaction. Bushwick, especially, seems to have abounded with these restless spirits. On the 20th of August, 1693, Urian Hagell of that town, together with two others of Brooklyn, endeavored to stir up sedition among the crowd, who had assembled at a general training of the Kings county militia, on Flatland plains. Captain Jacques Cortelyou deposed before the court of sessions, that, "being in arms at the head of his company," he heard Hagell say to the people then in arms on said plains, in Dutch, these mutinous, factious and seditious words, following, viz: "*Slaen wij-der onder, wij seijn drie & egen een;*" in English: "Let us knock them down, we are three to their one."[1] Hagell subsequently confessed his error, and was released with a fine.

The women, also, participated in the disorders of the times, for on the 8th of May, 1694, Rachel, the wife of John Luquer, and the widow Jonica Schamp, both of Bushwick, were presented before the court of sessions, for having, on the 24th of January previous, assaulted Capt. Peter Praa, and "teare him by the hair as he stood at the head of his company, at Boswyck." They, too, were heavily fined, and released after making due confession of their fault.[2]

---

[1] Rec. Ct. Sess., in Old Road Book (p. 19, 20), in City Hall, Brooklyn, dates of indictment and deposition, Oct. 11, 1693.

[2] Rec. Ct. Sess., in Old Road Book, City Hall, Brooklyn, p. 25.

And again, on the 14th of September, 1697, certain citizens of Bushwick were implicated in riotous proceedings at the Court House in Flatbush, as before related.[1]

In 1706, the improved lands assessed in Bushwick, as then in fence, were as follows:

OWNERS.	ACRES.	OWNERS.	ACRES.
Hackert Hendrickse (widow),	186	Garret Cooke,	50
Peter Praa,	68	[Ja] Cobus Collier,	20
Humphrey Clay,	52	William West,	14
Peter de Wit's widow,	96	Derick Andriese,	14
Charles Fountain,	50	Cornelius Laguson,	52
Teunis Wortman,	97	Hendrick Jansen,	54
Francis Titus,	126	Gysbert Bogert,	10
James Bobyne,	50	Dorothy Verscheur,	70
John Meseroll,	170	Gabon (or Galen) Laqiull,	36
Jurian Hagell,	95	Ann Andriessen,	30
Cornelia Van Katts,	108	Gabriel Sprong,	16
John Luquier,	108	Teunis Titus,	47
John Luquier's Mill,	25	Hendrick De Forest,	14
Philip Volkert's,	54	Jacobus Jansen,	20
Peter Layston,	50	Charles Folkerts,	110
Joost Camp,	40	John Hendrick,	26
Jochem Verscheur,	60	Frederic Symonds,	61
Auck Hegeman,	40	Philip Nagell,	13
Peter Williams,	60		
Joost Dyeye,	107	Total acres,	2,443

CHAS. L. FOUNTAINE, } *Assessors.*
PETER PRAA, }
PETER CORTILLEAU.—*Surveyor.*

On the 12th of August, 1708, the town of Bushwick received from Gov. Cornbury, a new patent, confirmatory of that previously granted by Gov. Nicolls.[2]

During the administration of Lord Cornbury, the colony was called upon to exert all its energy in furnishing men, provisions and munitions of war, for the earlier colonial wars. In connection with this war, tradition has preserved a most romantic and touching episode, which occurred in town of Bushwick. Peter Andriese, a young man of energy and means, was about to be married to the lovely daughter of Jan Stryker, of Flatbush, when, having become acquainted with one of the newly appointed officers of the expedition, he was induced to enlist in the army. The consternation of his friends, and even that of his bride, was not able to depress his spirits, or to change his purpose, and he departed, leaving them in a fearful apprehension of danger. Days, months and years passed by, his bride every hour expecting to hear of her betrothed, but in vain. At last, overcome by sorrow and hope deferred, death made her his victim, and the same day that she was buried, Andriese unexpectedly made his appearance in town. For years he had been a captive among a tribe of the Northern Indians, and had returned — alas, too late.

---

[1] See vol. I, 208.

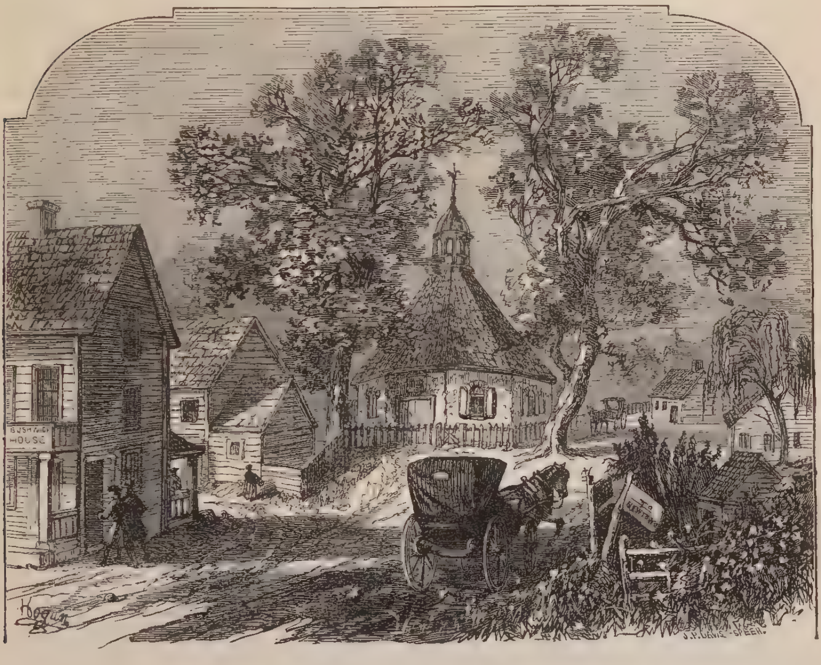
[2] "Rec'd, Dec. 12th, 1786. From Mr. Micheal Connolly, on account of Mr. Peter Schenck Publick securities, which with the Interest allowed thereon, amount to thirty-five pounds five shillings in full for the amount of Quit Rent, and a commutation for the future Quit Rent, that would have arisen on Patent granted to Boswick, Kings county, dated August 12th, 1708.

"£35.5. GERARD BANCKER, *Treasurer.*"

CHAPTER VII.

ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF BUSHWICK, 1700-1869.

In the absence of any ecclesiastical records, we have no evidence of the organization of a church, or the erection of a house of worship, in this town, prior to the commencement of the last century. "A part of the communion service still in use," says Prime, "bears the date of 1708, from which it is inferred that the church was formed about that time. There is also a receipt extant, for a church bell, dated in 1711, which renders it probable that the



THE OLD BUSHWICK CHURCH, IN 1828.

(Bushwick Avenue, between Conselyea and Skillman Streets, E. D.)

house of worship had been erected not long before." This edifice, which is still remembered by many aged persons among us, was octagon in form, with a very high and steep pyramidal roof, terminating in an open cupola or belfry, the whole greatly resembling a haystack. Externally, being constructed of frame work, it was dimunitive and rustic in aspect; internally, it was a mere inclosure, without pews or gallery, till near the close of the century, the congregation furnishing themselves with benches or chairs. In 1790, the building received a new roof; and, in 1795, a front gallery was erected, and the ground floor furnished with pews. It was taken down in 1840.

The people of Bushwick constituted a part of the Collegiate church of the county, and as such, were ministered to by the pastors of the Five Dutch towns. According to the preceding dates, of course, Messrs. Freeman and Antonides were the first pastors, and preached here alternately every third sabbath. There is still extant a receipt from the former, for salary, in 1709. The subsequent history of the pastorate, till about the commencement of the present century, will be found in a previous chapter of this work.[1]

In 1787, the Rev. *Peter Lowe* was installed here as collegiate pastor with the Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker, who resided at Flatbush. Having withdrawn from the oversight of this church to the exclusive charge of the associate churches of Flatbush and Flatlands, he closed his labors here in the year 1808, and was succeeded in 1811 by the Rev. Dr. *John Bassett.* Mr. Lowe's biography has been given on page 192 of our first volume.

The Rev. Dr. John Bassett, his successor, was a native of Bushwick, where he was born, October 1st, 1764. Although bereaved, during infancy, of his father, Capt. John Bassett, who was lost at sea in the very prime of life, he yet managed to secure a good education, and graduated at Columbia College, N. Y., in 1786. Having pursued his theological studies under Dr. Livingston, he was ordained and settled, on the 25th of November, 1787, as colleague pastor with Dr. Westerlo, over the Reformed Protestant Dutch church of Albany, N. Y. While here he married Maria Hunn, of that city, by whom he had two sons, John and Hunn, and three daughters, whose descendants are said to reside in the western part of the state of New York.[1] In December, 1804, he resigned his pastoral charge in Albany "leaving many warm friends in the congregation, who deeply regretted his departure,"[2] and removed to the Boght, and thence to his native place, Bushwick, where he was duly installed in June, 1811.

---

[1] Chapter v, vol. I.

The following account of his installation was published in the *New York Evening Post*, at the time. "On Sunday morning, June 2, by virtue of a commission from the Reverend Classis of New York, directed to the Rev. Messrs. Lowe and Schoonmaker, the Rev. Dr. John Bassett, late of Albany, was installed as pastor of the Reformed Dutch church of Bushwick, by Dr. Lowe, who preached from Rev. ii, 10, "Be thou faithful, etc." In his immediate address to the incumbent and to the senior ministers, Mr. Lowe was particularly interesting and impressive, and commanded the deep attention of his auditory. Divine service was performed in the afternoon by Dr. Bassett, who preached from II Thessalonians iii, 1, "Pray for us." His discourse was remarkably animated and pathetic throughout, and when respectively addressing himself to the reverend gentlemen who officiated in the forenoon, to his venerable colleague in the ministry, to the aged divines who attended, to the elders and deacons and congregation at large; and, while he especially recalled the revered memories of Westerlo and Johnson, the cheek of fervent piety was bedewed with tears. This event, long wished and prayed for, is at length happily realized. The ancient and respected town of Bushwick, which has hitherto depended on distant periodical services, is now blessed with a regular, permanent ministry," etc., etc.

Dr. Bassett remained in charge of the church of Bushwick until 1824, when he was suspended from the ministry, for intemperance, and died on the 4th of February of that year, aged 59 years. His remains, which at first were buried in the ground attached to the church, were subsequently removed to the vault of his wife's family at Albany.

Mr. Bassett was a man of extraordinary erudition. He was an excellent Hebrew scholar, as is attested by the fact that he was, in 1797, appointed by the General Synod of the Reformed Protestant Dutch church, to fill the chair of professorship in Queen's (now Rutger's) College, New Brunswick,

---

[1] *Thompson's History of Long Island*, II, 162. Dr. Rogers, in *History of Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of Albany*, 1858, p. 33, states that four still survive.

[2] Dr. Rogers, in *History of Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of Albany*, 1858, p. 33, states that upon his retirement from that church the consistory voted to pay him an annuity of $562.50, for the term of his natural life.

N. J., which position he held for many years.[1] He was, also, a thorough classical scholar, and generally had several young men in his family and enjoying his instruction. Although not gifted with great powers of imagination or eloquence, he was a sound and edifying preacher; and the history of Brooklyn during the war of 1812, attests his fervent and lofty patriotism.[2] It may be further mentioned as a proof of his ability, that being equally familiar with the Dutch, as with the English language, he undertook the translation of *Vonderdonk's History of New Netherland*, for publication, but by some means the manuscript was lost, and the task was subsequently repeated by the late Gen Jeremiah Johnson.

Shortly after Mr. Bassett's death, a call was given to the present pastor, the Rev. *Stephen H. Meeker.* He is the son of Benjamin and Esther (Headly) Meeker, was born at Elizabethtown, N. J., Oct. 17, 1799, graduated at Columbia College in 1821, was licensed to preach in 1824, and was installed over this church, February 27, 1825 or 1826. After remaining here about five years, he was called to the Dutch Reformed church of Jersey City, but after an absence of some six months, returned again in Nov., 1830, and still continues in the faithful discharge of his duties, and in the enjoyment of the affectionate respect and esteem of an intelligent and harmonious congregation.

---

[1] During this period he engaged the services of a colleague, Rev. John Barent Johnson, likewise a native of Kings county, who was installed in 1796, and who subsequently became the pastor of the Reformed Dutch church of Brooklyn. See vol. I, 194.

[2] See vol. I, 402.

CHAPTER VIII.

BUSHWICK, DURING THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR.

The Revolutionary history of the town is brief, and by no means so interesting as that of its neighbor, Brooklyn; and its Revolutionary spirit, outspoken and free at first, was, like that of Brooklyn, also, quickly nipped in the bud by the disastrous result of the battle of Long Island, in August, 1776. Previous to that event, during the year 1775, the popular sentiment and action was at once loyal and energetic in behalf of the American cause; Bushwick was then represented in the First New York Provincial Congress, and also, at the subsequent sessions of the same body, in '75 and '76; and at the conventions of the state in 1776 and' 77, by Mr. Theodorus Polhemus; and many of her prominent citizens, such as Ab'm Ranst, Ab'm Luquere, John Titus, Joost Duryea, Alexander Whaley and others, were foremost in all county and local action which was calculated to advance the interests of their country. At the battle of Brooklyn, and in the retreat which followed, Bushwick was represented by a militia company under command of Capt. John Titus,[1] and we have certain evidence that *one* of their number, at least, made his mark upon the advancing foe.[2] After that unfortunate battle, the town was subjected to all the inconveniences and evils of an armed occupation. In the month of November, 1776, a regiment of Hessians, under Col. Rahl took their winter quarters here, and constructed barracks on the land then belonging to Abraham Luqucre; the timber for said barracks being taken, with military freedom, from the Wallabout swamp. Many of the troops were also billeted on the inhabitants. The leading patriots were either in active service, or had been obliged to leave their homes and estates to the tender mercies of the invaders, and, in some cases, to confiscation. Their families were subjected to the arbitrary authority of British officials, and to the insults or depredations of the soldiery who were quartered upon them. Their woodlands, brush wood and fencing were rapidly appropriated to camp uses, their teams impressed into the king's service, and, in many ways, they were made to feel the power of their conquerors. One instance has been related to us where the British troopers wantonly turned their horses loose into a rebel's barn, up to their bellies in the threshed wheat, yet we believe that such flagrant acts of outrage, were of rare occurrence, and always severely punished when discovered by the officers. Thefts of garden vegetables, poultry, etc., etc., were common, and were never punished *unless the offender was caught in the act;* indeed it was generally understood between the officers and their men that punishment was meted out, not for theft, *but for being discovered in it!*

---

[1] In a list of officers chosen by the different companies in Kings Co., who have signed the Declaration, and taken their commission, among the Light Horse, Jacob Bloom, 2d lieut.; and Peter Wykoff, quarter-master of the militia, John Titus, capt.; Ab'm Van Ranst, 1st lieut.; Peter Colyer, 2d lieut.; John Skillman, ensign.—*Onderdonk's Rev. Rem. Kings Co.*, sec. 782.

[2] Wm. Van Cott, of Bushwick, shot a British officer who was engaged in reconnoitering the American lines on Fort Putnam and then put up his gun, saying he had done his part for that day.

Of the auxiliary troops of the British army, Mr. T. W. Field says, quoting Gen. Johnson's *Manuscript Recollections of the Revolution:* "Col. Rahl took up his quarters in Bushwick, with a regiment of Hessians. They constructed barracks on the land of Abraham Luqueer, although many of them were also quartered on the inhabitants. The regiment of Col. Rahl made free use of the wood in the Wallabout swamp, which extended along north of the Cripplebush road, from the bay to Newtown creek." In the humane treatment of a conquered enemy, the Hessian soldiers, after they became acquainted with the people of the island, would compare with the British, much to the disadvantage of the latter. The testimony of the prisoners of the Wallabout prison ships is often highly creditable to their humanity. They had first, however, to be disabused of the conviction so craftily impressed by the British, of the barbarity and savage cruelty of the Americans. But their cupidity and proneness to commit petty robberies (appropriating every species of property upon which they could, without much personal risk, lay their hands) has begot for them the reputation of arrant thieves. It was seldom, however, that they wantonly injured the property of others, as they did in the case of Hendrick Suydam, situated upon what was then known as New Bushwick lane (now Evergreen avenue, in the Eighteenth ward) which connected the Jamaica turnpike with the Cripplebush road to Newtown. His house which still stands,[1] is a venerable and well preserved specimen of Dutch architecture, the lower story built of stone of sufficient thickness, almost, to serve for the walls of a fortress; is lighted by small windows with long panes of glass set in heavy sash, which give it a quaint air of peering through spectacles. Its walls, according to the traditions of the family, were erected not less than one hundred and sixty years ago, and the house was located, according to the invariable practice of the old Holland settlers, in a little hollow where it would be protected from the sweep of the dreaded north wind. The airy site and broad prospect, which so entice the newer occupants of Brooklyn soil, had no attractions for the phlegmatic and comfort loving Dutch race. The old farmers quietly hid their houses away in the little valleys and turns of the road, much as a cautious fowl creeps into a hedge and constructs its nest for a long incubation. Hendrick Suydam, like his brother the stout Lambert Suydam of Bedford, captain of the Kings county troop of horse, was a sound whig, though compelled from his situation in the midst of the British camp to take the oath of allegiance or suffer the confinement of a fetid and infected prison, with numbers of his Bushwick neighbors. He could not, however, obtain his freedom from an infection scarcely less pestiferous than the other alternative, the lodgment, in his house, of a squad of Hessian soldiers. So filthy were their habits, that, in the summers succeeding their occupancy of the houses of Bushwick, Brooklyn and Flatbush, where they had been quartered, a malignant fever ensued which carried off numbers of the inhabitants. In consequence of their peculiar habits, so abhorrent to the fastidious neatness of our Dutch ancestors, these Hessians were termed the Dirty Blues. During the occupation of the Suydam house, a Hessian captain, for want of other occupation, or possibly to spite his Dutch host, chopped with his sword several large pieces from one of the side posts of the doorway. As a memento of the old troublous times, and to keep green the memory of the wrongs which so deeply embittered him, the old whig would never permit the defacement to be repaired. With true Dutch pertinacity, in the same humor, his descendants have very commendably preserved the tokens of the detested occupation of their domicile by a foreign enemy and the marks of the Hessian sword are still apparent."

---

[1] A view of this house may be found in the volume alluded to in previous note.

The greatest trouble experienced by the farmers during the war, was from the tories, or cow-boys, who were amenable to no law, and influenced by no motives of humanity or honesty. Old Mrs. Meserole, who lived on Green-Point, used often to say that, though residing alone with a young family around her, she was never molested by the British officers, or their men, but she lived in constant dread of the tories. Such, also, was the testimony of the late Gen. Jeremiah Johnson, who says, "in that gloomy and dark period, there were sons of consolation and comfort in the British army; the majority of the officers were honorable and generous gentlemen, who despised to aggravate the horrors of war, and I take pleasure in stating the truth, and supporting the same by incidents of kindness towards my mother and her family. On the 27th of August, in the morning, the noise of the battle terrified my mother, and she determined to go to her father's at Newtown; a wagon and horses were prepared, and she set out with four children and a few articles of clothing, for her father's house. The wagon was driven by myself, being then ten years of age. We arrived in safety, in a tory neighborhood. The succeeding night our horses were stolen; on the next afternoon we were ordered away by a Captain Man, and on the next morning, by the assistance of an uncle, we were enabled to return to the Wallabout. Newtown was bad, but our own home appeared worse, for we were, to appearance, in the midst of the rovers of the army. But providence did provide. On the day after our return, two officers of the 55th Regiment (one of whom knew my father), came to the house to inquire for him; my mother frankly told him, that her husband was absent with the American army, as a captain; the officers offered their protection, and sent a safe-guard of two soldiers to protect the house and family from plunderers; they called daily to see the family, until the regiment removed. After their removal, a German colonel replaced the safe-guard. Thus was a rebel family protected by men of honor."

In *Rivington's Gazette*, October 23, 1779, we find the following statement:

> $50 *Reward offered by Gov. Tryon.* George and Peter Duryea, with their wives, Sarah and Catherine, being one family, made oath before Richard Alsop, Esq., of Newtown, that at nine in the evening of Oct. 15, four or five men disguised, meanly habited, with faces blackened, armed with a gun, bayonet fixed, a pistol, a number of clubs and a cutlass, forced in their house at Bushwick, west side of the creek (some of the party being at the same time posted outside at the doors and windows), and assaulted them. George received four dangerous blows on his head, which settled him on the floor. Not quite deprived of reason, he crawled under a bed, and laid still to avoid being murdered. Peter received six wounds about his head and one on his arm, but at length escaped and alarmed his neighbors. Meantime the villains broke open two desks, and a cupboard, and took £220 in good cash (all gold and silver), a pair of silver knee buckles, marked P. D., silver spoons, I. D., and a silver bowl. Previous to the robbery, Catherine was seized by the throat, thrown on the floor, and almost choked to death.

Rappelje's tavern at the Cross-roads, was the favorite rendezvous of these refugees, and as long as they infested the towns, there was no quiet or safety in the land. After the British left the country, they disappeared, many of them going to Nova Scotia.

A battalion of guides and pioneers, composed of three companies, were quartered in the town of Bushwick, from 1778 until November, 1783. They were a set of notorious villains, collected from almost every part of the country, and organized under the command of Captains McPherson, Williams, Van Allen and Purdy. Williams and Purdy were from Westchester county, Van Allen from Bergen county, N. J. and McPherson from the south. This command supplied the British army with guides and spies for every part of the country, and whenever an expedition was organized to attack any place, drafts were made on this battalion. After the peace, these men dared not remain in this country, and were not wanted in Britain. Nova Scotia was their only place of refuge, and thither they went, where proper provision was made for them by the British authority.

After the provisional treaty of peace, these guides returned to quarters at Bushwick. They numbered about one hundred and fifty under command of Capt. McPherson, and were encamped on the farm of Abm. Van Ranst, then an exile.[1] The dwelling, which stood about one hundred and fifty yards northward from Bushwick church, was occupied by the captain himself, who kept a guard of honor, and a sentinel constantly stationed at his door. In this connection we may relate the following anecdote, as given in the *Manuscript Recollections of Gen. Johnson :*

> "In the month of August, 1783, on a fine evening, seven young whigs were together along the shore opposite to Corlaer's hook, the tide being then quite high. Two British long boats had drifted on the shore, where they had lain for some time. It was proposed to take the boats up Bushwick creek and lay them on the meadow of John Skillman, as prizes, which was forthwith done. A few days afterwards, in the month of September, several of the party, being at the Fly Market in New York, were told that Capt. McPherson had caused the boats to be removed to his house, and had purchased paint and other material with which to put the boats in order for his own use. It was immediately resolved to remove the boats that night, from the captain's quarters. A gallon of shrub, some crackers and a salmon were purchased for the expedition, a small hill on John Skillman's land was designated as the place of rendezvous, and nine o'clock was named as the hour. Three of the party brought up a boat with oars to row away the boats with, and at the appointed hour, the whole party, consisting of William Miller, Joseph and Francis Skillman, John Bogart, John Conselyea, Francis Titus and the writer, were assembled at the appointed place. It was a beautiful

---

[1] Mr. Van Ranst was clerk of the county committee, and 1st lieut. of the Bushwick company of militia, and Aug. 27th, arrived at Harlem, "in a boat with his family," and reported that he had heard that 1,500 men had surrounded the house of Simon Duryea, a mile south of his own residence, on the previous night, and had taken his arms, horses and wagon. Also, that two companies of militia near Bedford, had been disarmed, and perhaps made prisoners.— *Journal Prov. Cong.*, 594.

All of which is evidently more to the credit of Lieut. Van Ranst's prudence than to his courage.

moonlit evening and the soldiers were playing about the fields. The little party of whigs regaled themselves with their provisions, until about ten o'clock, when two of their number ventured to reconnoitre, and returned with the report that the boats lay near the house, that a party were dancing and frolicking there, and a sentinel was at the door. Meanwhile a dark cloud was rising in the west, foreboding a violent storm. It came on, and then we went, took up the boats, carried them over a stone wall, and dragging them about one hundred and fifty yards, launched them into Skillman's creek. When we took the boats the sentinel at the door had deserted his post; we found a fine marquee pitched near by, which was trembling in the rising storm. I cut a few *sky lights* in the top, and then severing the weather braces, which sang like fiddle strings, it fell prostrate. So violent was the lightning and rain, that we did not see a living person, besides ourselves, before we were out of Bushwick creek with the boats, which we took up the river to John Miller's, opposite Blackwell's island, and left them in his barn, returning to Francis Titus's in our boat, at sunrise. In passing down Bushwick creek, one of our prizes filled with water, but we did not abandon her. On our arrival at the mouth of the creek, the storm was over, the moon shone brightly again, and we were hailed by a sentinel who threatened to fire upon us, to which we answered roughly, and passed on our way.

"The next day all Bushwick was in an uproar. The Yankees were charged with infringing the treaty of peace; the sentinels and guards who lay in Mr. Skillman's barn, within fifty yards of the place where the boats were launched, were charged with unwatchfulness. It was not known who took the boats, before November 25, 1783. The act was caused by the feeling of resentment which the whole party had against Captain McPherson. He was a bad man, and when his soldiers were accused by neighbors with thefts, and other annoyances, retorted upon their accusers with foul language, etc."

Gen. Johnson, under date of January 14, 1847, adds that "all the members of this party have been dead several years, except the writer, who was the youngest of them."

Upon the occasion of the evacuation of the city of New York by the British army, and its occupation by the Americans, November 25th, '83, a number of the inhabitants of Bushwick met and appointed December 2d, as the day, and the banks of the East river, in full view of the city, as a place of rejoicing, and sent the following address and invitation to Washington:[1]

---

[1] *Onderdonk's Rev. Reminiscences Kings Co.,* p. 203.

To His Excellency GEORGE WASHINGTON, *Esq., General and Commander-in-chief of the armies of the United States of America.*

The ADDRESS *of the* FREEHOLDERS *and* INHABITANTS of Kings Co., *on Nassau Island, in the State of New York, who are attached to the freedom and independence of America.*

With hearts full of duty and acknowledgment to the Supreme Director of all human events, and with the most profound respect for your Excellency, we beg leave to present you our sincere congratulations, on this glorious and ever memorable era of the sovereignty and independence of the United States of America, sanctioned by the Definitive Treaty, and the evacuation of the city of New York; your Excellency's entry into which, with his Excellency Gov. Clinton, was with such dignity, order, and regulation, as will redound to the lasting honor of your Excellency, be revered by foreign powers, and certainly obtain the affection of many whose sentiments are averse to that liberty which, with the divine assistance your Excellency has so happily acquired for us. Our unfeigned prayers will ever be for your health and happiness, whether you retire to the private paths of peace, or hereafter may be called to move in the busy scenes of war, in the defence of your country. With sincere affection, equal duty and respect, we humbly beg leave to subscribe ourselves, in behalf of the freeholders and inhabitants aforesaid.

Your Excellency's very obedient,
and very humble servants,

Philip Nagel,
Johannes Bergen,
John Titus,
R. Van Brunt,
Jeremias Vanderbilt,
Barent Lefferts,
Abraham Voorhies,
Stephen Van Voorhies,
Cornelius Wyckoff,
Abraham Luquere,
Elias Hubbard,
Adrian Van Brunt,
Johannes Covenhoven.

To this address his Excellency returned the following appropriate answer:

To the FREEHOLDERS AND INHABITANTS *of Kings Co. on Nassau Island in the State of New York, who are attached to the freedom and independence of America.*

GENTLEMEN:

While you speak the language of my heart, in acknowledging the magnitude of our obligations to the Supreme Director of all human events, suffer me to join you in the celebration of the present glorious and ever memorable era, and to return my best thanks for your kind expressions in my favor. I cannot but rejoice sincerely, that the national dignity and glory will be greatly increased, in consequence of the good order and regularity which has prevailed universally, since the city of New York has been repossessed by us. This conduct exhibits to the world a noble instance of magnanimity, and will doubtless convince any who, from ignorance or prejudice, may have been of a different sentiment, that the laws do govern, and that the civil magistrates are worthy of the highest respect and confidence. For my own part, gentlemen, in whatever situation of life I shall be hereafter, my supplications will ever ascend to heaven for the prosperity of my country in general, and for the individual happiness of those who are attached to the freedom and independence of America.

GEO. WASHINGTON.

New York, December 1, '83.

The following account has been preserved to us, of the *celebration of the Peace at Bushwick, December* 2, 1783:

The day was ushered in by hoisting the American flag, and firing a salute; an ox was roasted, and an entertainment provided to welcome their brethren, who have suffered seven years exile, and who have sacrificed their all at the shrine of liberty. After they had all partook of the feast, the following toasts were drank, attended by a salute, huzzaing, and music.

1. The United States of America.
2. His most Christian Majesty.[1]
3. The States of Holland.
4. May the State of New York be entirely abandoned by her enemies.
5. His Excellency Gov. Clinton.
6. His Excellency Gen'l Washington.
7. The Hon. the Council.
8. The Hon. the House of Assembly.
9. Prosperity and honor to the sons of Liberty.
10. May the memory of those who have fallen in the cause of America, be ever precious to her sons.
11. A free and extensive trade.
12. Success to agriculture.
13. As the roaring of a lion is to animals, so may the frowns of America be to princes.

The day was spent in the greatest good humor, decency, and decorum. Every countenance displayed, in the most lively manner, the joy and gratitude of their hearts upon this most happy and important event; and what added to the cheerfulness of the day, was the once more beholding the metropolis of this state, emerging from that scene of ruin and distress, which it has severely experienced, during the late contest, from a cruel, unrelenting, and insulting foe.

---

[1] Of France.

We have been unable to gather much satisfactory evidence concerning the names or services of the patriots of Bushwick. Besides those mentioned in the preceding pages, we may here record the names of *John Provost*,[1] who escaped the pursuit of a detachment of British soldiers on Green-Point, and was obliged to secrete himself for three days in Cripplebush swamp, during which time he sustained life by milking the cows which pastured there; of *John A. Meserole*, who was taken and confined in the Provost jail at New York; of *John I. Meserole* who was mistaken for John A., while out gunning in a skiff, and arrested as a spy, but subsequently released; and of *Abraham Meserole*, another member of the same family, who was in the American army. *Jacob Van Cott* and *David Miller* were also in the service, and taken prisoners. *William Conselyea*, grand-father of the present William Conselyea, was taken during the war, and hung over a well and threatened in order to make him confess where his money was; *Nicholas Wyckoff*, grandfather of the present president of the City Bank, who was engaged in vidette duty with a troop of horse; and *Alexander Whaley.*

ALEXANDER WHALEY (or Whally) was one of those decided characters of whom we should be glad to learn much more, than we have been able to ascertain, in spite of much inquiry and research. He was a blacksmith, residing at the Bushwick Cross Roads, on land forming a part of Abraham Rapalye's forfeited estates, and which he purchased at the commissioners' sale, March 21, 1785. (Liber VI, *Convey. Kings Co.*, 345). The building which Mr. Whaley occupied was erected by himself, on the south side of the present Flushing avenue, his liberty-sign pole rising from a little knoll some twenty feet west of the house. His blacksmith-shop was on the site of the present house, east of the old Whaley house. He died at Bushwick, in February, 1833, in the eighty-eighth year of his age. Bold, faithful, and patriotic, and odd withal, he made his mark upon the day and generation in which he lived. His obituary notice (all too brief) says that "he was one of the pioneers of American liberty, being one of those who assisted in throwing the tea overboard in Boston harbor. He was the confidential friend of Washington and in all the relations of life he always did his duty."

---

[1] Grandfather of Hon. A. J. Prevost.

His patriotism indeed always blazed out, during the latter part of his life at the sight of any of the tory tribe, who lingered within the precincts of Bushwick. Brave and generous to a fault, he could brook nothing that savored of disloyalty to the government, or the country which he had aided to preserve. An example of this is contained in the following characteristic advertisement, published in the *Long Island Star*, of May 7, 1810:

"TWENTY DOLLARS REWARD! On Saturday night, the 10th instant, about the time when "wander forth the *sons of Belial*, fraught with insolence and wine," a gang of midnight desperadoes proceeded to the property of the subscriber, and cut down his *sign*, together with the *Liberty Pole* from which it was suspended. By such dastardly conduct did those *heroic* children of darkness, attempt to manifest their enmity not only to me, but also to the emblem of *liberty*, to which I have reason to conclude they were *always opposed*, and which I have no doubt they still abhor. One of my neighbors informs me that he saw them at a distance, galloping off as if *Old Nick* was at their horses' heels (and no doubt he was) as fast as their horses' heels and a guilty conscience could drive them. He says they pursued a northerly direction, and supposes if they have kept on at the same rate they started they might by this time have reached *Nova Scotia*, where the sight of a liberty pole may no longer present to their affrighted imaginations, the fearful idea of a gallows, which, no doubt, they have *so long* and so richly deserved. There their delicate ears would no longer be annoyed with the terrible sounds of 'Tompkins and Liberty.' There they may sing without censure, 'God bless Great George, our King.' Nor will their adoption of the *name*, as a *mask*, and profession of attachment to the principles of Washington be longer necessary; and from thence, I sincerely hope for the good of my country, and the peace of society, they may never again return. Should they, however, not yet have *passed the lines*, and should they be found skulking in any part of the United States, whoever will bring them forward, so that they may be prosecuted to conviction, shall receive the above reward.

"ALEXANDER WHALEY.

"Bushwick, May 10th, 1810.

"P. S. It is intended in the course of a few days to erect another *liberty pole*, and this I hope to accomplish without drawing on the funds of the *Washington*, the *Washington Benevolent*, or the Kings Co. *Humane Society*.

"☞ Printers of News Papers in the United States who are of opinion that they would deserve well of their country, by aiding in the detection of those *runaways* will give the above a place in their papers."

Several estates were confiscated, among which were those of *Williams*, *Rapalje* and *Titus*, which latter person found it convenient to go to Nova Scotia.

Louis Warner, who lived near Cooper's glue factory, *Hendrick Plaus* and *Christopher Zimmerman*, who was for many years miller at Luquere's mill, were Hessians who chose to remain here after the war.

Although opposite political opinions were frequently entertained by different members of the same families, it is worthy of remark that they always acted honestly towards one another. Though a great number of the inhabitants of Bushwick were whigs, the royalists even were men of peaceable character, and integrity. This fact, as recorded by a venerable eye witness of the Revolution,[1] speaks volumes in favor of the ancestry of Bushwick.

---

[1] Gen. J. Johnson.

CHAPTER IX.

BUSHWICK AND WILLIAMSBURGH, FROM THE CLOSE OF THE REVOLUTION, UNTIL 1854.

There were in Bushwick, at the close of the Revolution, three distinct settlements, or centres of population, as they may be called, each of which retained the old Dutch names, and very much of their old Dutch quaintness of appearance. These were *het dorp*, the town plot, first laid out by Gov. Peter Stuyvesant, in 1661, at the junction of North Second street and Bushwick avenue; *het Kivis padt*, since known as the Cross roads, at the junction of New Bushwick lane and the Kreupelbush[1] and Maspeth (crossing of the present Bushwick avenue and the Flushing) road; and *het strand*, or the strand, along the East river shore.

Het Dorp, or the town plot of Bushwick,[2] is perhaps, the most interesting locality to the antiquarian, on account of its intimate connection with all the earliest history of the town; and indeed, as Mr. T. W. Field justly remarks, "There is no portion of our city which still affords a scene so primitive as the junction of North Second street and Bushwick avenue. It was towards this centre of town life, that the principal roads of the settlement verged, and in every direction, as the citizen receded from it, he receded from civilization."[3] The view of the old Bushwick church, (given on page 355), will perhaps, convey to our readers a better idea of the spot, than any description can do. The ancient octagonal church, standing on the site of, and facing the same way as the present one; the wrinkled and homely old one-story and town house and the school house on the opposite side of the Wood point road, which leads from the church to a point of woods on the meadows, near Van Cott and Meeker avenues;[1] the group of one-story Dutch cottages, with their long curved sloping roofs, marking the entrance of *Kyckout lane*, which connected Bushwick church with Kyckout or Lookout point, on the East river, crossing Grand street near Tenth, and yet traceable in several places by the position of the old houses, which formerly fronted upon it,[2] all these formed a scene of primitive Dutch life, which must have been exceedingly attractive from its simplicity and almost grotesque quaintness. And such it remained until 1835. In 1840, the old *church* (Map E, Fig. 1), was replaced by the present edifice; in 1846, Mespeth avenue was opened to Newtown, and several houses erected upon it, this side of the creek.[3] The old *town house* yet stands (Map E, Fig. 2), and around it centre the memories of the ancient, civil, ecclesiastical and educational glories of Bushwick. In front of it (or more probably of its predecessor), contumacious John of Leyden was exposed to the public gaze, ignominiously tied to a stake, with a horse bridle in his mouth, a bundle of rods under his arm and a label on his breast, stating that he was a writer of lampoons, etc.[4] Here, too, a thief, was once punished by being made to stand under a gallows, with a rope around his neck and an empty sword scabbard in his hand,[5] and here, also, saddest sight of all, a venerable clergyman of the town, who had incautiously married a couple without observing the formalities demanded by the law, was condemned to flogging and banishment; a sentence, however, which, in consideration of his gray hairs, was commuted to that of exile from the town.[6]

---

[1] The name of a settlement, or of the farms on the road from Bedford to the Cross roads, in the vicinity of Nostrand and Flushing avenues.

[2] Named *Bushwick Green*, on T. W. Field's map of 1852.

[3] *Brooklyn Corporation Manual for* 1868, page 452.

---

[1] Van Cott avenue occupies a portion of its route. This old Wood point road was the route by which the Bushwick farmers got to their boats, and thence to market at New York. The Wood Point, or *Hout* Poynt, itself was on Bushwick creek and is covered by the present Fifth street.

[2] Kickout lane entered Bushwick avenue between North Second and Conselyea streets.

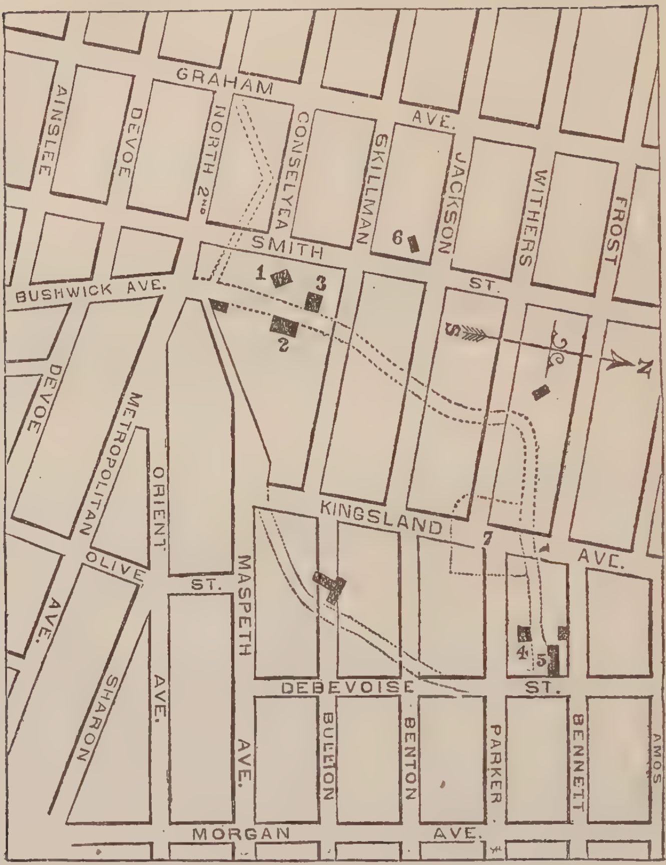
[3] *Long Island Miscellanies*, by Garret Furman, 182.

[4] *Ante* p. 338.

[5] *Brooklyn Corporation Manual*, for 1868, p. 457.

[6] *Ibid.*

MAP E.



Het Dorp, or Bushwick Green.

1. Bushwick Church.
2. Town House.
3. School House.
4. } De Voe Houses. (See page 374).
5. }
6. Conselyea House. (See pp. 373, 374).
7. Old Bushwick graveyard (see page 374), shown by dotted line.

"Long after the Revolution, the old town house continued to be the high seat of justice, and to resound with the republican roar of vociferous electors on town meeting days.[1] The first Tuesday in April, and the fourth of July, in each succeeding year, found het dorp (now Anglicized to Bushwick Church), suddenly metamorphosed from a sleepy little Dutch hamlet into a brawling, swaggering country town, with very debauched habits. Our Dutch youth had a most enthusiastic tendency and ready facility in adopting the convivial customs and uproarious festivity of the loud-voiced and arrogant Anglo-American youngsters. One day the close-fisted electors of Bushwick devised a plan for easing the public burden, by making the Town house pay part of the annual taxes; and, accordingly, it was rented to a Dutch publican, who afforded shelter to the justices and constables, and by his potent liquors contributed to furnish them with employment. In this mild partnership, so quietly aiding to fill each other's pockets, our old friend Chris. Zimmerman had a share until he was ousted, because he was a better customer than landlord. At last the electors of Bushwick grew tired of keeping a hotel, and sold the venerable structure to an infidel Yankee, at whose bar the good domine could no longer feel free to take an inspiriting cup before entering the pulpit, and the glory of the Town house of Bushwick departed."[2]

The *school-house* which stood near (Map E, Fig. 3), was occupied by a district school until within a few years past — latterly under the charge of the present Board of Education. Between this body and the trustees of the Dutch church there arose a curious controversy, involving the ownership of the building, and in which the tenure of occupation and title of the old Dutch town property was fully discussed.

Hidden by the church, and situated on the block now bounded by Jackson, Smith, Skillman streets and Graham avenue, is the Conselyea house, a well preserved specimen of Dutch architecture; erected as, tradition relates, at or near the date of the first settlement of the town. In 1848, Andrew Conselyea, its then proprietor, related that his grandfather, who died at the age of ninety-two, was accustomed to say that his father, who died long before the beginning of the nineteenth century, could not remember any other alteration in it than the putting on of a new roof. This would make its erection prior to 1700."[1]

---

[1] On the site of the two-story house, just above, was the old liberty pole flag-staff.

[2] T. W. Field, in *Corporation Manual*, 457.

In sight of the church, and covering the present junction of Parker street and Kingsland avenue, was the ancient graveyard of the original Dutch settlement. It is now unused and most of the remains having been removed to the new burying ground adjoining the church, the few remaining monuments are neglected, broken and almost undecipherable.[2]

A fence has, within a year or two past, been placed around it, but does not relieve the desolate appearance of this old "God's acre."

---

[1] *Brooklyn Corporation Manual for* 1868, 453.

[2] All the inscriptions visible in the spring of 1861, were, at that time copied by the author, and are as follows:

Andries Stockholm, geboren Den 29, [ ] y 1696, en overleden [ ] en 28 February, 1773, Zynde 76 Jaren en 7 Mænde."

"Hier Legt begraaven het Lichaam van *Isaac Lott*, overleeden den 10th Feb. 1771, onde Zynde 66 Jaaren."

Capt. *Lawrence Coe*, d. Aug. 24, 1780, æ. 50 yrs.

Abraham Bogert, d. March 11, 1792, æ. 69.

Maria, wife of Charles *Bourem*, d. March 2, 1807, æ. 69 yr. 11 mo. 17 d.

Sarah Ann (Devoe) wife of *John Skillman*, d. Feb. 8, 1845, æ. 26 yr. 8 mo. 17 d.

Andrew Van Horn, d. Feb. 24, 1828, æ. 78 yr, his wife Baffir, d. April 8, 1837, æ. 91.

Francis Titus, d. April 13, 1802, æ. 74 yr.

Francis Williams, fourth son of Capt. John Williams and Mary Titus, d. Dec. 14, 1797, æ. 1 yr. 9 mo. 20 d.

Francis Titus, d. May 31, 1799, æ. 24 yr. 11 mo. 10 d.

"1749, *D. B.*"

"*M. D. B.*"

"1758, *H. B. B.*"

David Miller, d. July 22, 1817, æ. 61 yr.

Isaac Debevoise, b. July 10, 1757, d. Nov. 16, 1831, æ. 74 yrs. 4mo. 6d., an acting elder in the Ref. Dutch church of Bushwick.

In the *new graveyard* adjoining Bushwick church are a large number of monuments, among which the most numerous are of the following families; Covert, Bogert, Skillman, Titus, Lott, Miller, Schenck, Meserole, Duryea, Debevoise and Van Cott. Haumpie Van Cott (daughter of Francis Titus, and first wife of David Van Cott) who died Dec. 15, 1814, æ. 52 yr. 9 mo. 2 d. was the *first* individual buried in this yard.

OLD BUSHWICK GRAVEYARD.

THE DE VOE HOUSES, AS SEEN FROM THE OLD GRAVEYARD.

Standing at the old burying ground and looking along the old Woodpoint road, we see the two venerable De Voe houses (Map E, 4 and 5), standing (on either side the old road, but) between Parker and Bennet streets, near De Bevoise avenue. They are well depicted in the accompanying sketch taken by our artist in the fall of 1867.

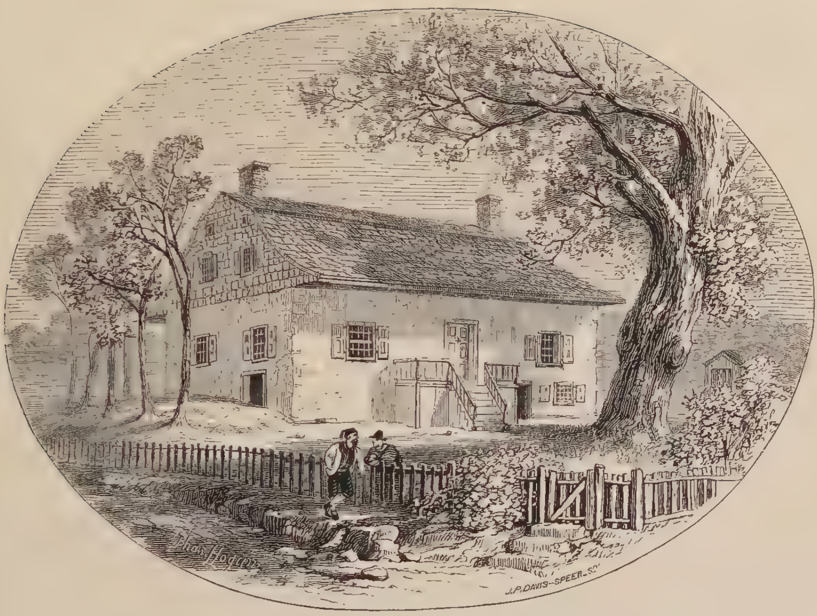
On De Bevoise avenue still remains the old De Bevoise house, latterly known as the residence of Charles I. De Bevoise. On Bushwick avenue, near the north-east corner of that avenue and North Second street, was the old Beadel house, now used as a grocery store; and several other old houses are still remaining in the immediate neighborhood of the church. North-west of the church and close to Bushwick creek was the residence of Abram Van Ranst, a lieutenant of the Kings County Militia who fled, with his family, to Harlem, at the time of the battle of Brooklyn. His house became the headquarters of Mr. Pherson's corps of refugees and tories, as mentioned on page 364.

Het Kivis Padt, or the Cross roads, on Bushwick avenue between Johnson and Adams streets still retains several of the old houses which clustered there in the olden time.

The inhabitants residing along the water side, (*Het Strand* of the olden day) at the close of the Revolution, were Martin Kershow, David Miller, Charles Titus, Andrew Conselyea, Thomas Skillman, Francis Titus, William Bennett and John Titus. Subsequently, but prior to 1798, were erected the houses of Peter Miller and Frederic Devoe. In 1798, also, William Van Cotts resided at the Sweede's Fly. One by one, however, these old farm houses have disappeared before long rows of modern brick dwellings, two only having been spared to our day, as samples of the ancient style of architecture, viz: the *Boerum house*, on Flushing avenue between Broadway and Kent streets (see opposite page), and the *Remsen* house on Clymer street near Kent avenue.[1]

---

[1] Depicted in *Valentine's New York Corporation Manual for* 1858, and Brooklyn *Corporation Manual for* 1863.



THE BOERUM HOUSE

(Kent Avenue, between Broadway and Rush Streets, E D)

Bushwick, also, had two tide mills, *Luqueer's* and *Schenck's*. *Luqueer's*, more lately known as Master's, was erected in the year 1664, by Abraham Jansen who received a grant of the mill site and privileges (page 338), and was, therefore, with the exception of Brower's mill on Gowanus creek, the first one established in the present city of Brooklyn. It stood on a branch of Maspeth (Newtown) creek, near the junction of Grand street and Metropolitan avenue. "A few years since," says Mr. T. W. Field, "there was no more striking scene near the metropolis than the view at this point. As the road to Jamaica struck the marsh, a rude bridge, with the most fragile railing which ever deluded a tired passenger to lean against it, crossed a narrow strait in the millpond. A few rods to the left stood an unpainted hovel dignified with the name of the Mill, against the side of which, and dwarfing it by comparison, hung suspended the gigantic wheel. Close to the bridge stood another tenement whose meaner appearance made the mill-house respectable. This was the toll-house, one of a class of structures which are only less universally detested than the quarantine and the pest-house. Across the broad level marsh, nearly a mile in width, rose the hills of Newtown, covered with their tall forests, amid which here and there open spaces of cultivated lands checkered the green expanse with squares of brown earth or varied colored crops. Through the green salt meadow the slumbrous tide-water currents wound their unseen courses; and, in the midst of the verdure rose the broad sails of vessels, which appeared as incongruous with the green meadow as would a western prairie over which tall ships were sailing. A mile or more to the right, on another branch of Maspeth kill, stood another structure, known as *Schenck's mill*, the site of which is only known by tradition, so completely have its ruins been concealed by alluvial deposits swept by the rains from the cultivated fields around."[1] Near at hand is still the little burying ground where sleep all of that name who heard the clatter of the mill and the splash of the sluggishly turning wheel.[2] Luqueer's or Master's mill was the last, within the town of Bushwick, to give way to the march of improvement.

---

[1] *Brooklyn Corporation Manual for* 1868, 477, 478.

[2] The ancient private burial place of the SCHENCK family, alluded to by Mr. Field, is still in existence in the rear of two barns on the farm of Nicholas Wyckoff, in

The physician of old Bushwick was Dr. Cornelius Lowe, who enjoyed the practice of Bushwick, New Lotts and a part of Newtown. He was an ardent patriot, unmarried, boarded with Alexander Whalley and died about 1830. He was succeeded by Dr. George Cox, who boarded in the Rev. Dr. Bassett's family, removed to Williamsburgh after it became a village, and became connected by marriage with the Miller family.

After the close of the Revolutionary war, the farmers of Bushwick pursued in peace their occupations of sowing and raising grain, and cultivating garden vegetables for the New York markets. From the monotonous pursuit of this profitable business, they were at length aroused by the magic touch of modern improvement. Suddenly, upon the shores of the beautiful river, which

---

Bushwick. From its monuments we copied, in 1860, the following inscriptions, some of which are partially obliterated by time and weather :

JOHANNES Schenck, ye First of the Family Dep^{d} this Life, Feb^{ry} y^{e} 5th, 1748, Ag^{d} 92.

CORN. Schenck, 1740.

(*Double grave*) NEELLIE Schenk, Dep^{d} this Life Mar^{h} y^{e} 29th 1763, Ag^{d} 17 yrs. 10 Mo^{ths}. MARIA MAGDALENA Schenck, Dep^{d} this Life Ma y^{e}. 17th 1779, aged 17th y^{r} 2 Mo^{ths} Boath Daughters of Abraham Schenck.

ELSIE Schenck [wife ?] of Abraham Schenck, Dep^{d} this Life Oct. y^{e} 2d 17 [ ] Aged 64. had children and grandchildren.

ELSIE Schenck, daughter of Abraham Schenck Dep^{d} this Life Nov. 30th 1782. Aged 25 yrs. 2 Mo^{ths} ; and ABRAHAM Schenck, Aged 16 Days, one Grave.

MARIA Schenck, wife of Johannis Schenck y^{e} second, Dep^{d} this Life May y^{e} 6th 1740, Agd 50.

MARIA MAGDALENA Schenck, y^{e} 1st, dep^{d} this Life April y^{e} 10th 1729, Ag^{d} 70.

(*Double grave*) MARIA Schenck, Daughter of Abm^{n} Schenck Dep^{d} this Life May 19, 1776, Ag^{d} 19^{rs} 4 Mo^{ths}. MARIA MAGDALENA, Grand child to Abraham Schenck, Daughter of Elizath Wife of John McPhern, Dep^{d} this Life Feb^{ry} y^{e} 9th 1782, Aged 1 y^{r} 6 mo^{ths}.

TEUNIS, d. July 31, 1800, æ. 83 yrs. 2 mo. 8 days, his wife

CATHERINE, d. April 9, 1793, æ. 65 yrs. 2 mo. 25 days. They had 12 children.

PETER T. (son of above, m. Sarah Schenck), d. Dec. 31, 1808, æ. 36.

ELIZABETH O'NEALE, dau. of Cath. & Teunis.

ELIZABETH (dau. of Teunis & Cath.) m. John O'Neale, who d. May 28, 1816, æ. 64.

CATHARINE, wife of Timothy Dandy, daughter of Isaac Schenck, died May 30, 1828, in 33d yr.

Catharine Schenck, d. July 6, 1858, æ. 18yr. 6 mo. 16d. } Children of
Peter P. Schenck, d. Oct. 6, 1832, æ. 39 y. 7 mo. 8d. } Peter & Sarah.

formed their western border, appeared the nucleus of a village; and, even while they rubbed their astonished eyes, it expanded to the fair proportions of a city. The surveyor's chain ran ruthlessly through their cabbage gardens, with a reckless indifference to time-honored farm lines; and they found that the ancient homesteads, which had sheltered their infancy, and their maturer years, were standing directly in the route of newly plotted streets and avenues, with which the crafty speculator had surrounded them, as with a spider's web. Probably, nothing had been farther from the conceptions and imaginations of these denizens of Bushwick, than the idea of converting these old farms into a city. They undoubtedly fully appreciated the peculiar advantages of their proximity to New York, in the enhanced prices of milk, cabbage, and all varieties of garden products; and, perhaps, some of them anticipated fortunes for their children, to be accumulated by row boat voyages, by starlight, to the Fulton market. But, that their half educated boys, without capacity to be aught else than garden hucksters, should have fortunes fairly thrust upon them by the enhanced value of their farms, due to the enterprise of others, whom they called intruders, had certainly never entered into their Dutch noddles. *Work*, was with them, the element of power; that fortunes could be acquired by any other method than that of plodding *labor*, such as they themselves had undergone, was incomprehensible to them, and regarded by them as little else than a species of *diablerie*.

And the foreign element, which was seeking to plant its foot upon the beautiful shores of Bushwick, was so well convinced of the popular feeling upon the subject, among these old farmers, that they felt obliged to resort to *finesse* and management in order to secure a foothold for the projected village.

Richard M. Woodhull, of the city of New York, who was the pioneer of this enterprise, dared not purchase in his own name the much coveted land, upon which he proposed to locate his improvements. He, therefore, about the commencement of the present century, employed one Samuel Titus of Newtown, to purchase from Charles Titus some fifteen acres of his farm, which he afterwards repurchased from the said Samuel Titus, at cost.

This land, situated in the vicinity of North Second street, then called Bushwick street, was soon laid out by Mr. Woodhull, in city lots, and named *Williamsburgh*, in compliment to a friend of his, Col. Williams, U. S. Engineer, by whom it had been surveyed. He then established a ferry from his property (foot of North Second street), to Corlies hook, now better known as Grand street, New York. He also set up a hay press, and made other improvements, but his enterprise and indefatigable exertions failed of success; only a few lots were purchased by others, and ere long a rival speculator began to compete with him in the field, which he had fondly hoped was his own.

This rival was *Thomas Morrell*,[1] who had purchased from Folkert Titus, the homestead farm of the ancient Titus estate,[2] and who, with James Hazard, to whom he sold a moiety, had laid it out in city lots, and had a perfect map made of the same, whereon Grand street was laid down as a dividing line. Morrell then (in 1812), obtained a grant from the corporation of New York, for a ferry from Grand street on the Bushwick shore, to Grand street, at Corlies hook on the other side, the same place to which Woodhull's ferry ran.[3] *Yorkton* was the somewhat pompous name given to the territory along the river between North Second street, and the Wallabout; and Loss's Map of Yorkton was dignified to the position of a public record. The Grand street ferry gradually obtained the public preference, and superseded Woodhull's, so that both owners became rivals, and disputes ran so high between them that they would not permit each other's teams to pass over their respective lands. These differences, of course, injured both parties, and tended greatly to retard the progress of the village. But, while Morrell had succeeded in monopolizing the ferry, Woodhull managed to preserve the name. The appellation of Williamsburgh, applied at first to the fifteen acres originally purchased at the foot of North Second street, had extended itself to adjoining lands, so as to embrace about thirty acres, as seen by F. F. Poppleton's Map, in 1814, and another, in 1815, of property of Jas. Homer Maxwell. But the first ferry had landed at Williamsburgh, and the turnpike went through Williamsburgh out into the island. Hence the country people, when coming to the ferry, talked of coming to Williamsburgh, so did the people coming from the city; and thus *Yorkton* was soon unknown save on Loss's map, and in the pockets of certain rival land jobbers. In similar manner, the designations of old farm locations, being obsolete to the idea of a city or village, grew into disuse; and the whole territory, lying between the Wallabout bay and Bushwick creek, became known as Williamsburgh. Previously to this, the region along the shore of the East river, was called the Strand. But, though the world did justice to the pioneer enterprise by retaining its name, fortune jilted its founder. The ferry and the town passed from Woodhull's hands, under a sheriff's execution, and the same fate overtook James Homer Maxwell, his successor, in the proprietorship of the village. Henceforth, Grand street became the permanent site of the ferry, and the Fountain Inn became the headquarters of the political influences of the town.

---

[1] Thomas Morrell from Newtown, was the father of the late John, and the late Thomas T. Morrell, of Williamsburgh.

[2] The estate comprised some twenty-eight acres, on each side of the present Grand street. The old Colonel Francis Titus's homestead, long known as the *Fountain Inn*, stood on the north-easterly side of South First street. In the earlier period of the village (as in modern days), rum and politics clustered together at the Fountain Inn, and the destiny of the town and county was often there discussed, on winter's nights, over hot flip and brandy slings.

[3] Before its sale to Morrell, this was called Chas. Titus's point and the Grand street ferry was established at a small cove about three chains and three links west of the point, a good place for it, as the point turned the floating ice, or the flood tide from the dock and ferry stairs.

At the time the ferries were established, there was no road to the water side, except the road of the Newtown and Bushwick Bridge Company, which came to the shore at Woodhull's ferry. There was no shore road connecting the two ferries, nor any from the Wallabout to Williamsburgh. The owners of the land fronting on the river, blind to their own interests, refused to have any road opened over their property along the shore. Consequently the ferries could not prosper, their costs exceeded their income, and both owners died in embarrassed circumstances, and with blighted hopes. Subsequently, the ferries were consolidated.

While Messrs. Woodhull and Morrell were at variance, concerning ferries and town names, Gen. Jeremiah Johnson purchased the farm of Charles Titus, 2d, and to his efforts we owe the laying out of the first road along the river. Having business almost every day with his teams on the farm, which compelled him to pass (on sufferance), over the lands of his neighbors, to Williamsburgh, he was much annoyed in passing to and fro, by being obliged to open and shut *seventeen* barred gates, within the distance of half a mile along the shore, where a public road ought to have been from the settlement of the country. He applied to the owners of the land to unite with him in a petition to the legislature, for the passage of an act authorizing them to lay out a two-rod road along the front of their property, from the Wallabout bridge to the Newtown and Bushwick bridge road at Woodhull's ferry. Every one of them refused; persuasion was unavailing, and bars were even increased. With the quiet determination, which was so marked a feature of his character, he resolved that it should be done. He then, himself, made a survey of the line of the proposed road, gave due notice that application would be made to the legislature for a road from the Wallabout bridge to the house of John Van Ranst, at Woodhull's ferry, got up a petition, signed by a few persons, went to Albany, and in a few days returned home with a certified copy of the desired law. Within a month, the road was opened by the commissioners of Brooklyn and Bushwick,[1] and contributed more, perhaps, than any other similar improvement, to the ultimate growth and prosperity of both towns. Its effects were magical. Previously, there had been no communication with Brooklyn by vehicles, except by the Newtown road from the Bushwick Cross roads. Scarcely, however, was this new thoroughfare opened, before the business at the ferry largely increased, and public attention was attracted to the beautiful situation, and many advantages afforded by Williamsburgh.

---

[1] Mr. T. W. Field, in an article on the localities and names of Brooklyn, in the *Corporation Manual for* 1868 (page 467), says of this road as follows: "*Water street.*—The lane leading from the north end of the Wallabout bridge road to the junction of Kyckout. Until 1826, no public road from Williamsburgh, except Cripplebush lane, communicated with Brooklyn. The person who wished to drive from Flushing avenue to South Seventh street ferry passed through a lane across, which seventeen gates and bars obstructed his way. Each of these he must open and close, or if he neglected the latter attention, it was at his peril. A stout Dutch farmer, in a high state of irritation, armed with a formidable black snake whip, was

It is even now, a legitimate matter of surprise, that public attention had not sooner been attracted to this place, "possessing as it does," according to the papers of that day "so many and such superior advantages for the successful prosecution of every species of manufacture and commerce, or for the erection of the most pleasant and convenient private residences in the neighborhood of New York. Situated opposite the very heart of the city, it has a bold water front upon the East river, of a mile and a half in extent, with a sufficient depth for all ordinary commercial purposes. It has, besides, this advantage over Brooklyn, that its entire shore is under the control of its own local authorities."

"From its proximity to the city," says Prime, "it might be supposed to have been the seat of the principal settlement in the first occupation of this region. But it was far otherwise. The first town plot was evidently not far from the present site of the village in Bushwick; and until seventeen years ago [1827], the whole territory now embraced within the limits of this town was occupied in separate farms, the whole number of which was twenty-three; of which ten butted on the river. Besides the farm houses belonging to these several tracts, there were scarcely any tenements, excepting a few small ones on the roads connected with North Second street ferry.

The site of the city rises gradually to the height of about forty-five feet above the level of the adjacent waters. And though it afterwards suffers a depression about a mile from the river, the surrounding lands will furnish sufficient material to raise the

---

an antagonist that would be neither cajoled nor bullied. No alternative would be accepted by the irate proprietor, but to descend from the vehicle, return to the bars, and put them all in place. I have often heard the late Charles De Bevoise relate the details of the difficulties and abuses he encountered, as one of the commissioners to open the first highway across these sixteen farms, from Wallabout bridge to Bushwick creek. The old man spoke sadly and regretfully of the service, as productive of neighborhood bitterness, that almost a third of a century had not allayed."

whole to a desirable elevation. The east part of the city, or upper village, as it formerly was called, a little more than a mile from the ferries, is a peculiarly pleasant and desirable residence. *On the whole, nature seems to have formed this entire territory as the site of a beautiful city.*"[1]

The progress of the village was rapid and encouraging, although it is now difficult to glean from the "dim and misty past," as many details of that progress as we could wish. The Methodist Episcopal church was first organized here in 1807, and its edifice, erected during the following year, was the first place of public worship opened in the village. In 1814, the town numbered a population of 759 persons. About the year 1819, a distillery was established at the foot of South Second street, by the enterprise of Mr. Noah Waterbury;[2] subsequently, in 1820, David Dunham, of Bushwick, donated a lot of ground, 100 by 30 feet, near North First street, for the purpose of erecting upon it a district school house. This, when built, was known as District School No. 3, in the town of Bushwick. The population of the town including the village, at this time, was 934, showing a gain of 175 persons, since the year 1814; of this 365 were white males, 387 white females, and 182 were colored. In July of this year, we find the following advertisement in the *Long Island Star:* "A bear will be shot, on Thursday next, the 20th inst., at 5 o'clock, P. M. at the Fountain inn, Bushwick. The rifle companies of Major Vinton, and Capt. Burns are particularly intended to attend with their music. Green turtle soup will be ready on the same day, from 11 o'clock, A. M. till 10 o'clock, P. M." And in October following, as we learn, three persons were formally indicted at the Kings county general sessions *for bull-baiting at Williamsburgh!* This certainly speaks well for the moral sentiment of the community.

---

[1] *Prime's History of Long Island,* 348, with some slight alterations, demanded by the progress of the village.

[2] Mr. NOAH WATERBURY, whose enterprise has earned for him the appellation of the "Father of Williamsburgh," was born at Groton Falls, Conn., and was the son of Phineas and Elibabeth (Lounsbery) Waterbury. In 1789, being then fifteen years old, he came to Brooklyn, where he learned the trade of a shoemaker. At the expiration of his apprenticeship, being then twenty-one years of age, he, in connection with Henry Stanton, took the Catharine street ferry, previously run by Hunt & Furman, and after carrying it on for a time, entered into the lumber trade, and subsequently established a rope-walk ; In both of which ventures Stanton was his partner. In May, 1819, he removed to Williamsburgh, where he purchased from Gen. Jeremiah Johnson, about one-half an acre of land at the foot of South Second street, on which he erected (with Jordan Coles) a distillery. He afterwards added eight acres of land adjoining, by purchase from Johnson, and laid it out in city lots. Gradually he got into the real estate business, frequently loaned money to the village at times of its greatest financial distress; originated the City Bank, of which he became the first president; was the first president of the board of trustees of 1827, and in many ways promoted the welfare of the village. His life was one of great enterprise, characterized by public spirit and a high degree of integrity.

In April, 1823, the infant village sustained a severe loss in the death of Mr. David Dunham, a merchant and citizen of New York, who was drowned on a voyage down the river from Albany. He was justly considered as a friend and founder of Williamsburgh. The papers of the day say of him that "his efforts in several departments, where the public interest is concerned, were vigilant and unceasing, and their success will be remembered and associated with his name. The Williamsburgh ferry and turnpike, maintained by him, are real and lasting benefits, to the city and to Long Island." He was untiring in promoting steam navigation, and made the bold and before untried and therefore hazardous experiment of sending a steamship to the southern states, to Havana and to New Orleans, and his success established steam communication between New York and other places. "He had materially changed the appearance of Williamsburgh, and was adding constantly to its improvements. He could turn his attention to many subjects; had a number of useful experiments in the train of successful operations; was never disheartened by disappointment, nor diverted from his object by indolence or opposition."—*New York Statesman; Long Island Star*, April 17, 1823.

"In the year 1825," says Garret Furman, Esq.,[1] "the Messrs. Garret & Grover C. Furman, both merchants in the city of New York, purchased twenty-five acres of land in Williamsburgh, beginning on South First street, about one hundred and fifty feet from what is now Grand street, near the corner of Second street, then to South Third street, the width continuing to Sixth street, from Gen. Johnson, at $300 per acre. At this time there was no building on it, but it was all enclosed by a good stone wall, divided into small fields for cultivation and pasturage; and, in one field, the writer remembers there was a fine patch of potatoes. This, at that time, was by many timid and prudent people considered a wild and almost crazy speculation. But it was bought under a conviction that the place must become the same to the upper parts of New York that South Brooklyn (as it had then begun to be called) was then to the lower, which was greatly advanced in value in consequence of the same. But, at that time, they hesitated how to commence; whether to continue it awhile for farming purposes, or otherwise. However, they soon decided and had it surveyed and run into city lots. The next move was to offer the Dutch Reformed congregation one hundred feet square, in any part of the whole tract they liked best; this they accepted with thankfulness and set about erecting the church where it now stands, and lots for private residences began to be inquired after; and now a new difficulty arose, what shall they charge for a lot? However this was soon decided upon. They sold the two first lots to Dr. Cox, at $150 each, after which they sold so fast that they advanced them to $200; and, in less than six months $250, etc. And so it held on until the general decline of property which proceeded the general bankrupt law. But before this place became incorporated, a general regulation of streets took place."

---

[1] *Long Island Miscellanies,* by Rusticus, Gent., page 182.

THE FIRST VILLAGE OF WILLIAMSBURGH.

The progress of improvement was, however, slow, and surrounded with discouragements, which deferred any legal incorporation or organization of the village until the year 1827. Then John Luther and Lemuel Richardson, or rather George W. Pittmore, having purchased sites for two ropewalks between North Third and North Fourth streets, procured a survey of the adjacent lands into streets and lots, and forthwith made application to the legislature for an act, which should confer upon the place the usual village powers.

Accordingly, on the 14th of April, 1827, the legislature passed an act of incorporation, which inaugurated a new era in the history of Williamsburgh. In this act, the boundaries of the village are thus set forth: "Beginning at the bay or river opposite to the town of Brooklyn, and running thence to easterly along the division line between the towns of Bushwick and Brooklyn, to the lands of Abraham A. Remsen; thence northerly by the same to a road or highway, at a place called Sweed's Fly, thence by the said highway to the dwelling house, late of John Vandervoort, deceased: thence in a straight line northerly, to a small ditch, or creek against the meadow of John Skillman; thence by said creek to Norman's kill; thence by the middle or centre of Norman's kill to the East river; thence by the same, to the place of beginning."

The act named the first Trustees, viz: NOAH WATERBURY, ABRAHAM MESEROLE, LEWIS SANFORD and THOMAS T. MORRELL; also, JOHN MILLER, who declined serving.

The first four named took the oath of office before Joseph Conselyea, one of the justices of the peace in the town of Bushwick, April 26th, 1827, and entered on their duties.

The first meeting of the board was held at the house of Van Alst and Cutting, April 30th, when it was organized by choosing Noah Waterbury, president; Abraham Meserole, secretary, and Lewis Sanford, treasurer.

The first official act of the board, was the appointing a meeting on the 4th of May, following, for the granting of excise and tavern licenses. At the day appointed, ten persons named, received excise and tavern licenses, and paid (as per minutes), $10 each, for the benefit of the poor of the town of Bushwick.

At the next meeting of the board, on the 7th of May, the subject of a survey of the village was introduced by the president, and the making of a map of the same. A public meeting was notified to be held on the 23d of May, to determine as to the survey and map, and to raise money to defray the expense. At this meeting, Noah Waterbury was president, and Abraham Meserole, secretary. The proposition of the survey being approved, a map was ordered. Three hundred dollars was granted to cover the expense.

At the next meeting, June 13th, the president stated that Mr. D. Ewen was willing to make the survey and map for $300, which proposition the board accepted, with directions that he commence as soon as possible.

At the next meeting, August 14th, 1827, at the house of the president, the president stated, that he had completed the contract with Mr. Ewen as stated above; the map to exhibit the streets, roads and alleys to be laid out, together with the several parcels of land, and by whom owned, as far as practicable.

The president then stated (as appears at the same meeting), that the survey had been completed and a map drawn as required; which map was produced and approved, and thereupon, the board proceeded to permanently lay out the streets as prescribed thereon.

And here, we cannot refrain from quoting the very just remark of Mr. Prime, in his *History of Long Island*, that, "although there is a great deal of regularity in the plot, it will be a matter of lasting regret, that the streets were not laid out in exact parallels and perpendiculars; and it is difficult to imagine, on what principle, so many veering and converging streets could have been laid down, on a tract of land, that presented no obstacles to a perfectly regular plan. If it were designed to accommodate the existing line of farms, or the few buildings that were previously erected, it must have been a short sighted policy that sacrificed the convenience and beauty of a future city, to the real or imaginary interests of a few individuals. These remarks are made without any knowledge of the views that governed the survey; and are suggested entirely by the fact, that in the whole circuit of the city of New York, there is not a spot of ground of equal extent, where a village *could* have been laid out with such perfect regularity, in both the direction and the grade of the streets, as within the entire limits of Williamsburgh."

September 12, 1827. At a meeting of the board, assessors and collectors were appointed, to assess and collect the $300 voted to pay Mr. Ewen. Jacob Berry, John Luther and Riley Clark, were appointed by the board, assessors, and James Brush, collector.

At the next meeting of the board, the above assessors were ordered without delay to assess all the real estate and tenements in the village. Oct. 13th, 1827, the trustees ordered public notice to be given, agreeable to the charter, for the election of village officers, viz: five trustees, three assessors, one collector, and one treasurer of the village; the poll to be opened at the house of Van Alst & Cutting, the 5th of November following. The assessors and collector before appointed, appeared and took the oaths of office to fulfill said appointments.

At a meeting of the board, November 3d, Ewen's Map was accepted as the permanent map of the village of Williamsburgh.

The first village election was held on the 5th of November, 1327, when the following persons were elected to the several offices named: *Assessors*, Jacob Berry, John Luther, Riley Clark. *Trustees*, Noah Waterbury, Abraham Meserole, Lewis Sanford, Thomas T. Morrell, and Peter C. Cornell. *Treasurer*, John Morrell. *Collector*, James Brush.

Abraham Meserole and Noah Waterbury were the inspectors of this election.

On November 27th, 1827, the first *elected* board of trustees of the village of Williamsburgh met at the house of Peter P. Schenck, when Noah Waterbury was chosen president, and Abraham Meserole secretary for the year then ensuing. Resolved, to hold their regular meetings the first Monday in each month. The president said the board had not been punctual in attendance; meetings had frequently failed of a quorum. A by-law was passed fining those absent $1, unless they gave reasonable excuse.

December 30. Petition presented by John Luther to have North Third street opened, *pitched* and regulated. Resolved, that the prayer of the petitioners be granted, unless objections be made on or before the 31st inst.

1828. January 7th. The opening of North Third street was ordered, and Mr. Ewen was directed to make the profile or grade map.

February 4th. Further measures on opening North Third street. Grade map accepted, making highest point one hundred and twenty-nine feet east of Third street, thirty-one feet above high water, descending towards the turnpike one and a half inches in every ten feet, also the same descent to First street, and about two and a half inches to each ten feet from thence to the river. John Sutphen and others, asked for the opening of North Fourth street, which was deemed inexpedient. Abraham Meserole resigned his office as clerk, and Mr. Daniel S. Griswold was appointed counsellor and secretary to the corporation for the year.

March 3d. Proposals of John and Silas Thayer, for regulating North Third street were accepted, Messrs. Meserole and Sanford were appointed a committee with power to superintend the opening of the street. A petition for opening First street from Brooklyn line to Grand street, was received, and its prayer granted, and Messrs. Meserole and Sanford were appointed a committee with power to carry the resolution into effect.

South Second street from First to Ninth street, and South Fourth street (no limits stated), and South Third street were in like manner, on petition, ordered to be opened, and committees, with power, were appointed. On motion, resolved, that South Eleventh street be erased from the map.

March 12th. Petition for opening First street from Sanford's land to Grand street. Granted. President ordered to procure a common seal for the village, with such design as he shall approve. Streets passed on, ordered to be staked out.

April 7th. Holmes Van Mater remonstrated against the opening of South Second and South First streets beyond Sixth street. North Fourth street, on petition, ordered opened. Committee reported contract with Mr. Ewen for profile and staking out of South Second, South Third, South Fourth, First and North Third streets. The cross streets to be staked out at each corner.

All this shows a commendable degree of enterprise in the village fathers, but it is to be feared that their wisdom was not altogether commensurate with their zeal. Certain it is, that the village was no sooner incorporated than its new authority excited legal and political contentions with the private holders of property, who for the first time became subject to its municipal regulations. For example, the attempt to open First street along the East river front, gave rise to a long and bitter lawsuit between Jordan Coles, as plaintiff, and the newly organized village, in which Coles was partly successful, but the open street remained in the hands of the public. Indeed, it can scarcely be denied, that the new corporation, in the plenitude of their zeal, and their natural desire to assert the importance of their office, were sometimes seduced into the assumption of doubtful powers, and made up in the violent energy of their measures, what they lacked in knowledge and skill, necessary in the management of a municipal government. Another cause, also, tended to this result. The different parcels of property purchased for investment by non-residents and outsiders, quickly attracted the attention of the little coterie of newly fledged speculators, who rendezvoused at the old Fountain Inn, in the days of its decline, and who resolved to get these lands for a mere song, under color of the majesty of the law. Thus, taxation and assessment sales of these lands were instigated by them, with and without law, and the corporation became, unwittingly perhaps, the engine of great officiousness in their attempted inroads upon the rights of private property held by citizens and non-residents. The corporation, indeed, became the cats-paw for domestic speculators in these matters, much to the detriment of the village, inasmuch as it gave rise to great uncertainty as to the titles of lands. Yet the practice continued until probably ten thousand lots were sold for non-payment of taxes or assessment, while there was not law enough in these assessment or tax titles, under which to acquire or hold the lands ! [1]

During this year the *Reformed Dutch church* was first organized in the village.

1829. In January, a public meeting was called to raise money to pay off the village debt. This is the first mention we have seen of a village debt, and it serves as a *milestone* to mark the progress of the new municipality. At said meeting it was voted to raise the sum of $150, out of which the clerk of the board of trustees, was to receive $30 per annum as his salary. The clerk, however, at the next meeting of the board, declined serving for so insignificant a sum, and his place was filled by another. In February, a new post office was established at Williamsburgh, Lewis Sanford being appointed postmaster. In June, ensuing, a public meeting of the inhabitants was held for the purpose of forming a hook and ladder company. During this year, North Third and South Second streets were built, and First street between Grand street, and the Brooklyn line was ordered to be opened.

---

[1] It is said that there are, at this day, but two lots in Williamsburgh, held under these tax titles.

1830. January 21st. A public meeting voted to raise the sum of $250 for current expenses of the village.

During the first of the same month, the trustees of the school District No. 3 (including the village of Williamsburgh) in taking the census of the children, between the ages of five and sixteen, obtained also the following interesting statistics relating to Williamsburgh. The village contained a population of 1007 souls, 532 of whom were males, and 475 females, including 87 blacks. Of these 258 males were over 21 years, and 247 females over 18 years of age, while 271 were between the ages of 5 and 16. There were in the village, 148 dwelling houses, including 10 stores or taverns. There were also 5 separate stores, 59 stables or barns, 5 ropewalks, 2 stone fire-proof store houses, 1 brick ditto, 1 stone and 1 brick storehouse, 1 stone distillery, with a rectifying establishment, 1 brick turpentine distillery, 1 slaughter house, 2 butchers, 1 hay scale and 3 lumber yards. There was also 1 Methodist meeting church, 1 (newly erected) Dutch Reformed church, 1 district school, and 3 private schools. Of the buildings, 8 were vacant and 8 were unfinished. The different occupations of the village were as follows: 5 carpenters, 4 shoemakers, 1 tailor, 3 blacksmiths, 2 wheelwrights, 2 apothecaries, 1 cooper. As an addition to these visible signs of outward prosperity, the Messrs. Morrell had granted a lot for a term of years whereon to erect a village market, and John Luther was building a two-story edifice, the upper part of which designed for the use of the board of trustees, and the lower floor for a market.

1832. In this year, the religious influences and advantages of the village were increased by the establishment of the *Methodist Protestant* church, by a secession from the Methodist Episcopal church here.

1835. A census of the town of Bushwick, inclusive of the village of Williamsburgh, revealed the following statistics: Population 3,314, of which 1,878 were males, and 1,436 females; this number comprised 449 militia, 589 voters, 394 aliens, *one* pauper, 176 persons of color, and a deaf and dumb mute. The number of married females under 45 years of age, was 464; unmarried females between the ages of 16 and 45 years, 226; ditto, under 16 years, 565. There had been, during the preceding year, 10 *marriages;* 70 male and 62 female *births;* 41 male and 18 female *deaths.* There were 2,602 acres of improved lands, 1,189 neat cattle, 404 horses, 10 sheep, 866 hogs. Also, 1 grist mill consuming raw material to the value of $12,000, and producing to the amount of $16,000 annually; 1 distillery consuming $108,300, and producing $113,715; 1 distillery consuming $54,150, and producing $56,857; 1 ropewalk, consuming $60,000, and producing $100,000, another, consuming $80,000 and producing $94,000, another, consuming, $3,000 and producing $4,500, and another consuming $15,000 and producing $22,000, being a total of $398,950 of raw material consumed, with a corresponding amount of $481,272 produced. It was also estimated that 3,000 of the above population, and *all* the manufactories, except the grist-mill, *were within the village limits.*

We may add to the above items, a few additional facts culled from a petition for a bank presented to the legislature, by the village of Williamsburgh, and the towns of Bushwick, Newtown and Flushing, in January, of the succeeding year. The petition states that in 1825, the town of Bushwick had only 958 inhabitants. That in 1827, the village of Williamsburgh was incorporated, and that the assessment roll in 1828 shows

the value of the real estate in the town to have been	$359,675
And the value of the personal estate	47,803
	$407,478

In 1830 with a population of 1620,

the value of the real estate in the town, was	$479,660
the value of personal estate, was	66,590
	$546,250

In 1835, with a population of 3,314 (an increase, within 5 years, of more than 100 per cent) the real estate amounted to	$2,776,825
while the personal estate was	294,056
	$3,070,881

being an increase of 600 per cent within the last three years.

In addition to the manufactories, etc., before mentioned, the report states that there were a variety of smaller establishments, lumber and wood yards, large store houses, etc., together with 72 streets in the village, of which 13 were opened.[1] The number of houses was less than 300. Within the year the prosperity of the place was further enhanced by the establishment of the *Williamsburgh Gazette.*

These facts afford gratifying evidence of the progress which the village had made, and that too, in spite of the machinations of land-jobbers, the errors of its local authorities, and the depressing effects which had necessarily followed the reverses and failure of its first founders. So thought its inhabitants, also, for they began to stir themselves in the matter of procuring an enlargement of their village bounds, and the strengthening of their corporate authority. Upon their application, a legislative act was passed, on the 18th of April, 1835, extending the village limits of Williamsburgh; and another act, authorizing certain persons to erect and maintain docks, in the said village, was also passed on the 22d of the same month. This new village act confided the management of its municipal concerns, to a board consisting of nine trustees, to be annually elected, and of which board, *Edmund Frost* was chosen president. The enterprise and energy displayed by this board, soon inaugurated a new era in the history of the place. Several large and substantial wharves and docks were built, new avenues of trade were opened by the construction of turnpikes, more streets were laid out, and a new ferry, to Peck Slip, New York, was established. This latter enterprise, indeed, carried against the strenuous opposition of New York, contributed, perhaps, more than any one thing else, to increase the population and the prosperity of Williamsburgh. It afforded an immediate and much needed connection between this place and the lower part of New York, which induced many merchants of that city to locate their residences on some of the many beautiful and eligible building sites which crowned the eastern shore of the East river.

---

[1] This year (1835) South Seventh and Eighth streets, were the only ones below Grand street, running from the river, which had been opened; and the entire south side had only five or six dwellings, all told.

1836. During this year a company of gentlemen purchased the Conselyea farm, together with an adjoining estate, traversed by the present Grand street, laid it out, and erected thereon fourteen elegant first class dwellings which they designed as the pattern houses of a new and model city.

The hopes of these second founders of Williamsburgh, were destined to be frustrated, the whirlwind of a commercial crisis swept over them, and the enterprise proved a heavy loss to them. The crisis of which we speak, was the well remembered one of 1837, which fell with peculiar severity upon the rising hopes of Williamsburgh. Since the year 1830, the advance in real estate and population had been unprecedented, and the mania of speculation which possessed every portion of the land, had reached this prosperous village, and turned the heads of its real estate owners. Maps were lithographed, and extensively circulated, whereon the unrivalled opportunities and advantages for profitable investments in a thousand ways, in the thriving village of Williamsburgh, were duly set forth in glowing colors; which uninitiated money men eagerly caught up, until, in 1836, real estate there actually exceeded its present par value. Finally the bubble burst, and in the crash which followed, Williamsburgh, which had been the theatre of some heavy money transactions, suffered deeply, and a perfect business paralysis ensued. For, the revulsion which followed this over excited condition of the popular mind, not only dissipated the golden castles which enthusiastic speculators had painted on the clouds of hope; but seriously shattered the foundations of real and substantial property. Between cause and effect, indeed, there were intervening circumstances which delayed the ultimate catastrophe to collateral investments. Therefore, it was not until 1839 or 1840 that Williamsburgh fully realized that the prestige of her second founders was lost. The fourteen buildings, which were to have served as the patterns of the model city, remained in the upper part of Grand street; but their owners, with a single exception, had fallen victims of the commercial bankruptcy, and were buried beneath the wreck of its desolating storm. These castles, by constraint of law or necessity, passed into the hands of strangers, and the names of their once aspiring lords are only to be ascertained by a laborious search amidst the land records of the county of Kings. " The places that once knew them, shall know them no more," for they abode in them, scarcely long enough to gain a social identity with the people of the prospective town. Here and there, a half finished building, abandoned by its owner, suggested the vanity of all human hopes; while, throughout the whole village, the noise of the axe and the hammer of the workman was unheard. The vast sums of money invested by New York capitalists in Williamsburgh lots had vanished into thin air, since the mortgages given on these lots for a *part* of their purchase money, were, in many instances, double the then market value of the mortgaged premises.

From 1840 to 1844 the court of chancery was busily engaged in clearing away the rubbish of private bankruptcies from investments made in these lots, that they might stand discharged from judgments and liens in the hands of responsible capitalists, and in a condition for improvement. Healthful legislation, and increasing facilities of access gradually restored business to its wonted channels, and the village began to improve. So rapid was its progress, that in less than two years, its population had doubled, and its ultimate position as a city became a fixed fact in the popular mind.

The *Bank of Williamsburgh*, organized under the general banking law, February 9th, 1839, soon existed only in the records of its articles of organization,[1] although it was not to terminate until the year 1940! " This bank charter," says a legal friend, "was something of a curiosity in its way; if not in its literature, at least, in its illustration of the views and characters of its founders. The capital stock was to be $100,000, with power to increase it to $500,000, divided into shares of $50 each. All its powers to be absolutely and irrevocably vested in its board of directors. Its first directors were named, viz: Nicholas Haight, William Powers, John S. McKibbin, John Morrell and Lemuel Richardson, and were to be so classified that a fifth of their number, and all subsequently elected, should continue in office for five years; one-fifth being elected each year. The first election was to be held January 1st, 1840; and directors were each to hold twenty shares of stock, or more, and to appoint the president, cashier, etc. *The directors were to have the authority to determine what number shall be a quorum to transact business*, to make by-laws, etc. Installments of stock not paid on call were to be forfeited to the association. One-half of the capital stock was to be invested in bonds and mortgages, and the other half in the public debt of the United States, or in the stock of any incorporated bank or insurance company of the state of New York. No director or shareholder of the association was to be liable in his individual capacity for any contract, debt, or engagement of the said association." The reader will readily see how easily a few leading speculators could engineer and manage such a concern. The stock, no doubt, was readily taken up, since *cash* seems not to have been necessary for paying it in. Real estate mortgages could be assigned at their face, when their real value was not twenty-five cents on the dollar. United States stock would answer, but that of other bogus banks and insurance companies would answer quite as well.

---

[1] Liber 79, *Conveyances*, p. 250, Kings Co. Registrar's office, date January 1st, 1839.

The bank went begging for a president, for some months, as it was essential to procure some moneyed person who could furnish ready cash to put the machinery in motion. Lemuel Richardson, worthiest among the second founders of Williamsburgh, and the only person among them who (by reason of his modesty in his aspirations for public honors) had escaped bankruptcy, also escaped the snare of this presidency, and in consequence enjoyed a worldly competence for the remainder of his days. Whether the bank ever found a president, we are not informed, but its banking house was established at the corner of First and Grand streets, and a flaunting gilt sign, lettered *Bank of Williamsburgh*, was displayed for a day, and then disappeared. Tradition asserts that the same sign-board, repainted and relettered, afterwards indicated the whereabouts of a much sounder concern, known as Lemuel Richardson's lock factory. Plates for bills were engraved, a few notes were printed and it is even said that *one* was signed, but, *quien sabe?* It is among the mysteries of our history.

Meanwhile, during the period (1835–1844) whose political and financial history we have been tracing, numerous other, and vastly more important improvements were taking place in this community. The social, religious and educational advantages of Williamsburgh were rapidly increasing, and their influence began to be felt even amid the general gloom.

In 1837, the *Episcopal Church*[1] was organized. In 1838, the course of public education, also, received a fresh impulse, and the *Williamsburgh Lyceum* was established. In 1839, the *Baptist* denomination gained a foothold here, under the title of the Williamsburgh Bethel Independent church, now known as the *First Baptist Church of Williamsburgh.* In 1840, the Houston street ferry was put into operation, affording a peculiarly convenient means of transit for those residents employed at the Dry docks in New York, as well as the Novelty works, Morgan's works and other great manufactories on the eastern border of the metropolis. The press of the village was also augmented by the advent of the *Williamsburgh Democrat;* and the year was further signalized by the inception of the first *omnibus* line in the place. It was started, and a single vehicle, at that, by a Mr. Williams, a painter, who resided in South Fifth street, near Twelfth. Unlike the systematic management of the present lines of stages, the first omnibus was driven promiscuously through the different streets, and straggling pedestrians picked up and conveyed to or from the Peck Slip ferry, which was the focus of this new enterprise. Mr. Williams continued the running of his omnibus about six months; when, not having sufficient patronage to defray the incurred expenses, he abandoned the enterprise, and thus the inhabitants of Williamsburgh were again left to their own traveling resources.

---

[1] St. Mark's.

The census of the village at this time showed a population of 5,094, being an increase since 1835, of 2,094.

In 1841, the *Church of the Holy Trinity*, was established by the Roman Catholics, in the Dutch village neighborhood.

This year, also, the first branch of the order of *Odd Fellows*, being the Kings Co. Lodge, No. 45, was established in the village.[1] There were, at this time, only two butchers in the village, Messrs. Barnes and Warren.

In 1842, the *First Presbyterian*, and, in 1843, the *First Congregational* church was commenced.

It was about this time that "the midnight cry" was sounded long and loud through these streets, and not a few were led to believe that the time of the end was near. And, for a number of months in 1843–4, this place seemed to be one of the favorite resorts of the advocates of this false alarm. Here grove meetings were held for many successive days, and hundreds assembled to listen to the warning. Hither the author and high priest of this delusion came for a final visit, just before the expected end, and publicly assured his deceived followers, that, "he had no more doubt, that within ten days' time, he should see Abraham and David and Paul, and all the holy patriarchs and prophets and apostles, coming with the Lord of Glory, than that he was then addressing that assembly." That many were duped into the belief of this false doctrine, cannot be doubted. But how much confidence some of the leaders in this scheme reposed in their own predictions, may be inferred from a fact publicly witnessed in the streets. On the very day, which had been so confidently predicted for the final catastrophe, while the sun was shining in all its brightness from a cloudless sky, a large printed hand-bill, which must have been previously prepared, was set up, announcing a course of lectures on the Second Advent, to commence on some day of the next week, and to be continued in successive weeks. The "time of the end" was then regularly adjourned for a few months, and the poor deluded multitude unhesitatingly deferred their hopes or their fears, to a more distant day. But in a short time, the providence of God reenstamped the seal of falsehood, upon this impious pretense of "knowing the times and the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power."

---

[1] *Prime's History of Long Island.*

In 1844, an amended city charter was adopted, under which three trustees and one collector were chosen for each district.

During the year 1844, the Williamsburgh Lyceum, which had suffered a general decline since May, 1839, was reorganized, and placed on a basis of more importance and benefit to the community. Debates and lectures of a high order of merit, gradually attracted the public attention, and compelled the public interest, until May 13, 1845, it was fully incorporated by act of legislature, and started on its career of usefulness.

Shortly after its reorganization, a number of its members, who were jealous of some supposed sectarian or religious influence or bias of the lyceum, seceded therefrom, and originated a *Mechanics' and Workingmen' Association.* William Frisby was its first president, and John Broach, at different times, its secretary. Although controlled, to some extent, by radicals in politics and religion, yet, on the whole, its influence during its existence, was wholesome. The favorite lecturers before the association were Vale, on astronomy and geology; Fowler, on phrenology; Horace Greeley, on political economy and the interests of labor; and Albert Brisbane, on association. The leading subjects of debate, were: land reform; the abolition of laws for the collection of debt; free trade and tariff; annexation of Texas; theatrical amusements, etc. Thomas A. Devyr was the leading advocate of land reform; Henry B. Robertson and John Broach were found on the side of free labor, and opposed to slavery; while Henry Ruton, and Caleb Pink sustained any absurd side of any question, that promised a free fight and a spirited debate.

The same year (1845), also, the number of religious denominations, represented in the village of Williamsburgh, was increased by the organization of the *First Universalist Church* and society; and the *Williamsburgh Bible Society* was formed.

The census of the town for this year was 11,338, of which 5,565 were males, and 5,773 females. The number of deaths during the preceding year was 187, and the increase of population from 1840 to 1845, was 6,244.

1846. The Episcopal church of *St. James* (colored); *Second Methodist Episcopal Church; First* (German) *Methodist Episcopal* were this year organized here.

1847. The *Green-Point Baptist;* Episcopal *Church of the Ascension; First Bethel* (African) *Methodist Episcopal; St. John's German Lutheran* churches were organized.

1849. The *Williamsburgh Ferry Company*, and *Calvary* (Free) and *St. Paul's* Episcopal, *Green-Point Mission Zion* (colored), and *Third* Methodist Episcopal were organized.

1850. The *Williamsburgh Gas-light Company* was incorporated with a capital of $337,500.

This year the *first Directory* of Williamsburgh was issued by Samuel and T. F. Reynolds. The number of names contained therein was 5,300, population estimated at 30,786 souls; dwelling houses 3,816; and deaths during the previous year 368.

North Sixth Street Presbyterian; and *St. Peter's and St. Paul's Catholic* churches were founded.

The increase of population from 1845 to 1850, was 19,448.

1851. The *Williamsburgh Savings Bank* incorporated.

The *Williamsburgh Dispensary* was organized March 11th; the *Division Avenue Ferry* was commenced.

The second issue of *Reynolds's Directory* contains 5,603 names, an increase of 303 over the previous year. It gives the population of the village for the previous year (1850) 30,786, with 3,816 dwellings and 174 places of industry. Deaths during the preceding year 368.

The *Second Baptist; New England Congregational;* and *Second Reformed Dutch* churches were established.

Williamsburgh now aspired to be a city, and the required charter being drawn up by S. M. Meeker, Esq., village counsellor, received the legislative sanction on the 7th of April, 1851. The election for city offices was held in November following, and the charter went into effect on the 1st of January, 1852. The first officers of the new city were Dr. Abraham J. Berry, *mayor;* William H. Butler, *city clerk;* George Thompson, *attorney and counsel;* James F. Kenny, *comptroller;* Horace Thayer, Edmund Driggs, Thomas J. Van Sant, Daniel Barker (First ward);

Richard White, Absalom Roper, Jesse Hobley, Harris Comstock (Second ward); Daniel Maujer (president of the board), William Woodruff, Andrew C. Johnston, Edwin S. Ralphs (Third ward) *aldermen.*

THE CITY OF WILLIAMSBURGH.

The *Farmers and Citizens' Bank*, with a capital of $200,000, and the *Williamsburgh City Bank*, with a capital of $320,000, and the *Williamsburgh City Fire Insurance Company* were this year incorporated; and the *Williamsburgh Medical Society* was also instituted.

April. The *Green-Point Ferry* was established.

The third issue of the *Williamsburgh Directory* contained 7,345 names, being an increase of 1,742 over those of the previous year. It estimates the population of the city at 40,000.

1853. January. The public school census, taken during this month, of persons between the ages of four and twenty-one years, shows 10,907 whites and 214 colored, total, 11,121. The population of Williamsburgh, at this time, was between 40 and 50,000. The aggregate number of children attending the public schools of the city, during any part of the previous year, was 9,372, of which but 834 had attended the entire school year. Fifteen private schools were also reported, with an attendance of about 800.

March. The *Williamsburgh City Missionary Society* was organized.

The *Young Men's Association*, connected with the Third street Presbyterian church; the *Fulton Insurance Company*, with a capital of $150,000, and the *Mechanics' Bank of Williamsburgh*, with a capital of $250,000 were this year established; also, the *Third* (colored) *Baptist* church; *Grace* (Protestant Episcopal) church; *First Mission* Methodist Episcopal church; *German Evangelical Mission* church; the Catholic church of *St. Mary of the Immaculate Conception; St. Paul's* (German) *Lutheran* church.

The annual report of the visitors of the New York Sabbath School Union gives the following statement of the condition of the *Sabbath Schools* of Williamsburgh, viz: there were 25 schools of every different denomination, numbering 466 teachers, average attendance 387; 4,600 scholars registered, with an average attendance of 3,239; 6,297 volumes in sabbath school libraries; missionary contributions $386. Infant class scholars (included above) 465. In the town of Bushwick there were 10 different schools; 98 teachers, average attendance 84; 702 scholars, average attendance 472; 1,190 volumes in the libraries; $40 given to missionary purposes, and 55 in infant classes.

1854. February. The *Children's Aid Society* was organized.

October 10th. The *Exempt Firemen's Association of the City of Brooklyn* (*Eastern District*) was revived and reorganized.

December. The *Howard Benevolent Society* was organized, connected with the Third Unitarian Congregational church.

The *Young Men's Literary Association*, and the *Young Men's Christian Association* of Williamsburgh, were organized during this year.

The *Bushwick Avenue* Baptist church; *Third Unitarian* church; *Second Congregational* Methodist church; *Graham Avenue Protestant* Methodist church; *Ainslie Street* Presbyterian church; *German Evangelical* Lutheran, were also organized.

The Political History of Williamsburgh, Prior to the Consolidation.

Previous to the year 1840, national politics did not materially affect or influence the local affairs of the village, and indeed the only local parties known here, arose from the conflicting interests of different speculators. The contest of 1840, however, with its log-cabin celebrations, its libations of hard cider, and its songs of "Tippecanoe and Tyler too," made political acquaintances of those who came from distant sections of this country, and from foreign lands, to people our new city. Williamsburgh then contained about 5,000 inhabitants, a community not too large to be thoroughly canvassed in a close contest. The foreign element in this population was increasing in relative strength, and the appeals made to its partisan proclivities during the late contest had made it impudent in its demands, and insolent towards the native population. So Williamsburgh became agitated with the antagonisms of "native Americans" against "bloody furriners," and in the elections of 1842, the Log-cabin party of 1840, were nearly all identified with the American party. This new-fledged party seized the reins of power in New York, and became the dominant party in Williamsburgh. But a small band of politicians, adhering to the old whig regime of 1840, resisted all the encroachments of the new faith; and the awkward fist made by the native American rulers in New York, certainly gave prestige and some show of propriety to the straight whig organization of Williamsburgh. The straight whig leaders foresaw in the approach of the presidential contest of 1844, the occasion that would only retain them as leaders, and give them the great bulk of the old whigs of 1840 as their followers. The result of that contest is known; it, however, gave to the straight whig leaders of the place, a position of influence in its local councils.

With the variable and fluctuating population which surrounded them, it was easier to get position, than to retain it, hence the leaders cast about them for allies and voters who would follow their lead. They discovered that the fire department of the village, numbering among its membership many young men full of fun and frolic, might make up the much desired controlling majority in the elections. The fire department, therefore, immediately became the object of special favor and care with these astute whig leaders. New engines and apparatus were ordered at the public expense; sometimes, even, without the formality of a vote of the board of trustees of the village, and political death was threatened to any one who should venture to suggest a due regard to public economy, against any demand, however unreasonable, which should be made by the fire department, or by politicians in their behalf. The policy thus inaugurated by the whig party of Williamsburgh was identically the same which they had denounced in the former days of Jackson and Van Buren, viz: of rewarding political friends at the expense of the public treasury, and of punishing their enemies by paying them out of money derived through taxation from the pockets of their antagonists. The demoralization of the masses which resulted from this action of the whig leaders, was undoubtedly worse in its effects upon the progress and prosperity of Williamsburgh, than a similar result from the opposite party, who recited no aphorisms of honorable patriotism from the lips of national statesmen, but boldly flaunted the banner, upon which was inscribed "plunder and spoils." It was not to be expected of a party who had always maintained so high a profession of political honor, but it was true that these whig leaders repelled public inquiry into their actions, brow-beat the tax-payers when they complained, and broke down that high sense of propriety in public office and trusts, which had been the glory of the party since the days of John Quincy Adams. The fire department of the village was understood to be the tool of their ambition, purchased by largesses and extravagant outfits at the expense of the tax-payers. And thus the moral sense of the community, and a wholesome public opinion, the best safeguards to public interest, were broken down, and assurance was given to the mercenary hordes of self-styled *reformers*, who succeeded them, and plundered the public treasury of bushels of silver. The whig party may be held responsible for much of the subsequent misrule which characterized the history of Williamsburgh as a village and a city, inasmuch as they effectually broke down the public faith in political honesty, and forced upon the public mind a conviction that venality and corruption were to a certain extent a necessary part of civil government. Indeed the final catastrophe, by which the city of Williamsburgh lost its identity and became merged in the city of Brooklyn, was in some degree a result of this public faithlessness in political virtue, engendered by the career of the whig party of this place. For, the misrule and troubles to which Williamsburgh was subjected by its rulers, and the impression that no change could make matters any worse, but, possibly, better, contributed greatly to the movement of consolidation with Brooklyn.

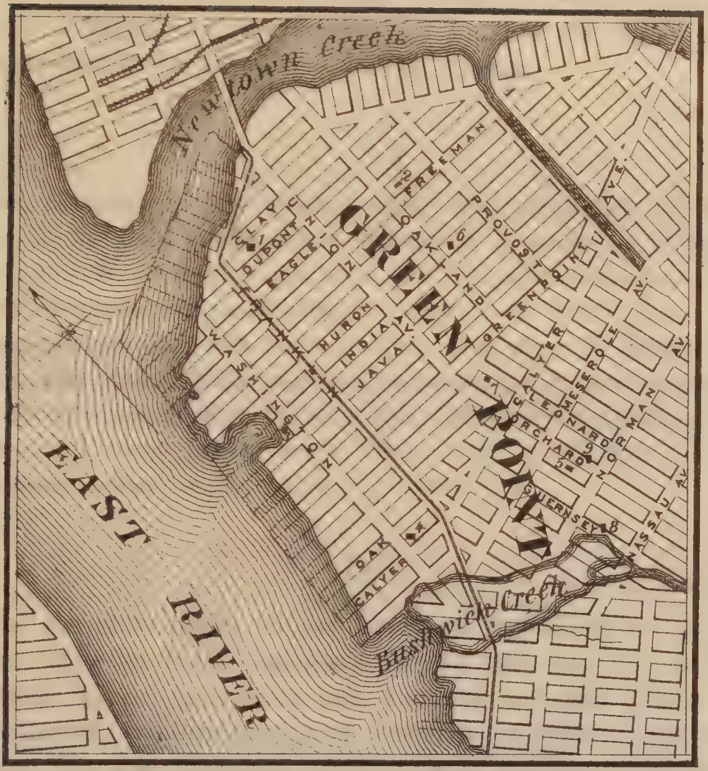
CHAPTER X.

GREEN-POINT.

Isolated by its peculiar position between Newtown and Bushwick creeks, and occupied only by a few large farms, Green-Point or Cherry-Point, as it was formerly called, may be said to have enjoyed an almost separate existence from the rest of the old township of Bushwick. It contained, during the Revolutionary period, and for years after, only five (Dutch) families, each having its own dwelling house, its own farm and its own retinue of jolly negroes in field and kitchen.

I.

On the shore of Newtown creek, on present Clay street, between Union and Franklin avenues, resided *Jacob Bennett;* whose father, then quite an old man, owned and lived upon a farm, on the opposite side of the creek, which he subsequently gave to his son-in-law, Mr. Hunter, from whom it derived its present name of *Hunter's Point.* It is related of this Jacob Bennett, that he was awakened one night, during the war, by one of his father's negroes who had crossed the creek with news that a party of British marauders were robbing the old man's house. Calling to his aid his neighbor Abraham Meserole and John A., his son, together with all the negroes at hand, they hurried across the creek to the rescue; and, having cut off the enemy's retreat, by destroying their boats, they pursued them to the meadows, where they overtook them in a sinking condition, being much hampered with some $6,000 which they were endeavoring to carry off. Most of the plunderers escaped, but the officer in command was caught and deprived of his sword, which would have been the instrument of his instant decapitation at the hands of a negro of the party, had



MAP OF GREEN POINT.

1. *Bennett House. (afterwards owned by John Meserole.)*
2. *Provost House.*
3. *John A. Meserole's House, now occupied by Mr. Neziah Bliss.*
4. *Jacobus Calyer's House.*
5. *Peter Meserole's House. (now occupied by his sons Wm. M., & Adrian.)*
6. *The Provost Burial Place.*
7. *Peter Calyer's House.*
8. *Capt. John Meserole's House.*
9. *The old Jacob Meserole House. (Father of Peter.)*

it not been for the timely interference of John A. Meserole, whose son, Archibald K. Meserole, still treasures the weapon as an interesting family relic. Some years after the war, another Bennett house was erected near the present bridge, and was subsequently sold to a Yankee by the name of Griffin, but this, likewise, has disappeared before the march of improvement.

II.

On the edge of the meadows near the north-east corner of present Oakland and Freeman streets, on premises since owned by James W. Valentine, stood the old *Provost* dwelling previously mentioned (page 323) as the original Capt. Peter Praa house. This venerable building, was built of stone, and, after its desertion by the family, about 1833, met an untimely fate by fire, caused by the carelessness of some negroes who had taken possession of it. The old Provost family burial place is still in existence, at the north-east corner of India and Oakland streets.

III.

On the river bank, on premises now owned by Mr. Neziah Bliss (between India and Java streets) was the old *Abraham Meserole* house, built over one hundred and fifty years ago, although the western portion of it is of more modern date, about 1775. The then proprietor, who was the grandfather of Archibald K. Meserole, was born in 1725, and died near the close of the century, leaving his son, John A., in possession. This John A., born in 1752, had the misfortune to experience the cruelties of the British as a prisoner in their dungeons at New York, during the Revolution. He survived its horrors, however, and reared a large family, dying at a ripe old age, in 1833. His family, also, suffered much from the Hessians, a troop of whom were quartered in the house, and made free with all the live stock upon the farm, with the exception of one cow, which the family succeeded in hiding back in the woods, in a nook, since occupied by S. D. Clark's grocery store.

Upon this estate was erected, in later times, a building known as the Baisley house, which was used for many years as a tenant house for the farm. It still stands on H, near Franklin street, and is occupied by Moore the marble man.

IV.

Just beyond the woods on the site of Mr. Samuel Sneeden's late residence (Colyer near and east of Washington street) stood the house of old *Jacobus Colyer*, the worthy ancestor of all of that name in this vicinity. He died in 1804, full of years, and remembered with respect by all who knew him. The house was, at one time, in possession of Purser Thomas, of the United States navy.

After the Revolution, a son of Peter Colyer built a house on the west side of Leonard, now Colyer street, and which was subsequently destroyed by fire.

V.

Next, and the last of the series of these originals, was the residence of *Jacob Meserole*, which yet stands near Bushwick creek (Lorimer street near Norman avenue) embosomed in trees and shrubbery, a pleasant memorial of the olden time, and is occupied by William M. and Adrian Meserole, the grandsons of the Revolutionary proprietor. They were the sons of Peter, and their uncle John, after the Revolution, erected a residence for himself on the same original farm, on Guernsey street, about one hundred and fifty feet south of Norman avenue. This house was burned afterwards.

These five buildings, with their barns and barracks, and the old slate-enclosed *powder house*, below the hill,[1] on the spot since covered by Simonson's ship-yard, and which was afterwards removed as an undesirable neighbor, constituted the whole of Green-Point settlement. It must have presented, in those far-off days, a charming picture of Arcadian simplicity and comfort. Shut out from the world, as it were, yet only separated from the city by the East river, the residents of this quiet farming district pursued their daily avocations, unambitious of office, oblivious of the rise of real estate and the advantages of town lots; sociable, hospitable, contented. We may fancy the hum of the spinning wheel; the ring of the harvest blades; the lowing of the sleek cattle browsing in the meadows or cooling their sides at the edges of the creeks; the shrill blasts of the dinner horn calling the men from the field; the thwack of the flails upon the barn floor, keeping time to the whistle or the rude ditty of the negro; the long social evening chats around the open fire-place, where half a (modern) cord of wood blazed out its wondrous comfort; the receptions of the old domine and his vrouw, from Bushwick, when the best room was opened and the boys said their catechism in fear and trembling, while Cuffee gave the pony a round mess of oats from the *lean to;* the quilting parties and the frolics and suppers that followed, and the sparking of the young folks when the old folks had retired. All these things we can *fancy;* but the imagination is powerless to describe the smooth and mellifluous cadences of the language which gave life to these old tenements and sounded from neighbor to neighbor as, for example, "*Hoe vaart gij? Zijt gij wel? Is uw huisgezin gezond? Ja, wij zijn allen wel. Welkom vriend, wij zijn blijde u te zien. Kom in en groet mijn vrouw.*" How beautiful! ne'er shall we hear the like again — what a pity!

---

[1] A bluff, some sixty feet higher than the present grade, and near the site of the present Francis's Metallic Life-boat factory.

A peculiar lack of facilities for communication with the outside world, contributed largely to the isolation which we have mentioned as characteristic of Cherry Point. The only road from there to any place, began at old Abraham Meserole's barn, ran diagonally across, north-east to the east end of F street, then past the Provost premises, then south to Willow Pond (now Metz's chemical factory, north side India, east of Union avenue), thence along the meadow to Wyckoff's woods, so to old Bushwick church to the Cross Roads, and from that point "round Robin Hood's barn" to Fulton Ferry, where the wearied traveler embarked in a ferry-scow for Coenties slip, at the city, and was thankful if he arrived there in safety, it being a little more than he had reason to expect.

As for going to Astoria, it has been described as being something like taking a journey to the Moon, there being no road thither, until the erection of the penny-bridge in 1796, which let the people out into the mysteries of the island, and left them to feel their way around in the woods to Astoria. Each farmer, however, owned his boat with which he conveyed produce to the New York market; and, for all practical purposes of intercommunication with each other or with their friends in Newtown, Bushwick or Brooklyn, they used the boat much more frequently, perhaps, than the road.

The modern history of Green-Point dates from the year 1832, at which time there appeared in that quiet and almost forgotten neighborhood, a live Yankee, *Neziah Bliss*, by name, who married into one of the original Dutch families of the point; and, with the proverbial energy and tact of his race, soon began to develop the hitherto unimagined resources of that locality. Henceforth, the history of Green-Point was identical with that of Neziah Bliss.[1]

In the year 1832, he purchased, in connection with Dr. Eliphalet

---

[1] NEZIAH BLISS, son of Samuel (and grandson of Dr. Neziah Bliss, an eminent and wealthy citizen of Tolland county, Conn., which county he represented for many successive years in the state legislature), was born in May, 1790, at Hebron, Conn. Thrown, at an early age, upon the world, through the improvidence of his father, young Bliss first went, in 1807 to New Haven, where he became a clerk in a store. In 1810, he removed to New York city, where he made the acquaintance of Robert Fulton, then at the height of his fame as the inventor of steam boats. At his house he was a frequent and welcome visitor, and even now speaks with pleasure of the instruction which Fulton was always ready to give, and the lively interest which he ever manifested in his young friend's progress. Full of the subject of steam navigation, he went, in the fall of 1811, to Philadelphia, where, in the following spring he became concerned with Daniel French in the organization of a company to build a little steam boat. This vessel was about sixty feet long, by twelve feet wide, and was constructed with an oscillating engine and a stern-wheel, which Bliss judged to be best adapted to avoid the drift wood which formed so serious an impediment to the navigation of the western waters. This little boat was, for some time, employed as a ferry boat between Philadelphia and William Cooper's landing. About the same time, also, Mr. Bliss became intimately acquainted with Oliver Evans, since known as the originator of mill machinery, elevators, coolers and rail roads, and was concerned with him in many of his earlier experiments with rails, etc. During his residence in Philadelphia, Mr. Bliss was employed, as a clerk, in a book store and in other pursuits.

In 1816 he went to Cincinnati, and in 1817 made the acquaintance of the eldest son of Gen. Wm. H. Harrison, afterward president of the United States; and together

JEZIAH BLISS,

(OF GREENPOINT

Nott, some thirty acres of the John A. and the Peter Meserole farm, and, in 1833, he bought the Griffin farm at auction. During the following year, he had the whole of Green-Point surveyed, at his own expense, laying it out in streets and lots, and running the lines so as to connect with the adjacent village of Williamsburgh. In 1835, he became the owner of the Hunter (Point) farm, having an eye to the projected removal of the United States Navy Yard from Brooklyn to Green-Point. These negotiations, at one time in a state of great forwardness, were finally frustrated; and, all but twelve acres of his Green-Point property was lost to Mr. Bliss by the manœuvres of certain parties concerned with him in these transactions. Undaunted by these trials and untiring in his efforts to improve the condition of the place, he built, in 1838, a

---

with him became interested in the organization of a company for the construction of another steam boat. This boat, named the General Pike (in honor of Gen. Zebulon Montgomery Pike, who was killed at the battle of York, and who was the father-in-law of young Harrison), was one hundred feet long and twenty-five feet wide; was the first boat ever built at Cincinnati, and the sixth built upon the western waters, although the only one at that time running, and ran between Cincinnati and Louisville, Ky. The only ship builder whose services could at that time be procured in Cincinnati was one Brooks, from the state of Maine, who had previously been engaged in building sloops, while the other carpenters employed upon the work had to be selected from common house joiners. The engines were constructed by a Mr. William Greene, an engineer of that city, from plans and specifications furnished mostly by Mr. Bliss, who, also, assisted Greene in establishing a foundery in which to cast them. The boat was first run in 1819, performed tolerably well, and made money for its owners. In 1820, Bliss sold out his interest, went to New Orleans, and in 1821, entered the state of Missouri. Here, providing himself with horse, saddle and bridle and with no companion but a guide he followed the trail described by Schoolcraft in his *View of the Mines and Resources of Missouri,* and visited the now celebrated Iron Mountain of Missouri. Becoming deeply impressed with the immense resources which might there be developed, he, with the aid of his friend Ex-Governor Gen. Clarke, procured the passage of a legislative act, authorizing a loan of $50,000, for the term of twelve years, without interest, for the purpose of manufacturing iron from the Iron Mountain. He immediately entered into arrangements with parties from Ohio, to prosecute the work, but a serious illness which attacked him, and the protracted debility which followed it, forced him to abandon the further prosecution of his project, which is now being realized in the mines of the Iron Mountain. In 1823, Mr. Bliss purchased a steam saw-mill at St. Louis, Mo., where for a time, he sawed hard timber, but at length made a trip up to Prairie-du-Chien, in the first steam boat which ever ascended to that point, with the intention of procuring pine timber from the Indian lands not ceded to the United States government. On arriving there, foot bridge, across Bushwick creek, at a cost of about $800, a considerable portion of which was furnished by himself. About the same time he secured a new survey of the point and the incorporation of a road sixty feet wide across the lower end of Green-Point, and along the line of present Franklin street, called the Ravenswood, Green-Point and Hallet's Cove turnpike, at an expense of $20,000, which was opened in 1839, and was subsequently continued to Williamsburgh. The road, however, was not, by any means, as level as the present Franklin street; it had its ups and downs, some of them pretty formidable, so that, indeed, even as late as 1853, the reply given to the traveler inquiring for Williamsburgh might properly have been "over the hills, and far away." Still, the turnpike was the opening door to Green-Point's future growth. Then, and not before then, streets and house lots

---

however, he found that express orders from government had preceded him, against his being allowed to procure the timber, and he consequently returned homeward, visiting, on his route, Galena, Ill., then a hamlet consisting of a few miners' log cabins. Arriving at St. Louis, he disposed of his mill, and went, in the fall of 1824, to New Orleans. During the ensuing winter he went to Oupelousas, La., where he organized a company for steam boat navigation between that point and New Orleans. The boat was built at Cincinnati, and successfully run on its intended route, passing down stream, through the Bayou Placquemine, a distance of eleven miles, *stern foremost!* This boat, the Oupelousas, was the first on this part of the Mississippi. On returning, in 1827, to New York, Mr. Bliss received and partially accepted a flattering proposition to go to Mexico as an agent of the Baring Brothers, of London, England. At this juncture he became acquainted with Dr. Eliphalet Nott, formerly president of Union College, New York, with whom he was engaged during part of 1827 and '28 in certain experiments in steam navigation. In 1831, Mr. Bliss established the now celebrated Novelty works, in New York city, with the view of constructing sea steamers. In 1832, he purchased the property then known as Stuyvesant's cove, just above the present Novelty works, in New York island; and, in connection with Dr. Nott, became the owner of thirty acres of the John Meserole farm in Green-Point, L. I., within the present city of Brooklyn, where his present residence is; and, in the fall of the same year he married Mary A., daughter of John A. Meserole, Esq., by whom he has six children.

From this point his history becomes incorporated with that of Green-Point, which he has seen grow up from a few farms to a populous village, and subsequently to a beautiful and promising ward of the third city of the Union. Surrounded by innumerable evidences of his own large-hearted foresight, and the results of his own fostering care; crowned with the honors of a well spent lifetime; and enjoying the affection of a large family, and the respect of his fellow citizens, he well merits the position which is unanimously accorded to him, as "the Patriarch of Green-Point."

began to be a reality, on the basis (with the exception, much to be pitied, of the farms on the southern and south-western part of the point) of Mr. Bliss's survey of 1834. The first house builder was John Hillyer, the mason, who boldly broke ground in the field, about forty rods from the present Dutch Reformed Church on I street, in November, 1839; the edifice, a substantial brick one, being sufficiently completed to admit of his occupying it with his family, in June of the following year. A few months after Mr. Brightson commenced building on two lots in J street, in the rear of Doan's present meat market; and almost simultaneously, three other buildings were begun (1) the house now occupied by Benton, the grocer. A colored man purchased sixteen lots there for $50 a lot, put up the house and sold the whole premises, about 1842, for $2,300. The building soon became an inn, well remembered by the oldest inhabitants of Green-Point as Poppy Smith's tavern; (2) the residence of Mr. Archibald K. Meserole, on the hill (north side of Eagle street between Franklin and Washington streets), since occupied by Collyer, the ship builder, and (3) the store house, afterwards Vogt's paint shop, built by Cother & Ford for A. K. Meserole. And now the dwellers in New York fairly got wind of Green-Point and its advantages, and the houses came so thick and fast that it is entirely beyond the powers of the most active historian to keep track of their erection. Many of these houses stood up on stilts, bearing very much the appearance of having been commenced at the roof and gradually built downward, a sufficient number of stories being appended to reach the ground. This style of building, peculiarly characteristic of Green-Point in the earlier days, obtained mostly on the locality known by the people of that day as the Orchard, and, also, in J, Washington and Franklin streets, and was rendered necessary by the extreme depth of the *mud*, always the great drawback of the place.

Trade, also, put forth its initiatory efforts at the store house, before alluded to, as Vogt's paint shop. At this country store, centered the literary, political and speculative interests of the point; it was, in short, *the* gossip-place. Its first proprietor retired from the store, in disgust, after two months experience; and was succeeded by David Swalm, whose success attracted, in November, 1843, the attention of some burglars, the first criminal event which the faithful historian of Green-Point must chronicle. The *first coal yard* was opened at the foot of F street, on the East river, at the projection of the shore, from which Green-Point originally derived its name. This coal establishment, in 1849, was purchased by Abraham Meserole, who transferred the business to the corner of J and Franklin streets, under the firm name of A. K. & A. Meserole. The coal yard was speedily followed by other lines of industry, and by various manufactories.

Religion brought its benign influences to bear upon the inhabitants of the rapidly increasing settlement, in the guise of a sabbath school, which was convened, during the fall of 1845, in the basement of Clark Tiebout's house in Franklin street, adjoining Doan's market. It was a union of all denominations, and exceedingly small at that, and its first superintendent was William Vernoon. It soon outgrew its original accommodations and was removed to the then new school house on the hill; but the school trustees of the district, fearful, perhaps, of even an incipient union of church and state, refused the use of the building, and the sabbath school became, awhile, a traveling institution, locating for a season in the old Provoost barn (Freeman near Oakland street), and, finally, in 1846, in the loft of D. Swalm's store. Here regular sabbath services were held, under the auspices of the various evangelical denominations, except the Episcopalian, which had already made a beginning here in 1846. The Methodist, Baptist and Reformed Dutch commenced their distinctive church organizations in 1847, and were followed by the Universalists and Roman Catholics in 1855.

The honorable profession of *medicine* was first represented in Green-Point by Dr. Snell, a regular Dutchman, from Herkimer county, N. Y., who settled here in 1847. He was followed in 1850, by Dr. Job Davis, and he, in turn, by Doctors Peer and Hawley, Heath, Wells, and others.

The first squire and constable of which the place could boast, were appointed about 1843. Just in the nick of time, too; for, one day, the quiet of Green-Point was suddenly invaded by a large party of men and boys, bears and dogs, who had come over from

New York, determined to have a regular *bear* fight for their own diversion and the instruction of this old fashioned community. The theatre selected for their sport was an old barn in the rear of the lot now occupied by David Morris in India street, and that gentleman, undertaking to order them off the premises, was set upon by the dogs, and forced to beat a hasty retreat. The stakes were finally driven down, and the bear fight enjoyed, in the field near the late residence of Harvey E. Talmadge in Eagle street. And the occasion was graced by the presence of the squire and the constable, with their staves of office, to see fair play.

Education found a pioneer in Green-Point in Mrs. Masquerier, who, in 1843, first collected some twenty or thirty of the little sprigs of humanity into her house, and taught their young ideas how to shoot. This kind hearted woman's ministrations were finally supplanted, by the public school system; and in 1846, a school-house was erected on the hill east of Union avenue between Java and Kent streets, and which was first presided over by Mr. B. R. Davis. This was the commencement of No. 22, which will be spoken of elsewhere and more at length.

Green-Point, also, has had its literary and social organizations, the most notable of which was the *Social, Literary and Christian Union of the Reformed Dutch Church of Green-Point*, which flourished about the year 1856. It was popularly known as the Dutch Baby, and was a lively infant while it lived. The *Sewanhaka Club*, of the present day, is an organization which has not neglected its opportunities of social enjoyment, or of generous beneficence to the needy and distressed.

In 1850, a ship yard was established by Mr. Eckford Webb (since Webb & Bell); and the first vessel constructed by them was a small steamer called the Honda, which was made to ply upon the Magdalena river of South America. Since that day, the talented builder has constructed many a vessel which has borne his reputation to various quarters of the globe. Other ship yards were established, until ten or twelve were at one time in active operation, turning out every variety of craft, from the humble skiff to the largest wood and iron steamers.

In September, 1852, the Francis' Metallic Life Boat Company was incorporated, with a capital of $250,000, and erected a large and commodious factory. They had a successful career, until the repeal, by congress, of that section of the steam boat law, respecting life-boats, when the demand fell off, and so did the company.

Returning, however, from our digressive remarks concerning the first outcroppings of civilization, social, political, commercial, educational and religious, which followed Mr. Bliss's creation of a turnpike communication with the rest of the world, we may state that having thus placed Green-Point *en rapport* with Williamsburgh and Bushwick, he next turned his attention to ferry accommodations. Previously all water communication with the city had been by means of skiffs, at a charge of four cents per passenger, but Mr. Bliss finally succeeded, after three years endeavor, in securing from the corporation of New York a lease dated in 1850. The ferry was established in 1852, and was soon after transferred to the hands of Mr. Shepard Knapp, who still retains it at its original location from the foot of Green-Point avenue to the foot of Tenth street, New York. Having purchased a large tract of land in Queens county, then called Dutch Kils, but now named Blissville, in his honor, Mr. Bliss next set on foot the Green-Point and Flushing Plank Road from the ferry, which road was intended to be united with the Astoria and Flushing railroad, about half a mile this side of the latter place. In consequence, however, of the opposition of some Dutch farmers along the proposed route, the road was never finished according to the original design, but turned off and united with the Williamsburgh and Newtown road at the end of Calvary Cemetery. Its cost was over $60,000 (including the bridge), and it was first traveled in the summer of 1854. In 1853 the Green-Point Gas Light Company was incorporated, with a capital of $40,000; and the patronage, at the outset, of *twenty-six customers!* Mr. Bliss co-operated actively with the company in getting their works erected; and, in 1856, was chosen alderman (under the consolidation) for the purpose of furthering this and other matters of local interest in Green-Point, and held this position during 1857 and '58.

Previously to 1855, those who did not choose to walk to their homes on the point, from the Williamsburgh bridge, entrusted themselves to the mercies of an old omnibus, and generally found themselves, when the ruts were bad (as they generally were) pretty well shaken up before they reached their own doors. So, when the City Railroad Company ran their cars through Williamsburgh, to the bridge over Bushwick creek, Mr. Bliss coaxed them along, step by step, until he got them over said bridge; and, now Green-Point shares the full measure of benefit derived from a rapid, cheap, and easy communication with other parts of the city of Brooklyn.

"Within the last two or three years," says a writer in the *Brooklyn Times*, of December 1, 1868, "manufacturing interests of considerable magnitude have sprung up in this suburban locality, and several large and substantial buildings for manufacturing purposes are now in course of completion. Some of these employ several hundred hands, thus enabling many to avail themselves of their labor, their sole capital, in providing the comforts of a home and the means of happiness.

"The large accession of productive industry, and the superior facilities for carrying on business in this favored locality, have naturally and rapidly increased the population of the ward, and a still further demand for houses and homes is the result. But the enterprise of our citizens is equal to the emergency, and from seventy-five to one hundred houses, many of them first-class, and all good, are now being constructed, and will be ready for occupation when the early spring returns. And it is not to be wondered at that so many seek this section. Its natural advantages and attractions account for it. It has churches and public schools, commodious and convenient, with cheaper rents, better air, and plenty of Ridgewood water. It has two rail roads and two ferries, to facilitate travel; and a discount and a savings bank, for the accommodation and security of all in their money transactions.

"The *Green-Point Savings Bank* was chartered at the last session of the legislature. The want of an institution of this kind has been felt here for a long time. The population of the ward, which now numbers some 25,000, with the growing and thriving vicinities of Blissville and Hunter's Point east and north of us, embraces a population of nearly an equal number, and is a guaranty at once of the prosperity and success of a savings bank."

CHAPTER XI.

THE CONSOLIDATED CITY OF BROOKLYN.

(Jan. 1st, 1855—Jan. 1st, 1869).

1855. January 1st. Under the charter granted by the legislature, on the 17th of April, 1854, providing for the consolidation of the cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburgh and the township of Bushwick, BROOKLYN entered upon a new phase of its civic existence. By a singular coincidence, *George Hall*, who had been the first mayor of the original city of Brooklyn, was the first mayor of the consolidated city; and, from his inaugural address to the common council of the new municipality, we extract the following succinct comparison between its *past* and *present* :

"It is now twenty-one years," says Mr. Hall, "since I was called by the common council to preside over the affairs of the late city of Brooklyn, then first ushered into existence. The population of the city, at that time, consisted of about 20,000 persons residing for the most part within the distance of about three-quarters of a mile from Fulton Ferry. Beyond this limit, no streets of any consequence were laid out, and the ground was chiefly occupied for agricultural purposes. The shores, throughout nearly their whole extent, were in their natural condition, washed by the East river and the bay. There were two ferries by which communication was had with the city of New York, ceasing at twelve o'clock at night. There were, within the city, two banks, two insurance companies, one savings bank, fifteen churches, and three public schools. Two newspapers were published in it, both of which were of weekly issue. Of commerce and manufactures it can scarcely be said to have any, its business consisting chiefly of that which was requisite for supplying the wants of its inhabitants. Sixteen of its streets were lighted with public lamps, of which number thirteen had been supplied within the then previous year. The assessed value of the taxable property was $7,829,684, of which $6,457,084 consisted of real estate, and $1,372,600 of personal property.

"Williamsburgh was incorporated as a village in 1827. Its growth was comparatively slow until after the year 1840. At the taking of the census in that year, it was found to contain 5,094 inhabitants, and since that time it has advanced with almost unparalleled rapidity, having attained a population of 30,780, in 1850. It was chartered as a city in 1851.

"Within the comparatively short period of twenty-one years, what vast changes have taken place. Bushwick from a thinly settled township has advanced with rapid strides, and yesterday contained within its limits two large villages, together numbering a population of about 7,000 persons. Williamsburgh, from a hamlet became a city with about 50,000 inhabitants. Brooklyn, judging from its past increase, yesterday contained a population of about 145,000 persons, and on this day the three places consolidated into one municipal corporation, takes its stand as the *third* city in the empire state, with an aggregate population of about 200,000 inhabitants.

"The superficial extent of area included within the city limits is about 16,000 acres [or 25 square miles]. The extent in length of the city, along the water front is 8½ miles, along the inland bounds 13½ miles, and between the two most distant points in a straight line 7¾ miles, and its greatest width 5 miles. Within these limits 516 streets have been opened for public use, old roads have been discontinued and closed, hills have been levelled, valleys and low lands filled up, old landmarks have disappeared, and almost the whole surface of the city has been completely changed. There are in the old city of Brooklyn 19,576 buildings, of which 13,582 are occupied solely as dwellings, and 3,225 as stores and dwellings. I have been unable to ascertain the number in Williamsburgh and Bushwick. Of nearly 700 streets surveyed and laid out on the Commissioner's map, 516 were opened. Thirty miles of rail road track, exclusive of those of the Long Island rail road companies, have been laid, and are in use upon the streets of the city. Besides there are 12 lines of stages, or omnibusses. The city, to a great extent, is lighted by gas, supplied by the Brooklyn and Williamsburgh Gas Light Company, who have laid and are using 95 miles of pipes along the streets. The streets are supplied and lighted with public lamps, numbering in the aggregate 3,766, of which 2,609 are gas lamps. Thirteen sewers have been constructed, extending in length five miles. There are 157 public cisterns and 547 wells and pumps. There are two public parks, one of which will rival in magnificence, as respects its natural position and commanding prospect, those of any other city in the Union." Reference is then made to Greenwood and Evergreen cemeteries; to 113 churches[1] within the city; to 27 public schools, containing 317 teachers, and about 30,500 scholars, to the Packer Collegiate Institute, the numerous private schools, the Brooklyn City Hospital, the Orphan Asylums, the Old Ladies' Home, Industrial schools, dispensaries, etc.; also, to nine banks, four savings institutions, eight insurance companies, five daily and two weekly papers, etc. The assessed value of taxable property, during the previous year is thus estimated:

---

[1] One hundred and forty-two church societies, most of them having edifices of their own, and many of which were large and substantially built structures, and elegantly finished.

In Brooklyn, of real estate, - - - - - -	$64,665,117
" " personal property, - - - - -	8,184,881
Williamsburgh, of real estate, - - - - -	11,242,664
" " personal property, - - - -	11,614,559
Bushwick, of real estate, - - - - - - -	3,106,864
" " personal property, - - - - - -	109,000
Making the aggregate in the whole city, - - -	$88,923,085

Thirteen ferries, keeping up a constant communication with the city of New York, and the almost continuous line of wharves between Green-Point and Red Hook, as well as the commercial facilities furnished by the Atlantic docks, and the extensive ship building at Green-Point, were also alluded to. The police of the new city, under Chief *John S. Folk*, comprised seven districts, with an aggregate of 274 men; the 8th, 9th and 18th wards not being included, they having a special police at their own expense. The fire department was, also, on a good footing, the western district having 20 engines, 7 hose-carts and 4 hook and ladder companies; the eastern having 10 engines, 4 hose-carts, 3 hook and ladder, and 1 bucket companies.

The new city was divided into eighteen wards, to which a nineteenth was soon after added.

Yet, although Brooklyn had thus, at a single bound, jumped from the seventh to the third position among the cities of the American Union, it could by no means claim the same relative position in point of wealth, business or commercial importance; being outranked, in these respects, by several cities of less population. Nor had it risen to its eminence by virtue of its own inherent vigor and enterprise. Candor certainly compels the acknowledgment that it was chiefly attributable to the overflowing prosperity and greatness of its giant neighbor, New York. Many thousands of its counted population were scarcely more than semi-denizens. They were the merchant princes, and master artisans doing business in the metropolis, employing other thousands as clerks, accountants, journeymen and apprentices, in numerous and varied capacities, and who resided here. Thus, Brooklyn held the anomalous position of out-numbering, at night, its day population by tens of thousands. And, although this is still the case, yet Brooklyn's position, as regards business, commerce and influence has so rapidly increased, within the past six years (1863–'69), and is developing with such wonderful promise, that the burden of reproach that she is *only* a sleeping apartment for New York, is undeniably passing away.

Mayor Hall had been elected mainly on a temperance and sabbath observance platform, and on the 14th, his proclamation in regard to the closing of stores, etc., on the sabbath, went into effect, and was very generally observed.

On the 31st, the new building of the *Brooklyn City Hospital* was first opened to the inspection of the public.

February 12th. A public meeting was held at the Supreme Court room, Mayor Hall presiding, for the purpose of devising means for the relief of the poor. From three to four thousand dollars were collected for the purpose.

21st. The first meeting of the new *Board of Education* of the consolidated city was held, and officers elected.

March 28th. *The Fire Department of the City of Brooklyn* was incorporated by act of legislature.

April 12th. *The Nassau Water Company* was incorporated by legislative enactment; was at once organized and promptly petitioned the common council to authorize a subscription to its capital stock, to the amount allowed by its act of incorporation.

On the same date an act was passed defining the limits of the fire district of the Western district.

July. The *Brooklyn Central Dispensary* was instituted, the *Hunt Horticultural and Botanical Garden* incorporated, and the *Brooklyn Sunday School Union* reorganized.

Nov. 15th. The common council passed a resolution, by 27 to 7 votes, authorizing a subscription of $1,000,000 to the stock of the Nassau Water Company, on condition of the two million capital stock being paid up. In June, they voted to increase the amount to $1,300,000.

Mayor Hall's address to the common council, in January, 1856, states that during the year 1855, there had been 1,034 new buildings erected, and 518 then in course of erection; about fourteen miles of new streets opened, and 9 miles graded and paved; 426 new gas lamps and posts set, 16 public cisterns, etc., etc.

1856. July 31st. Operations upon the Nassau Water Works were formally commenced by the breaking of the ground for a reservoir, on what is now known as Reservoir hill, on Flatbush avenue, and within the present Prospect park. The appearance of the place, at that time, is described, by the *Eagle* reporter, as "one of the finest and most appropriate that could be conceived. A large natural basin is on the summit of a hill that looks as if nature's hand had scooped it out, and placed it at that high altitude to be the agent for carrying down the pure, cool and refreshing beverage to a feverish and thirsty city. It commands an extensive view of a large part of the island, and will be a point which stranger and citizen will hereafter visit with pleasure and admiration." On a commanding point of this eminence, and around a platform covered with an awning of American flags, assembled the common council of the city, the Water Company, and a number of prominent citizens, in all some 1,000 persons, who had been brought to the spot, from the City Hall, in a long procession of omnibusses and carriages. The exercises were opened with prayer, by the Rev. Dr. Kennedy, after which Mr. John H. Prentice, president of the Board of Directors, gave a brief history of the inception and progress of the Nassau Water Company's operations in securing a supply of water for Brooklyn; and concluded by introducing the Hon. George Hall, mayor of the city; who, after a few pertinent remarks, proceeded to break ground by digging a spade full of earth amid the cheers of the multitude. The Rev. Dr. Kennedy, the Hon. N. B. Morse and the Rev. Dr. Bethune then delivered speeches replete with eloquence, cordiality and humor. After which the company proceeded to a booth adjoining, where a collation had been spread, and after duly satisfying the inner man, reentered the stages and returned home.

This year was signalized by the appearance of *yellow fever*, on Long Island.

Dr. Elisha Harris, physician to the Marine Hospital, at Staten Island, reported a case, in April, 1856, from a quarantined vessel. No other case was reported, in or around New York, until the arrival of the *Julia M. Halleck*, from St. Iago de Cuba, on the 18th of June, with three cases. On the 21st of the same month the ship *Jane H. Gliddon*, arrived from Havana, with five cases on board; and, immediately after, three more were taken while at quarantine — strongly marked cases. These vessels were unloaded and their cargoes exposed to the air, the ships fumigated, cleaned and aired, and *twenty* of the stevedores and lightermen engaged in unloading them contracted the fever, no case having yet occurred in New York or on Long Island. On the 2d of July, the *Silias* arrived and sent one case to the Marine Hospital; the *Lady Franklin* sent eight, and the *Eliza Jane* one. From this date to the 29th of July, many vessels arrived, more or less of them from Southern ports, with cases on board either at the time of arrival or shortly after. Vessels were detained in such numbers, at quarantine, that the Narrows at this point was nearly filled, almost from shore to shore. It may here be stated that the ship *Crawford*, from Porto Rico, which had arrived on the 1st of July (the day before the *Lady Franklin*, *Eliza Jane* and *Silias*), was permitted, after due quarantine (no cases occurring), to come up to New York. Near the middle of July she discharged her cargo; soon after this, a man, who had been engaged unloading her was taken with yellow fever. A few days after, four others, who had also been engaged on her, were taken. Her mate, Stephen Drew, was engaged as mate by Capt. Davis, of the bark *Sidon*, and stowed his luggage, which he took from the Crawford, under Capt. Davis's bunk. Four days after, Capt. Davis took the fever and died; and, three days after the captain was taken, Drew sickened and died. Several (34) cases now occurred in New York, nearly all of whom had been at work at, or near pier No. 10. On the 9th of July, the alluvial plain at Fort Hamilton and Bay Ridge was subjected to an unusually heavy rain (1.80 inches), which, from the conformation of the soil, could not run off. Succeeding this, followed a drought and high temperature, the mean of which recorded at 7, 2, and 9 o'clock daily, 82° 58′ and ranging at 99°; on 27th, the thermometer, at 2 o'clock, was 95°; 28th, 97°; on the 29th it fell to 82°; and, on this day the first case occurred on Long Island.

The mean of the hygrometer for the same period was 75° 80′; and, for the twenty days, from the 9th to the 29th inclusive, there had been but .01 rain. On the 29th, it rained, in the night, .03 inches. During this period the wind at this locality ranged S.W., to the N. W.; from the 21st to the 29th, from the S. W. only. These facts serve to indicate an atmosphere here peculiarly ripe for the development of disease, especially of miasmatic fevers. It must be remembered, also, that there were at this time nearly 150 vessels lying at anchor at the quarantine, many of which were infected, and very near the Long Island shore. And, when we consider that nearly all the cases on the island occurred along the shore, directly opposite to these vessels; also, that nearly every one of the first victims had either been engaged upon, or had handled articles direct from these vessels, we may reasonably assume, 1st, that the contagion was imported; 2dly, that the first victims were infected by contact with the vessels or their contents, and 3dly, that the direction of the wind and the condition of the atmosphere were peculiarly favorable to the development and extension of the disease.[1]

The fever first made its appearance upon Long Island near Forty-ninth street, on the shore of the bay; the patient being a laborer on the Hunt farm, who sickened on the 13th and died on the 19th of July. Following this were the cases of Judge Wm. Rockwell, residing near the water, midway between Forty-ninth street and Fort Hamilton, who died on the 25th; Alderman Bergen who died on the 30th, and his sister on the 31st. The Bergens resided between Rockwell's and Forty-ninth street, close to the shore. Meanwhile, there had been some isolated cases in Brooklyn, of persons who had been engaged upon or in contact with the infected vessels or cargoes; and, on July 22d, occurred in Conover street the first *acknowledged* death from yellow fever in the city. We say *acknowledged*, because from the first, there was a determination on the part of the authorities, as well as of the medical profession, to avoid, if possible, any public panic, and, with this intent, they practically ignored, as long as they could, the existence of the yellow fever, by giving it other less alarming appellations, such as ship fever, bilious remittent fever, etc., etc. Even after the excellent mayor, George Hall, and Dr. Matthew Wendall, the health officer of the city, could no longer shut their eyes to the fact, which they had hitherto so obstinately denied, that it was the yellow fever; they continued, by agreement between themselves, to make returns of such deaths under the above mentioned names; and their action, dictated no doubt by the purest desire for the public good, was imitated by private medical practitioners, so that the returns of mortality for this period, judged by the strict laws of truth, are of little value to the sanitary statistician. On August 27th, we learn that up to the present time, the yellow fever had been confined to the neighborhood where it originally appeared, viz: the vicinity of Fort Hamilton. In the exceptional cases which occurred in this locality, the disease had been contracted either at Fort H, or in holding communication with the infected vessels. Several lightermen, residing in different parts of Brooklyn, who had been engaged in removing the cargoes of these vessels, died of the disease; but no new case occurred in the neighborhood of their houses, nor even in the houses where they resided. On the removal of the ship from Gravesend bay, the disease abated and for awhile it was believed to be dying out. Infected vessels, recently arrived, were again placed at quarantine at the neck of the Narrows, at its very narrowest part, as near Fort Hamilton as the others were. By this time, scarcely more than one hundred and fifty out of five hundred residents of the Fort Hamilton neighborhood, remained; the place was deserted, save by the few whom humanity, duty or necessity kept at their posts. Mayor Hall, with that fearless disregard of danger and that high sense of personal responsibility which so highly distinguished him, constantly visited the infected district, inspecting the extemporized hospitals, and using every means, official and personal, of warding off the disease from the city. In these endeavors he was nobly seconded by Mr. Geo. E. Cammeyer, and others. On September 1st, Mayor Hall issued a bulletin to the citizens, from which we learn that "but a small portion of the city (the lower end of the Eighth ward) is within the infected district. Outside of this district, no cases whatever have occurred which are not directly traceable to infection taken within the district. Since July 6th, to August 31st, inclusive, forty-nine deaths have occurred within the city caused by bilious fever of different grades, namely; bilious fever, 10; bilious congestive fever, 10; bilious typhoid fever, 5; congestive fever, 8; yellow fever, 16; of which the majority were in the Eighth ward. The remainder, from different localities, have been persons who have been employed as lightermen or others connected with the breaking up and discharging the cargoes of infected vessels; or, of persons who, up to the time of taking the disease, have resided within the infected district. The fever has in no case been communicated, by contagion, from these persons, and it is the unanimous opinion of all physicians, with whom I have conversed upon the subject that it is not communicable by contagion outside of the infected district.

---

[1] "Yet," says Dr. J. B. Jones, to whom we are indebted for the foregoing facts, "I am unwilling to favor the idea that the wind had much to do with the spreading of disease; for, I find, by the summing up of one of my tables, that the disease made headway against a strong wind."

The total of deaths from yellow fever in *Kings county*, from July 22d, to August 31st, was 74, of which 39 were in Brooklyn.[1] The brunt of the epidemic, however, fell upon the town of New Utrecht, where, also, an irreparable loss was occasioned by the deaths of Drs. James E. Dubois and John Ludlow Crane, who contracted the disease in the performance of their professional duties amidst that plague-stricken community.

From September 1st, the disease appeared to decline until finally checked by the approach of cold weather.

1857. January 1st. At the Packer Institute, a presentation was made by some of the prominent citizens of Brooklyn, of a house and lot to Mayor George Hall, and of a service of plate to Mr. John E. Cammeyer, in recognition of their self-denying and noble personal labors among the sick and dying during the yellow fever epidemic of the previous summer.

---

[1] During the same season there occurred in the city, 34 cases of bilious fever; congestive fever, 14; congestive bilious, 12; typhoid 46; typhus 30, and *yellow fever*, 29. Some of these might undoubtedly, if the truth was known, have been more properly classed under the latter head.

With this year commenced the mayoralty of Mr. *Samuel S. Powell.*

SAMUEL S. POWELL, a descendant from some of the earliest settlers of Long Island, was born in the city of New York, on the 16th day of February, 1815; and the locality where he first saw the light (Water, near Fletcher street), presents a curious illustration of the enormous growth of that city within the space of half a century, being at that time occupied chiefly by jobbers in dry goods, nearly all of whom resided in apartments over their stores. Young Powell enjoyed the usual advantages of school education until the age of thirteen, when family reverses rendered it necessary for him to seek his own livelihood. After serving in a store in New York for some time, he came to Brooklyn, in 1828, and engaged with S. B. Stilwell, at that time, the leading tailor and clothier of the then village; and, after being with Mr. Stilwell for about four years, commenced a business on his own account, which he successfully pursues at the present time. Mr. Powell having always taken a lively interest in the discussion of politics and public measures of his day, was elected, in 1845, by the democracy of the Second ward, as their representative in the common council, where he served one term, declining a renomination. He held no other office until 1857, when he was chosen mayor; and at the expiration of his first term was reelected.

During Mayor Powell's administration, the much debated question as to the advisability of running the street rail road cars on the sabbath, was settled affirmatively, after a fierce contest. The measure was recommended in an official message from Mr. Powell to the Common Council, and met with much opposition, but, after a full discussion of the whole subject, the cars were set in motion, and so continue to the present time, greatly to the satisfaction of a large majority of the people. When the war of secession commenced, Mayor Powell actively sustained the government in all measures for the suppression of the rebellion; and, although a democrat, and in no way identified with the dominant party, he aided to the full extent of his powers, the enlistment of men, and by open speech justified all measures necessary to destroy the power of rebellion and to restore the Union. Quiet and unobtrusive in his manner and habits, there is no citizen of Brooklyn who possesses a more intelligent knowledge of the city's history, its growth, and its people; and as director in the Central Bank, the Brooklyn Life Insurance Company, the Citizens' Gas Light Company, and an original director of the

Nassau and Lafayette Insurance Companies, he has been prominently identified with its financial interests.

February 11th. Messrs. John H. Prentice, J. Carson Brevoort, William Wall, Nicholas Wyckoff, Nathaniel Briggs, Thomas Sullivan and Conklin Brush, all (except the latter who succeeded Mr. Daniel Van Voorhies, resigned), formerly directors of the Nassau Water Company, were appointed a *Board of Water Commissioners*, under the act of legislature, of this date, vesting the city with the contracts, property and interests of the Nassau Company.

February 17th. By the legislative "act for the better regulation of the firemen of the city of Brooklyn," passed on this date, was created the *Board of Commissioners of the Fire Department of the Western district of the city of Brooklyn.*

March 20th. By an act of legislature, of this date, the appointment of a board of three persons was authorized for the purpose of reassessing the unpaid expenses of local improvements in the former village and city of Williamsburgh. The commissioners appointed under the act were Alden J. Spooner, Daniel B. Hasbrouck and Thomas Cotrel.

April 7th. By an act to incorporate the fire department of the eastern district of the city of Brooklyn, the legally organized firemen of the eastern district were constituted a body corporate to be known as *The Brooklyn Eastern District Fire Department.*

April 15th. By legislative enactment the gentlemen comprising the water board were constituted a *Board of Sewer Commissioners*, and were empowered to devise and carry into effect a plan of drainage and sewerage for the whole city, upon a regular system, for the purpose of carrying off the water and filth proper to be carried off in sewers, for the health and convenience of the inhabitants.

April 17th. By act of legislature, the fire limits of the Eastern District were established.

April 23d. The present Metropolitan Police law went into operation, by which the counties of New York, Kings, Westchester and Richmond, and the towns of Newtown, Flushing and

Jamaica, in the county of Queens, were constituted and territorially united for the purposes of police government and police discipline, to be governed by a board of commissioners, of which the mayors of the cities of New York and Brooklyn are members *ex officio*. The original commissioners were James W. Nye, James Bowen, J. S. T. Stranahan (of Brooklyn), Simeon Draper and Jacob Cholwell, together with Fernando Wood, mayor of New York, and S. S. Powell, mayor of Brooklyn.

December. *The Mercantile Library Association of Brooklyn* was organized.

1858. The two marked events of the year were the *introduction of the Ridgewood water* into the city (it being first let into the mains, on December 4th, and first used in extinguishing a fire on the 17th of the same month); and the inception of measures, which resulted in the establishment of the *Academy of Music*, both of which events reached their culmination of success during the next year.

1859. March 19th. The *Brooklyn Academy of Music* was incorporated, with a capital of $150,000, with power to increase it to $200,000. Land in Montague street was purchased for $41,000, plans agreed upon and work commenced.

April 5th. *Samuel S. Powell* was reelected to the mayoralty, by a majority of 3,265 (out of a poll of 21,203) votes. John A. Cross was his opponent.

April 18th. By enactment of the legislature, Messrs. John Greenwood, J. Carson Brevoort, William Wall, James Humphrey, John A. Cross, Nathaniel Briggs, Ab'm J. Berry, Samuel S. Powell, Thomas H. Rodman, Nathan B. Morse, Thomas G. Talmadge, Jesse C. Smith, Daniel Maujer, Wm. H. Peck and Luther B. Wyman, were appointed commissioners to select and locate grounds in the city of Brooklyn, and adjacent thereto, for parks and a public parade ground.

April 19th. The legislature enacted a law to provide for the supply of the city of Brooklyn with water, by which provision was made for the completion and gradual transfer of the water works, etc., to the charge of a permanent board of water commissioners, to be appointed by the city authorities, etc.

1859. During the month of November, 1858, the first water had been introduced into the city, through the pipes, much to the gratification of the citizens. Its use at one or two fires, which occurred at about the same time, and one of which, but for its powerful aid, it is certain, would have resulted in a serious conflagration, afforded the strongest possible demonstration of the incalculable benefits which the citizens of Brooklyn would realize from the completion of this great work. People began at once to introduce it into their houses and places of business, and it was soon ascertained that all that had been predicted as to the purity of the water, its softness and pleasantness of taste was fully realized. It was pronounced superior even to the famed Croton, and then arose at once a general demand for a grand public demonstration, through which the universal joy and satisfaction pervading all classes of our citizens might be manifested. Even the most staid and venerable of our citizens became aroused under the influence of the enthusiasm which prevailed, and a large number of them, on the 29th November, 1858, petitioned the common council to arrange for a celebration worthy to inaugurate the great work. After due discussion the common council, on the 7th of March, 1859, appropriated $6,000 for the purpose of defraying the expenses of celebrating the introduction of water into the city, on the 27th day of April, 1859; and a committee was appointed to make the necessary arrangements for the occasion. Invitations were issued to the various military and civic associations, fire departments and authorities of Brooklyn and the neighboring cities; and the committee met daily in the City Hall, for the purpose of receiving deputations and propositions relative to the celebration, and arranging the programme therefor. The hearty cooperation which they found extended to them, by all classes of our citizens, evinced how thoroughly the people were aroused on the subject, and cheered them on in their arduous labors. So general was the disposition to participate in the celebration, that it was found that the amount originally appropriated would not be sufficient for the purpose; and, on the suggestion of the committee of arrangements, an addition was made by the common council of $4,000, making the whole appropriation $10,000.

April 27. On the day preceding the proposed celebration, the weather (which for several days had been extremely fine and pleasant), assumed the most unpromising aspect, and by night became wet and cheerless enough. The indications for the morrow were *watery* indeed, and yet the special committee, in view of their extensive preparations, and the fact that so many invited guests from distant cities had arrived, feared to direct a postponement. When the morning of the 27th arrived, however, it was found that there was no cessation of the storm, a drenching rain still continuing to descend. Yet the flags and banners were displayed, the salutes fired, the military under arms, the firemen parading to receive their guests visiting from abroad, and the City Hall was thronged with delegations from other cities, who had accepted the invitation to participate in the celebration. As it was evident, however, that the state of the weather utterly forbade the idea of attempting to proceed with the ceremonies, it was resolved, at an extemporized meeting of the common council, to postpone them until the next day; and, most of the visitors expressing their willingness to remain over, the committee at once arranged for their entertainment at the expense of the city, at such hotels as they might prefer. The military were dismissed, and the firemen were left to entertain their brethren visiting them from abroad. Refreshments were furnished in abundance at the City Hall, to the visitors, and every effort made to render their stay as pleasant as possible. The fountain which had been constructed in the park, was put in operation for the first time; and an excursion to the pump well was made by a party of some one hundred and fifty, members of the city governments of Baltimore, Philadelphia, Boston, Hartford, New Haven, and other cities, who in company with a number of Brooklyn officials and citizens, proceeded thither in close carriages. The mammoth engine was in operation, pumping up some 6,000 gallons per minute, and the nicety and smoothness of its motion, and the evident vastness of power which it possessed excited greatly the admiration of the visitors. The great Ridgewood reservoir was also examined, and received its full share of eulogium. Having satisfied their curiosity at these points, the party partook of a collation provided for them, by the committee, at John I. Snediker's, where speeches, toasts and congratulations abounded; and, late in the afternoon, the party returned to the city, having experienced, notwithstanding the wet weather, a very good time. At three o'clock P.M., the common council, in special session, resolved that all the extra expenses occasioned by the postponement of the celebration should be defrayed by the city. With this assurance the firemen generally were satisfied to retain their visitors and entertain them until the morrow; and, with their proverbial indifference to exposure, the rain did not prevent them and their visitors from making quite a gala day of it. In the western district a procession was organized, in which nine Brooklyn companies escorted ten visiting companies through a portion of the city; their appearance, notwithstanding the rain, was most creditable. The fire department of the eastern district did not receive notice of the postponement until they had assembled and were ready for the march; and, when it did reach them, upon consultation, they resolved, storm or no storm, as they were all prepared, to have a procession on their own account. Twenty-eight companies, inclusive of visiting companies, joined in the procession, over a long route; the sidewalks and windows of houses along the line of march, being thronged with spectators, who exhibited marked manifestations of delight. By evening, there was every indication of fair weather for the next day, and throughout the city during the night was to be heard the busy note of preparation for the grand demonstration of the morrow. Neither the fatigues of the day, nor the dampening influences of the storm, which had prevailed, it was quite evident, had chilled the enthusiasm of the people.

Second day. The early salutes of the 28th ushered in a morning of as bright and pleasant promise as the most exacting could desire. A genial sunshine and cool bracing air prevailed and rendered the day eminently fitting for the purpose to which the people of Brooklyn universally seemed determined to devote it, the commemoration of one of the proudest events in the history of their city. From every flagstaff waved the national banner, the joyful peals of the bells throughout the city rang merrily upon the ear, while the streets were gay with the bright uniforms of the military and the firemen, as they hastened, inspirited by the stirring strains of martial music, to the various places of rendezvous assigned for their assembling. At eleven o'clock, the procession commenced to move; and, except that some of the fire companies and one or two associations did not appear in line, the order was precisely according to the original programme. The military were out in full force, some 1,500 to 1,800 strong, and presented a fine appearance; almost the entire fire department, of both districts, were in the line, and considering their parades the day previous, presented a strong force. The visiting delegations were all represented, as were the civic societies. The turnout of the trades, with their various implements of handicraft and specimens of workmanship, was much greater than was anticipated, and formed a most attractive feature of the pageant. The length of the procession may be estimated when it is stated that it was over two hours passing a given point. The number of persons in the line was estimated at from twelve to fifteen thousand. There were at least 3,000 horses in the procession. On Lee avenue, near Keap street, a profusely decorated platform was occupied by 1,700 children of the Lee avenue Sunday school, while a little beyond, a beautiful arch spanned the avenue, and on either side, were platforms upon which were seated some sixty young ladies representing the different sabbath schools of the Eastern District, together with a fine brass band and a number of prominent citizens of the Nineteenth ward. Here a handsome wreath of flowers was presented to the Water Commissioners, and received with an appropriate address. Throughout the entire line of the procession crowds of people thronged the streets, while the windows and house-tops fairly swarmed with ladies and children. Many of the houses were tastefully decorated, and displayed appropriate mottoes. The number of people who witnessed the display was estimated at upwards of 300,000, some 150,000 people, at least, having crossed the ferries for that purpose. The head of the procession had reached the City Hall, on its return, and dismissed, long ere the end of the line had passed that building.

Upon reaching the City Hall, the Common Council and their invited guests entered the building and assembled in the Common

Council chamber. Here addresses were delivered by Gov. Morgan and Peter Cooper; and, after partaking of a collation which had been spread in the Supreme Court room and corridors, the party assembled again in the Common Council chamber, where they listened to a chaste and eloquent oration by Richard C. Underhill, Esq. An ode, written for the occasion, by a lady, was then sung to the air of the Star Spangled Banner, by Mr. Frederick Steins, the audience partially joining in the chorus. Addresses followed from Ex-Mayor Jonathan Trotter; Mr. Mayo, the mayor of Richmond, Va.; E. P. Cornman, Esq., of the select council of Philadelphia; Mr. Allen, mayor of Hartford, Conn., Mr. McPhail, president of the common council of Baltimore, and lastly, Mr. S. S. Powell, the mayor of Brooklyn.

In the evening, a splendid exhibition of fireworks was given in front of the City Hall, which was witnessed by, perhaps, the largest concourse of people ever assembled, at one point, in the city of Brooklyn. The hall itself, festooned with brilliant Chinese lanterns, presented a very beautiful spectacle. The fountain was throwing up its most powerful jet, and its appearance, as the spray glistened like silver in the rays of the large calcium lights which were concentrated upon it, or assumed rainbow hues in the light of the many colored fires of the fireworks, was as novel as it was strikingly beautiful. Throughout the city, the public buildings and many of the private residences were illuminated and otherwise tastefully decorated. At Green-Point, there was also a very fine exhibition of fireworks. In the Eastern District the display of fireworks was renewed until the next evening. Thus closed a demonstration such as Brooklyn never before witnessed, and which, as a pageant, has rarely been equalled even in the metropolis itself.

During this winter (1859–60) the collegiate department of the *Long Island College Hospital* was organized, and the announcement of its first course of lectures made.

1860. February 3d. About 7 o'clock, A. M., the new hat factory situated on Nostrand avenue, between Myrtle and Park avenues, was the scene of an explosion and great loss of life. It was owned by Ames & Molten of No. 35 Broadway, New York, and with all its machinery was entirely new. It was put in operation the latter part of January, 1860. The cost of the building was $12,000, and that of the machinery and fixtures (exclusive of boiler) was $1,000. The building at the time of the explosion contained about $15,000 worth of stock in different states of preparation. The machinery was entirely new, and an extra price was paid to secure the most durable and safest kind. The engine and boiler were from the hands of approved makers, and had been run but one week. They were under the charge of Mr. Eastman, an engineer of large experience, who had been sent here by the manufacturers to set up and run the same, until a competent man could be obtained, and he was among the killed. The main building in which the engine and boiler were located, was 200 feet in length, 25 feet broad, and three stories high. About one-third of this was demolished; an adjoining building, 30×30 feet, included in the premises, was but little injured. The building, under the ordinary terms of insurance, was insured for $8,000.

By this explosion nine persons lost their lives, and eighteen were more or less seriously injured. The shock of the explosion was tremendous. The north end of the building, in which was situated the engine and boiler, was entirely demolished. The floors at the extreme eastern end, which were left standing, were so compressed that if the workmen had been in that part of the building they would inevitably have been killed. There were about seventy-five female and one hundred and twenty-five male operatives employed in the factory; but, fortunately, only thirty-five had arrived at the time of the explosion.

July 7th. The Brooklyn City Flour Mills were destroyed by fire. The fire originated on the first floor, near the large chimney; several flues from the furnaces joined and communicated with this chimney. It was known by the workmen that the chimney where the flues joined were cracked and defective. The fire, when discovered, was at this point. There can be but little doubt that the fire originated from this defect.

The building was of brick, six stories high, and fifty-eight feet square. At the time of the fire the hatchways were open, and the flames spread to all parts of the building, and in less than one hour it was a mass of ruins. The building was erected in 1834 by Obadiah Jackson, and was occupied by him for several years, the lower floor being used as a grocery, the upper part for storage. Mr. Jackson having failed, the building was sold by the assignee to Silas S. Carll, and by him subsequently to Calvin Howe for $18,000, in whose hands it remained until about 1857, when it was purchased by Messrs. Smith, Leech & Jewell. The machinery of the mill was put in, in 1853, and new machinery and improvements had been added every year afterwards.

The loss on the building was over $15,000; insurance, $9,500. Loss of stock, $10,000; insurance, $8,500. Loss on machinery, $35,000; insurance, $13,000. Making a total loss of $60,000; total insurance, $31,000.

July 13th. Dr. Matthew Wendell, an old resident and physician, and at one time health officer, died at the ripe age of eighty-one years.

In the summer of 1860, forty-six cases of yellow fever were reported to the health department. Thirty-four cases occurred in the block commencing at the corner of Columbia street, running thence westerly to the water along Congress street, on both sides of the street. It was supposed to have originated from some lightermen who resided in this neighborhood and were engaged on lighters at quarantine. After the occurrence of one death of a well marked type, and the results of a post mortem examination, showing the well marked pathological lesions pathognomonic of this disease, were made patent, such of the sick as could be were removed to the Flatbush Hospital; where, as soon as the first death occurred, an autopsy revealed the same conditions. Under these circumstances it was deemed advisable to take prompt and decisive action in order to check the further spread of the disease.

The houses in Congress street, from the corner of Columbia to the dock, on the south side, were three or four stories in height, on the north side they were not so large; all were tenements, and each room and bed room were occupied by a family, each family averaging from four to six persons; the cellars were damp and filled with refuse garbage, ashes and all kinds of dirt. The street was in a very filthy condition. The occupants of the houses were chiefly those of the laboring classes, among whom were longshoremen, lightermen, stevedores, etc. In order, according to law, to meet this emergency, it was necessary to convene the board of health, in special session; and consultation, report, proclamation, advertising, special reports from health officer, etc., must have preceded any action in the premises. To have waited until due process according to law could have been gone through with, was equivalent to waiting until the disease had time to gain such headway as to almost render futile any action that might be taken towards the checking of the disease; in fact, remedial measures would be in active operation about the time the acme of the epidemic had been reached and from natural causes began to decline. Reasoning that our law makers designed to protect the health and lives of the people by the enactment of health laws, and finding that the method of carrying such laws into effect, by the mode laid down, was ineffective and likely to fail to accomplish the object designed, it was assumed that a departure from the mode, although unlawful by statute, was justified by common sense and humanity, and the responsibility was immediately taken of putting into operation the necessary effective measures. All the streets, in the immediate neighborhood, and the houses, cellars, yards, etc., were thoroughly disinfected and cleaned, and ventilated; and the residents either forced or frightened so that, in a few days, nearly all the houses became unoccupied, many of the sick were removed to different parts of the city, and in no case was there a single person affected by the disease from contact with those who came to their homes with it. Many, at the time, strongly condemned the removal of the sick to the unaffected districts of the city; but, inasmuch, as no harm ensued, the censure was shortlived, and was soon followed by praise from the same lips. Before the time had elapsed, which would have been necessary to convene the board of health, make and issue the proclamation and publish the same, pass the necessary resolutions to raise the money required to meet the expenses, etc., nearly all the work had been done, and the disease, whether sporadic, or epidemic in its character, or not, had been met, checked and its spread prevented. This was accomplished without exciting or alarming the community, and by the time it became generally known, the fact of its decline was announced.

The first case occurred in a man who worked on a lighter at the quarantine station, at Staten Island. He and his sister, who kept house for him, both died, the former at Flatbush Hospital, and the latter at her residence in Congress street. Post mortem examinations in both instances, disclosed well marked and characteristic lesions of yellow fever.

The census of Brooklyn for 1860, thanks to the indefatigable exertions of Dr. Thos. P. Norris, superintendent of census returns for Kings county, possess a completeness and which render them of more than ordinary interest and value. The statistics will be found in one of the appendices.

1861. January. The *skating* mania broke out in Brooklyn. Though its citizens had ever indulged, more or less, in skating upon the various ponds, which were so numerous in the suburbs, it was not until this season that the exercise received that extraordinary impetus which has made it, for the past seven or eight years, the most popular and fashionable amusement of the winter. The *Brooklyn Skating Club* was organized, soon attained a membership of over two hundred and fifty, and under the direction of its officers, Messrs. R. B. Jordan, O. Wetmore, T. B. Ball, G. C. Ackerman, etc., inaugurated a season of festivity.

April 5th. The charter election resulted in the choice of *Martin Kalbfleisch* (democrat), as mayor, by a majority of 5,136 (in a poll of 28,280) votes, over his republican competitor Frederick Scholes.

April 15th.[1] The dispatch from the secretary of war, announcing the surrender of Fort Sumter, and the president's proclamation, calling for 75,000 volunteers, electrified the citizens of Brooklyn, as well as those of every portion of the northern states. The excitement was intense, business was virtually suspended, men could hardly realize that war was begun; but, the momentary paralysis of surprise was quickly followed by a rebound of loyalty, as universal as it was magnificent. The stars and stripes was flung to the breeze upon all public places, from almost every store and from hundreds of private dwellings; so intense, indeed, was the public feeling, that the absence of the national flag in certain quarters invited a suspicion of disloyalty. On the 17th, a mob visited the *Eagle*, *News*, *Standard* and *Star* newspaper offices, compelling their proprietors to show their colors; and on the street and in all public places, incautious sympathizers with the south were admonished by arguments more striking than pleasant, of the propriety of keeping their thoughts and words to themselves. The young men of the Seventh, Ninth, and Nineteenth wards, commenced to form a volunteer company. By the 19th, the news of the dastardly attack on the Massachusetts Sixth, at Baltimore aroused the excitement to a white heat, and the excess of loyalty seemed to threaten an outbreak of mob violence,[1] in view of which Mayor Powell issued a proclamation counseling moderation and peace. The four militia regiments comprising the Fifth Brigade, viz: 13th, 14th, 70th and 28th,[2] began to make ready for the fray, recruiting offices were opened, and their ranks were largely swelled by accessions of patriotic young men. Capt. Wm. H. Hogan, the former gallant commandant of the Napper

---

[1] *Notice.*— Brooklyn's share, in the war for the suppression of the civil rebellion — the narration of which, indeed, comprises the greater portion of Brooklyn history for the four years succeeding this date — can only be given by us *in outline.* We lack both space and time to give more than a cursory view of this epoch, such as is neces-

---

sary for a comprehensive view of Brooklyn's progress up to date, viz: 1869. Under the head of *Military,* in our concluding chapter, the reader will find brief notices of the various regiments from this city, engaged in the war. The subject claims a separate volume for its proper presentation — a volume which we hoped would, ere this, have been given to the public under the auspices of the War Fund Committee.

[1] An amusing instance of this occurred at the Packer Collegiate Institute, where the exhibition of a palmetto badge by some of the southern young lady pupils, provoked a sudden outburst of red, white and blue badges among the northern girls, and finally the principal, Prof. Crittenden, deemed it best to order the total suppression of *all* badges. This sensible proceeding called forth the ire of several hundred young men around town, who proceeded to the Institute and called for the exhibition of the stars and stripes, which were, of course, forthcoming; and the police dispersed the overzealous crowd.

[2] Previous to this the ranks of these regiments had been poorly filled, viz: the 13th having about 250; the 14th about 150; the 70th about 350; and the 28th about 400 men.

Tandy Light Artillery, commenced among his countrymen the organization of an artillery company, which eventually did good service with the Irish Brigade. The common council appropriated (19th), $75,000 for the relief of families of those who should volunteer. On the 20th, Gen. Duryea received orders to send forward two of the Brooklyn regiments, and selected the 13th (Col. Abel Smith), and 28th (Col. Mich. Benett). Major Anderson, the hero of Fort Sumter, also, this day quietly visited the city, and was warmly greeted by the comparatively few citizens who knew of his coming. In the evening of this day, an enthusiastic demonstration was made on occasion of raising an American flag over the Citizen's Gas Light Company's works, with the accompaniment of speeches, music, ladies, etc.

April 21st. (Sabbath). The recruiting offices were kept open all day, and the work of enrollment went bravely on. In Plymouth church, the sum of $1,000, and in the Pierrepont street Baptist church, $1,077 was contributed towards the equipment of the 13th and 14th, and this without previous notice being given. A. A. Low contributed $300 for the 13th.

April 22d. Messrs. Whitehouse & Pierce, 188 Fulton street, furnished equipments to those of their employes who volunteered; and guaranteed their situations to them upon their return, as well as the payment of their salaries to their families during their absence. The city was all alive; companies parading the streets, preparatory to being formed into regiments—everything betokened preparation—the Zouaves were actively drilling; nothing but the war was thought of or talked about; business was at a stand still. In the evening, an enthusiastic meeting was held at Music Hall to organize a home guard, Geo. Hall was chairman, stirring speeches were made by him, by Col. Thorpe, M. F. Odell, Hon. James Humphrey, and 200 signed the roll of members. The common council, this evening, also, authorized the effecting of a loan of $100,000 for the equipment of Brooklyn volunteers, and the support of their families. Father Rafina, priest of the Montrose avenue catholic church, with his own hands raised an American flag upon the top of his church, in the presence of over 2,000 people,whom he addressed with a few appropriate remarks, and whose plaudits were enthusiastic. The captain of the United States Survey vessel, the *Varina* (a southerner), very quietly attempted to move his craft out of the Brooklyn Navy Yard, and down the river, in the night, with the view, it is supposed, of taking her to Dixie. The crew, however, suspecting his design, managed to communicate with the commandant of the receiving ship, North Carolina; a line was thrown across the stream, the *Varina* was stopped, and her crew removed to the guard, and she left empty in the stream, much to the joy of the loyal tars, who cheered for the Union and hooted at treason, while they were leaving the vessel.

About this time, also, occurred what was, at the time, characterized by some of the daily papers, "the Navy Yard *scare;*" but which, in fact, possessed a far greater importance than many supposed. One day, about 2 P. M., Mayor Powell was waited upon by Capt. (afterwards Commodore) Foote, (then in command of the United States Navy Yard here, in the absence of Commodore Bell), who stated to him that he had reason to believe that an attempt would be made that night to burn the Navy Yard, and that he had but eighty men (all told), capable of bearing arms in the defense of the government property. He requested aid from the city authorities; and in response to his demand, active measures were at once put forth by Mayor Powell to meet the difficulty before sundown. It was understood that the proposed attack upon the yard, was to be made by a force of rebel sympathizers, crossing from New York in small numbers at the different ferries, and rendezvousing in or near the City Park, under the Navy Yard walls, from which point, after dark, they could easily have possessed themselves of the place; and, after a liberal use of fire-balls and other combustibles among the inflammable contents of the yard, could have escaped before a general alarm had been communicated to the city. Placing himself in communication with the headquarters of the Metropolitan Police, a heavy force (some 1,000 in all), of police were distributed near the yard, the ferries, etc., while the river in its front was patrolled by the police-boat and numerous well manned row-boats. Col. Graham's artillery regiment, the Seventieth, took possession of the Arsenal, on Portland avenue, and the Thirteenth (Col. Smith) were under arms at the Armory on Cranberry St., and the militia generally, under direction of General Duryea, were in readiness for instant service. So promptly was all this effected, that no attempt was made, and hence the cry of *scare;* but facts which subsequently came to light, prove that the attempt would certainly have been made, but for the activity and vigilance of the city authorities.

The Union Ferry Company guarantied to those of their employés who should volunteer, a continuance of salary to their families, and their places again upon their return. Forty Brooklyn ladies volunteer as nurses; and quantities of lint, etc., is offered. The 13th Washington Division, No. 4, of the Sons of Temperance, vote the appropriation of $3 per week to the family of any member who shall volunteer; and, in case of his death, $20 in addition to the $30 already given as a funeral benefit, and also pledged themselves to provide for the widow and orphans. This day was held an immense war meeting on Fort Greene, at which it was estimated that 50,000 people were present. There were three stands for speakers, music, etc. Mayor Powell presided; a salute of 34 guns was fired, prayer was offered by the Rev. Dr. Vinton; resolutions read by Alex. McCue, Esq., and speeches made by Hon. Mr. Van Wyck, Hon. R. J. Walker, Senator Baker, of Oregon, Hon. John Cochran, and many others. A letter from (the Catholic) Bishop Loughlin was read, and the scene was graced by the presence of some of the soldiers of the Fort Sumter garrison. At 3 P.M. of the same day the 13th Regiment left for the seat of war, 450 strong, 200 being left behind owing to a lack of equipments. The National Home Guard was also organized; and the citizens of the 9th ward organized a Home Relief Association, of which Mr. J. Carson Brevoort was chosen president, and $1,950 were subscribed on the spot for the purposes of the society and for aiding the families of volunteers from that ward.

April 24th. The members of the *Kings County Medical Society* resolved to render gratuitous professional services to the families of volunteers, during their absence.

April 25th. The *Mechanics' Bank* took $25,000 of the city loan of $100,000.

April 26th. A *Ladies' Lint Society* was in operation in Monroe Place and vicinity, and another among the young ladies of Brooklyn Heights Seminary. The mayor sent a communication to the common council proposing the organization of a force of 2,000 men, in companies of 100 each, properly officered, for the protection of the city and its surroundings. The *Brooklyn Yacht Club* tendered to the United States Government, the use of their vessels, for any service for which they might be required in the shallow water along our coast, including the maintenance of a small armed screw propeller, as a coast guard from Barnegat to Fire island.

April 28th. (Sabbath). Impressive religious services were held at the arsenal, where the 28th Regiment was quartered, preparing to leave. During the preceding week this regiment had received 1,590 yards of bandaging prepared by the ladies of Clinton avenue Congregational church. On this day, also, Maj. Oatman raised the American flag on the old "1699," or Vechte Cortelyou house.

April 29. At a meeting of the Association for the Relief of Volunteers' Families, between two and three thousand dollars was raised.

April 30th. The 28th Regiment left for the front, and were escorted to the dock by the Lancer Troop and howitzer battery of the 70th Regiment. The common council appointed committees for relief to volunteers' families, each committee consisting of three from each ward.

April. During this and the succeeding month, Col. Pratt and others, mostly of Brooklyn, organized at New York city, the *Thirty-first Regiment* of New York Volunteers.

May 2d. *The Home Trust of Volunteers of Brooklyn* organized, with A. A. Low, as president; Messrs. Geo. Hall, Luther B. Wyman and Hosea Webster as vice-presidents, J. H. Frothingham, treasurer; W. S. Griffith, secretary; and R. R. Raymond, corresponding secretary. The board of county supervisors appropriate $50,000 for the relief of families of volunteers, and pledge themselves to continue the salaries of employes who may volunteer.

A large Union meeting was held at New Utrecht. The ladies of the 8th ward organized a Patriotic Relief Association for provision of hospital stores, etc., for sick and wounded soldiers.

May 6th. The new mayor *Martin Kalbfleisch*, entered upon his official duties.

May 9th. The reserves of the 13th Regiment (425), left for the seat of war to join that regiment. The Hunter's Point route of the Long Island rail road was opened.

May 20th. The 14th, under Col. Alfred M. Wood, left for the seat of war. Their departure was a scene of enthusiasm which evinced how firm a hold this regiment had upon the affections of Brooklyn citizens.

June. Early in this month $50,000 was appropriated by the board of supervisors, exclusively for the relief of volunteers' families.

June 26th. The corner-stone of a *Home* for destitute children, was laid, under the auspices of the Brooklyn Industrial Association.

July 1st. The common council appropriated $2,500 towards the equipment of the 14th Regiment, on the application of Lieut. Col. Fowler.

July 4th, was kept this year with more than usual demonstration of patriotic feeling. All the local militia regiments (13th, 14th and 28th), being absent on service in the field, the 70th was the only one left to parade. The Home Guard Battalion, composed of the reserves of different regiments then at the seat of war, paraded also; as did several juvenile companies of Cadets, Zouaves, etc.

July 30th. The 13th Regiment return from their tour of service and are cordially welcomed.

During this and succeeding months, the "Continental Guard," afterwards the *Forty-eighth* New York Volunteers, was recruited under the command of Col. Perry, formerly pastor of the M. E. church.

August. During this and the following month, the *New York Fifth Independent Battery* was organized at Brooklyn; and the *Ninetieth* New York Volunteer Regiment, at East New York.

August 5th. The 28th Regiment returned home, and were mustered out of service.

August 6th. The board of supervisors appropriated $10,000 to the relief of volunteers' families.

August 22d. The *First Long Island* (Brooklyn Phalanx), Regiment, recruited in Brooklyn, by Col. Nelson A. Cross, departed for the seat of war.

Oct. Col. Abel Smith, of the 13th Regiment, met with accidental injuries, which resulted in his death.

Dec. 5th. The supervisors appropriated $35,000 to the support of volunteers' families.

1862. January. On the 30th of this month, the iron *Monitor* was launched at Green-Point; was placed in commission on the 25th of February; and eleven days after (March 8th) had her celebrated encounter with the rebel ram *Merrimac*, in Hampton Roads.

February 4th. The *Capitoline Club* was organized. The small-pox was very prevalent in the city.

March 3d. A grand public reception was given to Col. A. M. Wood, of the 14th Regiment, on his return from captivity in Richmond, by the authorities, military, fire department, and citizens generally.

March 27th. Brooklyn received a *new charter*, by an act of the legislature, amendatory of the consolidation act of 1854.

May. A new regiment (the 56th), of State Militia was organized at Brooklyn.

May, 17th. A large and enthusiastic public meeting of the citizens of the 17th ward (Green-Point), held early in this year, organized an association for the relief of the families of soldiers enlisted in the army and navy. Messrs. Jabez Williams, A. K. Meserole, Wm. M. Meserole, James Ross, Jonathan Moore, James Valentine, Th. Hutchinson, T. F. Rowland, Wm. Foulks, J. N. Stearns, Geo. W. Bell, John McDiarmid, C. V. Rivenburg, John B. Downing, Geo. W. Kelsey, Ab'm Meserole and Rev. Peter Boyce, were appointed an executive committee, of which Mr. Boyce was president; A. J. Provost, Timothy Perry, Adrian Meserole, vice-presidents; Ab'm Meserole, and afterwards J. N. Stearns, secretary, and Mr. E. F. Williams, treasurer. A subscription was started, and the large sum subscribed on the spot, was subsequently increased to over $10,000. The executive committee met every week day night, for months, visited soldiers' families, and furnished regular relief to over 100 families, containing about 140 children, besides occasional relief to other families. Nearly 500 men enlisted from this ward.[1]

May 20th. The corner-stone of the new County Court House, at junction of Fulton and Joralemon streets, was laid on this day, by the Grand Lodge of Fire and Accepted Masons, of New York. The ceremonies were impressive in the extreme, and there was a large concourse both of masons and citizens. The majority of the board of supervisors and aldermen, judges, and city and county officials were present; and speeches were made by Gen. Crooke, Judge Lott, Mayor Kalbfleisch, Rev. Dr. Storrs and others.

June. The *Coney Island Rail Road*, from Fulton Ferry to Coney island, was completed. It was eleven miles in length, being the longest road in the city.

August 15th. A great Union meeting was held on Fort Greene, in view of the draft ordered (Aug. 4th) by the government, for 300,000 men for nine months' service; the proportion of Kings county being placed at 4,294. On the 16th, the board of supervisors appropriated the sum of $240,000 to be borrowed on the credit of the county, for ($50) bounties, for volunteers before the 1st of September following.

Brooklyn had, as we have seen, responded nobly to the first call of the government upon the loyal population of the north. Some 10,000 of her bravest citizens had testified their devotion to the old flag, upon every battle-field from Bull Run to Malvern Hill. To the second appeal she sent forth her 13th and 14th Militia Regiments; but the third call for men, seemed, from some unaccountable reason, to be coldly received; and, while all other communities were bestirring themselves, holding meetings, arousing popular enthusiasm, and raising money to pay bounties to volunteers, she remained inactive. But, with the impulse given by this great popular demonstration, Brooklyn quickly placed herself right before the world, promptly resolving to do her own duty, and to furnish her quota of volunteers without recourse to the draft. The *Standard* of the 23d, says, "the public meeting and the additional bounty offered, stimulated recruiting to an unprecedented extent, and over a thousand men have been enlisted during the week, at the various recruiting offices in the city. The supervisors appointed committees in every ward to allot to each the quota required, and these local committees are working zealously, and with a proper feeling of local pride and emulation, in striving each to bring their ward, or town, up to the required number of recruits. There has been no lack of contributions from private citizens. Many gentlemen have contributed most generously, and special bounties have swelled the inducement held out to volunteers."

---

[1] Report of 17th Ward Soldiers' Aid Association, March 17, 1863, reports that during the winter of 1862–3, relief was extended to 86 families containing 125 children ($2 to adult, 50 cents to child, per week). Whole amount received by treasurer, up to March 10, $7,510.06, of which 2,840 was paid out for bounties, and $3,929.20 for relief.

Again, "the city was all alive this week. Recruiting officers were seen everywhere, some with one, two, and even six or eight men on the way to different headquarters. The recruiting tents in the City Hall park increased to nine, and the drums, in front of each, kept up their music from morning to night. Tents have also been pitched in Washington Park, the City Park, at the Navy Yard, and other eligible points. The whole city, in fact, begins to wear a military aspect. The people are aroused; the wealthy men are coming forward with their contributions, and the consequence is that men of the right stamp are enlisting in squads. Mayor Kalbfleisch has, on his own responsibility, ordered 168 A tents and fourteen wall tents for the officers and men of the 1st Regiment of the Empire Brigade; the scene around the headquarters of the Brigade is animating. Recruits come flocking in so fast that they cannot all be attended to; the four regiments of the Brigade, now average 500 men each, and it is confidently expected that the first regiment will be filled within a week. The Mechanics' Bank, in one day, cashed 175 checks for bounties to recruits; and the day previous, 93, amounting to a total of $7,600." Mr.

Charles Christmas has contributed $200 to aid in recruiting and rendering a draft in Brooklyn unnecessary, to be paid as special bounties to the first forty volunteers, who signed the rolls between nine and ten, on Wednesday morning. Capt. J. Davenport was at this time raising in Brooklyn a company of "Monitors." The smith's department in the Navy Yard, formed a Relief Association. The Hon. William Wall, representative in congress from the Fifth District, contributed $1,000 to aid in recruiting ($10 each), first 100 volunteers in the 1st Long Island, and the 14th Regiments.

The Eastern District was also aroused — meetings were held nightly in almost every election district, and liberal contributions were received.

An amusing episode occurred during this period of general enthusiasm, which was as creditable to those concerned, as it was entertaining. Mr. Geo. B. Lincoln, then post master of Brooklyn, happening to call on Mayor Opdyke of New York, on the sabbath immediately following the *second* battle of Bull Run, (fought on the 29th of August) was informed by the mayor that he had received a telegraphic dispatch from the secretary of war, requesting that a number of volunteer surgeons be forwarded at once, to the front, to meet the pressing exigencies of the moment. His honor suggested that the medical profession of Brooklyn might also furnish volunteers for this service; and Mr. Lincoln, entering heartily into the plan, immediately returned to Brooklyn, which he reached at about half-past ten A. M., an hour, unfortunately for his purpose, when physicians, as well as others, are generally at church. Taking his carriage, however, he drove rapidly around to the offices of various physicians, finding some ten or a dozen of them at home, *all* of whom promptly volunteered their services, and prepared to leave by the evening train for Washington. Returning to New York, Mr. Lincoln procured for them the necessary transportation; and, when, after a hard day's work, he reached his home about five P. M., was met at the door by his wife, who told him that *the house was full of doctors!* And so it proved; for, on entering he found parlors, hall-ways and, indeed, every available standing place, occupied by such a gathering of medical men, as perhaps, Brooklyn never saw before.

Old and young were there, men with a large practice and those with little or none, representing all the *pathies*, and every grade and specialty of the medical profession; but all united as one man, in their earnest, unqualified, wish to be sent at once, to the relief of the suffering and wounded at the front. Somewhat surprised at the absence of Mr. Lincoln, from whom, as they supposed, they had received the call to assemble, they had, nevertheless, organized an impromptu meeting, with the Hon. J. S. T. Stranahan, as chairman, and, with the assistance of Ex-Mayor Hall and Hon James Humphreys, were getting to work in fine style. Puzzled as he was, at first, to find his house thus filled to overflow, with uninvited guests, Mr. Lincoln soon comprehended the situation, made them at home, and gave a brief statement of the necessities of the hour. His appeal for volunteer surgeons was responded to *en masse* by those present; the only difficulty was that of selection of the number (20) needed, and the favored ones left that evening for the seat of war, envied by their less fortunate fellow practitioners. Not until some six months after, did Mr. Lincoln discover how these medical patriots came to assemble on call, at his house, on that eventful sabbath afternoon. It seems that an enthusiastic and public spirited citizen, who met him on his recruiting rounds during the morning, rushed to the police headquarters, and made use of the police telegraph to direct the captains of the different precincts to notify all physicians within their districts, to rendezvous at Post Master Lincoln's on business of great importance. The result has been told.

September. At Green-Point, Capt. Albert Stearns recruited a company (C), for the 31st New York Volunteer Regiment, then forming in New York city. The quota of Kings county, at this time, was 8,632, of which 4,000 had been raised, leaving 4,632 still due.

September 15th. A superb sword was presented to Admiral Foote, at the Athenæum, by the citizens of Brooklyn.

September 16th. The friends of Gen. Frank B. Spinola, of the Empire Brigade, presented him with a splendid charger; and Quarter-Master James R. Del Vecchio, of the same brigade, was also (30th), honored with the gift of a sword, sash and pistols.

November 24th. *The Woman's Relief Society* was formed.

December 2d. The 42d Massachusetts Volunteers left camp at Union Course, L. I., this day, and being delayed by not finding the transport vessel ready for their reception, spent the night in Brooklyn, at the armory, where they were provided with a good hot supper by the 13th New York State National Guards. A member of the 42d writing to the *Barre* (Mass.) *Gazette*, thus describes the hospitalities received by himself and comrades, from the Brooklynites. "Mr. Geo. B. Lincoln, city postmaster, gave supper to ten of our company; gave them a good bed, set a table in the morning for sixty, but breakfasted about forty, that being all he could find. Wm. Gilmore, 277 Hicks street, gave about two hundred and fifty meals; a stanch, old democrat, said he could not go to the war, but *wanted to feed the boys.* One other man, on Atlantic street, dealt out coffee for two hours, while we were waiting for the boat, and distributed cigars. One widow lady, name unknown, invited to supper about fifteen, gave them lodging, and gave breakfast to about twenty. There were other hospitalities, but I am unable to state them. The 42d say, with a will, "Bully for Brooklyn!"

During this year the Eleventh Brigade, New York State National Guard, was formed.

The winter of 1862–63, was also signalized by the establishment in Brooklyn, of several new *skating ponds*, viz: the *Washington*, *Nassau*, *Willow Pond*, Third avenue and Forty-eighth street, *Chichester's* at Bushwick; *Union*, E. D., and *Monitor*, at Green-Point.

1863. January 16th. The 176th New York Volunteer Regiment left New York city for the front. Three companies (B, I, and K), had been recruited in Brooklyn during the previous fall.

February. *The Long Island Historical Society* was organized.

June. For the third time since the commencement of the war, the Brooklyn militia was called into active service, and over 2,000 men fully armed and equipped, were ready for departure within twenty-four hours after the call of the governor was received, viz: the 13th, Col. Woodward; 28th, Col. Bennett; 23d, Col. Everdell; 47th, Col. Meserole; 52d, Col. Cole; 56th, Col. J. Q. Adams.

Col. Michael Murphy, under authorization of the state government, commenced the raising of a new regiment called the Kings County Volunteers.

June 18th. The Brooklyn *Twenty-third* left *en route* for Harrisburg, Pa., to meet, with other New York regiments, the rebel invasion of Pennsylvania. Its campaign was fortunately a bloodless one, and its history has been pleasantly and graphically narrated in book form by one of its members.[1] By the last of June, all the militia regiments, except the 70th, had left the city.

July 4th. The principal celebration of this day was by an oration at the Academy of Music, under the auspices of the Long Island Historical Society. Grenville Tudor Jenks, Esq., was the orator of the day.

July 13th. The great draft riots broke out in New York city, where, for three days, an infuriated mob literally held the city at its mercy, defying the constituted authorities, reckless of life and property, raging like a conflagration, unchecked and irresponsible, striking terror to the souls of peaceable citizens, suspending all business and travel, burning and plundering as they went. All this was caused by the enforcement of the draft by the United States authorities. The Navy Yard, Arsenal, Armory, etc., were all placed in readiness for any attack; a large meeting of the reserves of all the regiments then at the seat of war was held at the armory, and another of the 70th Regiment, at the Arsenal, at both of which gatherings, arrangements were made to furnish volunteers for the emergency, whenever required. A regiment of exempts organized under Col. A. M. Wood; and, (14th), Capt. Geo. Chappel's company, (Co. C), 1st Battalion of New York Artillery went over to New York, by order, to do duty at the Thirty-fifth street Arsenal. A large body of police was kept in reserve at the City Hall, the mayor and other officials remained on duty during the night, and every precaution taken to guard against any outbreak of mob violence, and to keep the people from undue excitement. Considerable apprehension was felt lest the numerous artisans and workmen employed at Green-Point, and in the manufactories along the East river shore, should become uneasy, and participate in the riotous demonstrations, which were being made by many of the laboring classes in New York; but the law abiding disposition of the citizens of Brooklyn was shown in the universal observance of the peace throughout the city. A few trifling manifestations of ill will to the negro were exhibited, but the ordinary police force was sufficient to overawe what few malcontents there were. On Wednesday night (15th), an alarming act of incendiarism showed that a danger really did exist, and that there were some reckless and desperate characters in the city ripe for mischief. Two grain elevators in the Atlantic Basin were fired by a mob, numbering about 200 persons; both elevators were destroyed, one a costly structure, worth about $80,000 and the other (floating) about $25,000. The firemen did their duty nobly, although attacked and obstructed by the mob, who were finally dispersed by the police, after a short, but fierce encounter.

---

[1] *Our campaign around Gettysburg; being a Memorial of what was endured, suffered, and accomplished by the Twenty-third Regiment (N. Y. S. N. G.), and other regiments associated with them in their Pennsylvania and Maryland campaign, during the second rebel invasion of the loyal states in June and July,* 1863. "Quæque ipse miserrima vidi, et quorum pars * * * fui." Brooklyn: A. H. Rome & Brothers, stationers and printers, No. 383 Fulton street. 1864.

Sheriff A. F. Campbell, on the 15th, issued a proclamation to the citizens, recommending them to organize as a *posse comitatus*, for the securing of the peace of the city, and the mayor, after the fire at the Atlantic Basin, issued an address congratulating his fellow citizens, on the exemption which Brooklyn had enjoyed from disturbance, etc.; and offering a suggestion similar to that of the sheriff's, relative to volunteer police service.

While the excitement at New York was at its height, and most of the citizens of that city and of the surrounding suburbs were paralyzed with fear of excesses which seemed to have no limit, or know no bounds, a gallant band of men was organized in Brooklyn, who rendezvoused at Gothic Hall, in Adams street. The city of New York was then so completely in the hands of the mob that they could not march through the streets without being inevitably cut to pieces. Each one of the organization, therefore, made his way through the crowded streets and reported, individually, at the State Arsenal, on the corner of Seventh avenue and Thirty-fifth street, where Major Gen. Sandford was in command. The Arsenal, which contained an immense quantity of arms, ammunition and equipments, was the object of especial attack by the rioters who had robbed all the gunshops which they could find, and who needed muskets. Lines had been drawn around the immediate vicinity of the edifice, which was guarded by such skeleton companies of troops as happened to be in the city at the time; and which, together with the Third State Cavalry under command of Col. Postley, constituted the entire protection of this important point. The Brooklyn boys were most gladly welcomed, and immediately assigned to duty in guarding the prisoners which had been taken, and in doing guard duty on the outpost lines of the building. Several determined attacks were made upon the edifice by the rioters, but repulsed, although not without some loss to the brave defenders. We regret that we have not the names of these Brooklyn Volunteers. By the 18th, however, the riot was suppressed, and the community once more breathed free; although during the month of August, the entire Eleventh Brigade and the two remaining regiments (13th and 28th) of the Fifth Brigade did guard duty in the city, at an expense of three to four thousand dollars per day.

September. The draft was enforced in this county, comprising the Second and Third Districts. The Second District (the 6th, 8th, 9th, 10th, 12th, 14th, 16th, 17th, and 18th wards, together with New Lotts, Flatlands, Flatbush, New Utrecht and Gravesend), was called on for a quota of 3,075, including the fifty per cent in addition required by law to supply the place of exempts from physical disability. The grand total of persons of the first class, liable to conscription, in the district, was 21,553, the draft requiring one in every seven of those enrolled. The quota of the Third District (1st, 2d, 3d, 4th, 5th, 7th, 11th, 13th, 15th, 19th and 20th wards), was 4,054, including the fifty per cent additional, as above stated.

The common council voted to raise 500,000, to apply to the exemption of exempt and active firemen (including the members of the department prior to July 1st); all members of state militia belonging to the Second Division, N. G. S. N. Y. enrolled prior to July 1st; 300 to the family, as a commutation fee, or for substitute for any drafted man dependent on his daily labor for support; and if he went himself to service, four dollars per week would be given to the wife, and one dollar to every child under fourteen years of age. Afterwards, however, in consequence of the difficulty experienced in raising the money, the authorities were obliged to omit firemen and militiamen from the benefits of their substitute fund.

Sept. 5th. The ladies of South Brooklyn entertained the 110th Ohio Volunteers encamped near Carroll Park.

Sept. 14th. The *Park Theatre* was opened by Mr. Gabriel Harrison.

October. A new call for 300,000 men. Mr. S. B. Chittenden offered the sum of $10,000 for 200 volunteers under this call for the 14th Regiment. The Second District quota was 3,034 and that of the Third District, 2,343.

November 2d. The charter election resulted in the choice of *Alfred M. Wood*, by 13,123 votes, out of a poll of 28,797, his competitors being Prince and Kalbfleisch.

November 11th. At a special meeting of the board of supervisors of Kings county, in consequence of a new call for troops, it was resolved to borrow the sum of $250,000, for the purpose of paying a $300 bounty to each substitute enlisting in the county, before the 5th of January, 1864, or before another draft should be ordered. This measure, which seemed to be rendered necessary in order to prevent recruits from this county being drawn to other localities by the bounties offered, was immediately carried into effect under the supervision of a committee of the board, consisting of Supervisors Shearon, Booth, Cheshire, Bloom, Stillwell and Osborne, acting in conjunction with the county treasurer. By subsequent action of the board, Supervisors Little and McGrath were added to the committee, which organized for business, by the appointment of Supervisor Osborne as chairman and Supervisor Booth as treasurer, and established their headquarters at No. 365 Fulton street; where, on the 18th, they commenced the payment of $300 to each recruit. This county bounty, in all but a few exceptional cases, was paid *directly* to the recruit himself, a measure for which the committee, as a matter of course, were severely denounced by bounty brokers and others interested, but in which they were upheld by many prominent citizens and by general public sentiment.

Supervisors Cheshire, Stillwell and McGrath were subsequently appointed a subcommittee to disburse the county bounty at the office of the provost marshal, in the Eastern District.

December 23d and 24th. The *Ladies Loyal League of South Brooklyn* held a fair at the Athenæum, for the benefit of sick and wounded soldiers, through the United States Sanitary Commission.

1864. January 1st. The new mayor, Col. A. M. Wood, assumed the duties of his office.

Colonel Alfred M. Wood, mayor of the city of Brooklyn, is a native of Hempstead, L. I., where he was born on the 19th day of April, 1828. He has resided in this city many years, having removed here at an early age, and has since been identified with its history. He was for some time a clerk in the store of the late Elijah Lewis, a well known and much respected merchant, with whom he afterward formed a partnership. Subsequently Colonel Wood engaged in business on his own account, but commercial reverses compelled him to resume the position of clerk.

Colonel Wood entered political life in 1853, as the democratic candidate for collector of taxes. Although his party was defeated, such was Colonel Wood's position in the good opinion of his fellow citizens, he was elected by six hundred majority. He served the public faithfully during a term of three years, at the end of which he was reelected by an increased majority. In 1861 he was selected as the representative of the First ward in the board of aldermen, of which he was chosen the presiding officer.

At this time the Southern Rebellion culminated in armed resistance to the authority of the government, and the war began, with the earlier scenes of which Colonel Wood's name is so honorably associated. Among the military organizations that hastened to offer their services for the defense of the country, and for maintaining the honor to the flag, was the 14th Regiment, New York State Militia. Of this regiment, organized in 1848, Col. Wood was at this time, the commandant.

Our citizens well remember the promptness with which the Fourteenth was put in readiness to take the field, and the enthusiastic impatience of the members to depart for the scene of actual warfare. Their colonel, who resigned his position as president of the board of aldermen, was indefatigable in his efforts to prepare the regiment for service, and to obtain from the government its immediate acceptance. Although other local regiments were accepted for the term of three months, the war department declined to receive the Fourteenth, except for three years or the war. This condition was acceded to, and on the 19th of May, 1861, as the shadows of evening were gathering over the city, the regiment marched through the streets lined with thousands, who cheered it God speed on its errand of honor, and went to the front.

On the memorable day of the first battle of Bull Run, the 21st of July, the regiment with the brigade to which it was attached in the division of General Hunter, marched from Centerville; reaching the field about eleven o'clock, and going at once into action, and remaining under fire six hours. The men behaved with great coolness and gallantry, and the colonel was conspicuous for bravery. Four times did they charge the enemy up a hill, in the face of a terrific fire of artillery and musketry, Colonel Wood leading them. The loss of the regiment at this point was very severe, 143 being killed, wounded, or reported missing. The colonel was severely wounded just at the time that the fearful panic began, which ended in a disastrous rout.

Colonel Wood was carried some distance on a litter and afterwards placed in an ambulance, the driver of which, as the retreating flood swept onward, cut the traces and fled for his life. With the assistance of some members of his regiment, the colonel succeeded in reaching the woods, where they remained four days, living on blackberries, when they fell into the hands of the Eighteenth Virginia Regiment. The colonel was removed to Charlottesville, where he remained some months, and partially recovered. He was then taken to Richmond, and shared the imprisonment of Gen. Corcoran and other brave Union soldiers. The hardships to which the Union prisoners were subjected at Richmond, have often been detailed; but through all, Colonel Wood showed the true gallantry and spirit of a soldier in the prison as well as on the field.

In the meantime great anxiety was felt in Brooklyn as to his fate. It was reported at one time that he was killed at Bull Run. Again it was rumored that he had been taken prisoner, and suffered amputation of the leg. When it was ascertained that neither of these reports was true, the public was startled by another, to the effect that he and others were held as hostages, to be executed in retaliation for the execution of the Rebel pirates. This last report was well founded. How determined Col. Wood was to meet boldly any fate in store for him, and to give his life cheerfully to his country, if it was demanded, is shown by his speech to his regiment on rejoining them at Upton hill, after his release from captivity. He then said:

"This, soldiers of the old Fourteenth, is one of two eventful moments of my life, which I shall ever look back upon with the happiest reflections. The first was that upon the occasion when I was taken from Henrico county jail, at Richmond, and in company with Col. Corcoran, was taken before the military authorities, to meet the issue presented in the question of retaliation, which at that time was under consideration with the rebel authorities, and which involved the execution of myself and others. The honor I considered as having fallen to my lot, was one which every true American should be proud of — the chosen sacrifice of a country and a cause like our own."

At length a change was effected, and Colonel Wood was released from rebel imprisonment in the latter part of February, 1862.

The citizens of Brooklyn were of course anxious to give public expression to their appreciation of the gallantry with which Colonel Wood had represented them on the field of battle and the manner in which he had sustained the patriotic character of the city, during his long captivity. Appropriate resolutions were passed by the board of aldermen, and it was determined that a committee of the board should proceed to Philadelphia to meet their absent president, whose place had been so long and honorably vacant. A meeting of citizens was also held, and a committee appointed to cooperate with the city authorities. The joint committee met the colonel at Philadelphia, and brought him to his own city, where a brilliant reception awaited him. Arriving in Brooklyn, it was with difficulty that Colonel Wood and his party could make their way from the ferry, through the enthusiastic crowds of people that thronged the streets. A speech of welcome was made by G. T. Jenks, Esq., and responded to by the colonel. A procession was then formed, under General Spinola, as grand marshal, in which the city government, the military, the fire department, Masons, Odd-Fellows, and other societies, and the citizens generally were well represented. Along the line of march the sidewalks were thronged, windows of houses and all places from which a view could be had were occupied. Flags flew from every staff, handkerchiefs were waved by fair hands, and cheer after cheer went up as the noble leader of the gallant Fourteenth passed. Another ovation awaited him at the City Hall; where he was formally welcomed by the mayor. The reception, throughout, was one of the most impressive and memorable demonstrations ever made in this city. All classes of people united to do honor to a distinguished citizen whose name was inseparably connected with some of the most important and stirring events in the history of the country. Nor were the demonstrations confined to Brooklyn. The people of Brushville, where the colonel joined his estimable lady, were alive with enthusiasm, and a reception was given him such as the quiet towns of Long Island rarely witness.

It was Colonel Wood's intention to rejoin his regiment at the earliest possible moment, but impaired health and consequent physical disability compelled him to abandon his purpose. Some time afterwards he was appointed by the president, collector of internal revenue for the Second District. On the 20th of October, 1863, he was nominated for the mayoralty by the Union city convention; and, at the polls, the people elected him to that position. In a poll of 28,312 he received 12,672, being 1,728 over Benjamin Prince, and 7,976 over Martin Kalbfleisch, an honor the more marked and gratifying to the recipient of it because it was unsought. Opposed to him in the canvass was a gentleman who had the support of a powerful party, having a majority in the city; but the contest was a fair one, and Colonel Wood owed his success to the use of no means on his part except those entirely consistent with the rules of honorable political warfare.

1864. January. Mr. S. B. Chittenden placed in the hands of the special committee of the board of supervisors on substitute bounty fund, the sum of ten thousand dollars, to be disbursed in sums of $50, to recruits who should enlist in the *Brooklyn Fourteenth*, all of which was so disbursed, to the entire satisfaction of the generous donor.

January 2d. The special committee on substitute bounty fund were authorized to pay $15 premium for each recruit enlisted, and credited to the quota of Kings county; said sum being paid to the party presenting the recruit. This premium, however, was not paid to recruits for veteran regiments.

January 6th. *The First Long Island Regiment* (Brooklyn Phalanx), Col. Nelson Cross, returned on a short furlough, after an absence of nearly two years and a half, during which they had participated in fourteen battles; 234 men alone returned, out of the 1,000 who went forth to the war, and they had all reenlisted for the war. It is needless to say that they met with a cordial welcome home; were escorted, by the 28th New York State

National Guard, to the City Hall, where they were addressed by the mayor and common council, and partook of a collation prepared for them.

February 2d and 4th. Two amateur dramatic entertainments at the Athenæum, in aid of the United Sanitary Commission, produced the sum of $1,000.

February 22d. A national and state flag, both of silk, with rosewood staffs and silver mountings, with the inscriptions, were this day presented to the 23d Regiment, New York State National Guard, by the ladies of Brooklyn. The presentation took place in front of Mr. S. B. Chittenden's residence, in Pierrepont street, addresses being made by that gentleman, the Rev. Francis Vinton, D.D., and Brig. Gen. Pratt, the colonel commanding the regiment.

This day, also, was signalized by the opening of the great *Brooklyn and Long Island Fair* — an event which is not only memorable in the civic annals as a magnificent exhibition of patriotism; but, as being, in fact, the initial point of a new civic life and progress — previously undreamed of.

The Brooklyn and Long Island Fair resulted from the joint efforts of the *War Fund Committee of Brooklyn and County of Kings* (acting through its sanitary committee) and of the *Woman's Relief Association of the city of Brooklyn*, recognized as the Brooklyn Auxiliary of the United States Sanitary Commission, and to which the sanitary committee of the War Fund was advisory. An appeal made, in May, 1863, by the War Fund sanitary committee to the churches of Brooklyn, asking cash contributions for the purchase of materials for hospital clothing, to be made up by the families of our soldiers in the field, through the agency of the *Female Employment Society*,[1] placed about $6,000 in the hands of the committee, which proved an ample provision for the summer. In the following autumn it was found that the Woman's Relief Association, during its first year, had turned into the depot of the Sanitary Commission, hospital clothing, etc., to the value of nearly $50,000. It became a serious question with the committee whether fresh appeals should be made to the churches, or whether some new plans could be devised by which the citizens of Brooklyn could be brought into active and efficient sympathy with the work of the Woman's Relief Association for the winter of 1863–4. Early in October, the plan of a great fair for the city was suggested by Mr. James H. Frothingham, one of the War Fund committee. After conference with Dr. Bellows, president of the United States Sanitary Commission, and others, the Sanitary Committee broached the subject (November 6th) to the Woman's Relief Association, in the form of a general plan for a great city fair, which it was thought might realize the sum of 75 to $80,000, for the United States Sanitary Commission. But it was feared that our local charities, whose annual fairs were already being prepared for, might suffer too seriously by such an undertaking, and the matter, for the present, was laid over. Meanwhile, on the 14th of the same month, the ladies of New York, under the auspices of the United States Sanitary Commission, announced by a circular the project of a great Metropolitan Fair, to begin in that city on the 22d of February, 1864; and the cooperation of the Brooklyn ladies was invited, a department of the fair being assigned to this city. On the 20th of November, the Woman's Relief Association decided to unite in the work, as the Brooklyn Division of the Metropolitan Fair; leaving open, however, the question as to which city the said Brooklyn Division would carry on their work in. At a special meeting of the Woman's Relief Association on the 24th, it was determined, in anticipation of the great fair, to increase the representation from the respective churches; and, on the 4th of December, a large meeting of the association was held at the chapel of the Packer Institute, Mrs. J. S. T. Stranahan presiding, and the project of an *independent fair* was developed by the secretary of the sanitary committee of the War Fund, who said that Brooklyn as a city of three hundred thousand inhabitants, should make itself felt and appreciated, and accomplish as much relatively as the city of New York. Measures for the enlargement of membership of the executive board of the Woman's Relief Association, and for the cooperation of the War Fund committee were adopted, and enthusiastic speeches were delivered by Rev. Drs. Buddington, Farley and Spear, the latter of whom ventured a prediction (which many then deemed a little "wild") that the fair would realize as high as $150,000. On the evening of the 5th, a meeting of the War Fund Committee was held at their rooms, which was attended by about a hundred persons of recognized influence in the community, and it was resolved that a committee of sixty gentlemen be appointed as a general committee, with power to add to their number, for the purpose of cooperating with the Woman's Relief Association in arranging for and conducting the Brooklyn division of the Great Metropolitan Fair. This committee organized the same evening, with Mr.

---

[1] Created long before the war for the object which its name indicates; and which proved itself a most efficient colaborer with those special organizations which had their origin in the war.

A. A. Low as president, and went vigorously to work. At a meeting of the Woman's Relief Association on December 18th, the spirit was found to be rising, and under the inspiration of the glowing remarks of Henry Ward Beecher and others, it soon ran up to fever heat. Notices were sent to the sewing societies of the various churches and to the towns and villages of Long Island, asking their cooperation in the Brooklyn Division of the great fair, and the response, from every quarter, was prompt and cordial.

On the evening of December 19th, a meeting of the War Fund Committee was held at the Chapel of the Polytechnic Institute, Mr. A. A. Low presiding, and Ex-Mayor Lambert acting as secretary. An advisory board of twenty-nine gentlemen was appointed, of which Dwight Johnson was was chairman, who were empowered to cooperate with the Woman's Relief Association, in the conduct of the Brooklyn division of the Metropolitan Fair; Rev. Dr. Farley made a report of his recent visit to the Boston Fair, then in progress, and earnest speeches were made by Dwight Johnson, Esq., Rev. T. L. Cuyler, A. A. Low, and Walter S. Griffith, Esqrs. Mr. John D. McKenzie then made an effective speech, and the enthusiasm which he elicited was brought to a climax when he subscribed $1,000 to the objects of the fair. Amid the tumultuous applause which ensued, Mr. A. A. Low followed with his subscription of $2,500; and then, in rapid succession, the $1,000 and $500 subscriptions flowed in until $25,500 had been pledged, and Mr. S. B. Chittenden, in addition to his $1,000 contribution, offered a pair of Devon steers, from his farm in Connecticut, which he promised to "make as fat as possible on Yankee corn," before the fair opened. This great meeting "drove the nail and clinched it." On the following day, the list of contributions was swelled to $29,750; and, before the end of December the subscription had reached a point of over $50,000, through the activity of the chairmen of the several special committees. By this time, the managers of the New York side of the Metropolitan Fair had felt obliged to postpone its opening from February 22d to the 28th of March; but the Brooklynites felt that it would be bad policy for them to accede to any postponement. The enthusiasm was at its height; the 22d of February was hallowed and heart-stirring in its associations, and these could not be ignored or lost; accordingly, at the regular weekly meeting of the Woman's Relief Association, December 30th, it was resolved that Brooklyn should proceed without regard to the arrangements of New York, and that the fair should open on February 22d. Brooklyn, having thus fearlessly *cut loose from leading strings*, found that a new impulse was given to the work. The Academy of Music was engaged; arrangements rapidly matured for other buildings, as the case might require, and the city became, throughout all classes of the people, intent, energetic and enthusiastic to the highest degree in preparation for the noble undertaking which they had assumed. A public meeting at the Academy of Music, on the 2d of January, 1864, was held; the managers of the fair received from the municipal authorities, permission to erect the necessary temporary buildings, and on the 19th the committee on internal arrangements and reception of goods announced that they were ready to receive donations of goods, produce, etc., etc. On the same evening, Green-Point was stirred to its core by a rousing public meeting, on behalf of the fair; on the 21st the town of Flatbush had an earnest public meeting, and the good people of the Island were not behind hand in their preparation for the coming event; public meetings being held in most of the towns, efficient committees appointed, and every energy used to bring out a handsome representation for the Island on the occasion.

In addition to the Academy of Music, two temporary structures were erected for the fair, one on a lot (the use of which was loaned by Mr. A. A. Low), adjoining the Academy on the west, to be 68 by 100 feet and two stories high; the other on a lot opposite the Academy (loaned for the purpose by Mrs. Packer), to be 100 feet square and one story high. The first of these buildings was to be occupied by the restaurant, and was called *Knickerbocker Hall*, and the latter (which communicated with the Academy by a covered bridge thrown across Montague street, at a sufficient height not to interfere with public travel), was called the *Hall of Manufactures* and the *New England Kitchen.* The large building on the north-east corner of Montague and Clinton streets, known as the Taylor mansion, was also engaged for the fair; and in it was located the *Museum of Arts*, *Relics and Curiosities*, and the editorial rooms of the *Drum-Beat*, the newspaper issued during the fair. The Academy was opened for the reception of goods from February 15th to 18th inclusive, and the vast influx of donations, astonished even those who were best informed of the progress of the work.

At three P. M. of February 22d (Washington's birthday) the fair was inaugurated by a grand parade of the entire military force of the city, including veterans and soldiers of volunteer regiments at home on furlough, together with the United States marines from the Navy Yard. At seven o'clock P. M., the fair was first opened to the public. The *Great Central Bazaar*, for the sale of articles for the fair, was held in the Academy building, the grand floor of which was boarded over, level with the stage, making a magnificent hall, with an area of 10,570 square feet, and, with the second floor and lobbies a total area of 20,300 square feet. The decorations of the Academy were very beautiful, and their patriotic nature was in fine keeping with the character of the great enterprise. From the centre of the auditorium ceiling was suspended, by invisible wires, an American eagle, which seemed to hover in mid-air over the majestic scene below. From the apex of the column of drapery sprang radiating bands of red, white and blue bunting, which, stretching in graceful curves until they touched the pillars of the amphitheatre, were thence twined, and drooped, and festooned around the whole circle of the building. Above the arch of the stage, in letters formed of tiny jets of gas, blazed the inscription "IN UNION IS STRENGTH." The back wall of the stage was completely screened by a mammoth painting of a field hospital tent of the United States Sanitary Commission, with nurses, wounded soldiers, etc. The rough wood work above the side scenes was skillfully concealed by draperies of white and colored muslin, and flags were everywhere displayed in profusion. The huge crimson drop-curtain was caught up and stretched along the ceiling of the stage, thus hiding its rude surface, and giving at the same time a brilliant effect. Many elegant paintings were also displayed in the auditorium, while the superb afghans, and many colored quilts, with which the vast building was fairly tapestried, added their vivid splendor to the effect of the *tout ensemble*. When the magnificent building was flooded at night with the splendor of a thousand gas jets, it presented a spectacle which was nothing less than enchanting. The stalls of the ground floor were arranged in concentric arcs of circles, leaving a large space in the centre of the building for the accommodation of the crowd. The goods, as far as practicable, were admirably separated into classes, and an effective system of ushers was adopted, which prevented confusion at the entrances, etc. In the family circle, Dodworth's band or the Navy Yard band furnished exquisite music every night, so long as the fair lasted.

In the assembly room of the Academy was located the art gallery, where were contained, in the opinion of connoisseurs, more works of *real* merit than any which had been offered to the public for many years. One hundred and seventy-four paintings and sketches and several statues were exhibited under the management of the artists of Brooklyn and Long Island.

In Knickerbocker hall, one of the temporary structures before mentioned, was a huge *salle a manger*, a triumph of decorative art, supplied with all the appliances of a first class restaurant, where the thousands of visitors were constantly fed, by a systematic arrangement of donations of eatables, etc., from the churches of Brooklyn, and from the towns of Long Island, which provided *seven-eighths* of the daily demands of the establishment. Five hundred persons could be comfortably accommodated at one time in this great restaurant, which netted the fair the splendid sum of nearly $24,000.

In the other temporary structure, before mentioned, as on the opposite side of Montague street (present site of the Mercantile Library) was the *funny* feature of the fair, *The New England Kitchen* — reproducing, in all its detail, the Yankee farm house life of the last century. In this large room (40×75) all the furniture and appointments were, as nearly as it was possible to have them, veritable antiques. In one corner were several ancient spinning wheels, kept constantly in vigorous motion by venerable matrons, with their starched caps and snowy kerchiefs crossed over the bosoms of their stuff gowns; then there was the dresser with its rows of shining pewter; the ever ready churn, the tall clock sedately ticking in the corner; the ridge poles strung with dried apples, pumpkins, glittering red peppers, seed-bags, and *yarbs* of healing virtues — and, above all, the huge open fire-place with its mighty logs, and the traditional trammel, from which swung a gigantic pot, in which from time to time, were cooked great messes of unctuous chowder, or mush; while, from the ovens at the side, emerged spicy Indian puddings, smoking loaves of Boston brown bread and huge delicious dishes of pork and beans. On the long tables were bountiful supplies of old fashioned victuals, with cider, pumpkin, mince and apple pies, doughnuts, etc.; while the guests were waited upon by pretty damsels with curious names and quaint attire. During the continuance of the fair, the New England Kitchen was the scene of a series of novel entertainments, reproducing some of the peculiar social customs of our ancestors, such as the old folk's concert, the donation visit, the quilting party, the apple bee, and the wedding, all of which were admirably planned and carried out. The kitchen was constantly filled by an amused and delighted crowd.

Under the same roof with the kitchen was the *Hall of Manufactures*, in the centre of which hung a mammoth broom, forwarded from Cincinnati to the fair, with the following challenge to Brooklyn: "Sent by the managers of the Cincinnati fair, greeting: We have swept up $240,000; Brooklyn, beat this if you can." To this, as soon as the magnificent result of our fair began to loom up so that an approximate estimate could be made, some sporting member of the committee on manufactures appended the following addenda; "Brooklyn *sees* the $240,000, and *goes* $150,000 *better*."

In the *Taylor Mansion* was improvised a collection of relics, curiosities, etc., such as would have delighted the heart of Scott's Antiquary, or excited the envy of a Barnum. In the same building was a *gallery of engravings*, the largest and finest collection ever brought together in this country; a splendid collection of *Japanese, Chinese and Eastern curiosities*; a room devoted to the sale of *photographs*, and another to that of *autographs*. In the upper story of the building was the editorial room of the *Drum-Beat*, issued daily (commencing Feb. 22d), under the editorship of Rev. Dr. Storrs, and his associate, Mr. Francis Williams, of the *New York Evening*

Post. Each number contained twenty-four wide columns, of elegant typographical appearance, and the first page bore an appropriate title-vignette. The last regular number appeared March 5th, and a supplementary number was issued on the 11th. A small but choice *Cattle Show* completed the departments of the fair, at which the Chittenden steers were sold at auction for $295, and a splendid Durham bull, presented by Elias Howe, Jr., was sold by shares for $500.

The fair was closed by a grand *calico ball*, the 11th of March, the proceeds of which ($2,000), were appropriated to the Brooklyn Female Employment Society.

It was justly said that " there probably never was an enterprise of the vast proportions of this fair, which was so admirably systematized, considering the brief time that was permitted to perfect and carry the system of organization into execution. From the opening of the fair to its close, not the slightest indication of confusion in the working of the machinery was visible to the observer, although no one but those who had the complicated arrangements in charge can estimate or appreciate the amount of thought, energy and labor which were required to keep everything moving on with such delightful harmony and precision. But this was all below the surface. To the public, everything proceeded from day to day, with as much order and regularity as if the fair had been a vast business establishment wherein years of experience had been devoted to systematizing its operations.[1]

The fair closed on the 8th of March; its actual net result being $402,943.74: of which the sum of $300,000 was paid directly into the treasury of the United States Sanitary Commission; and the balance, at the suggestion of the Rev. Dr. Bellows, president of that Commission, was expended in the shape of supplies, to be furnished according to the exigencies of the service, through the agency of the *Woman's Relief Association* of Brooklyn. This magnificent gift also called forth the following encomium from Dr. Bellows, who wrote to the president of the Brooklyn and Long Island fair: "As this is by far *the largest amount ever put into our treasury at one time by any community*, I feel that it deserves the most marked expression of our gratitude and wonder * * * Brooklyn, by the only thoroughly approvable kind of secession, has henceforth declared her independence of New York. She has indicated her right and power to lead, and we shall no longer hear her spoken of as an appendix to the metropolis. She is, at least, entitled to be the second volume of that great work, the Commercial Capital, of which New York is the first."

---

[1] Very much of this remarkable freedom from all friction and distracting influences, and of that earnestness of patriotic feeling, was undoubtedly due to the extraordinary tact and executive ability of Mrs. Mariamne Fitch Stranahan, the head of the Woman's Relief Association. As the wife of the Hon. J. S. T. Stranahan, she occupied a high social position; and, ever active in every good work in the city of her adoption, she was admirably fitted by her natural abilities, as well as by the experience gained in eight years service as first directress of the Graham Institute for the Relief of Aged and Indigent Females, for the duties devolved upon her in connection with the Sanitary Fair. " She was the right woman in the right place. She gave her time to the work with a zeal and perseverance that never faltered, and with a hopefulness for her country, which yielded to no discouragement or despondency. As a presiding officer, she discharged her duties with a self-possession, courtesy, skill and method, that commanded universal admiration. No woman ever labored in a sphere more honorable, and but few women could have filled her place." She died on the 30th of August, 1866, her health having, no doubt, been seriously impaired by the severe physical and mental strain, placed upon her by her duties in connection with the Woman's Relief Association, and the Sanitary Fair, which originated therefrom.

It was indeed true that the Brooklyn and Long Island Fair, was "*the first great act of self-assertion ever made by the city of Brooklyn.* Previous to that we had contented ourselves as a community with believing, that for beauty of local position, Brooklyn was unsurpassed; a claim generally admitted. She had, also, with remarkable unanimity, been allowed the soubriquet of the "city of churches," although never exceeding the proportion of one church to two thousand persons. The census was an indisputable witness to the fact of the wondrous ratio in which her population had increased, till she was equally, beyond denial, the third city, in that respect, in the Union. Among the merchants of New York, most prominent for intelligence, wealth, and consequent influence, were found many who resided within the walls of Brooklyn; while the crowds crossing her ferries to and from the great metropolis, at morning and evening, showed how largely the entire business and labor of the latter were performed by our citizens.

"Nevertheless, Brooklyn was but a suburb, overshadowed by her mighty neighbor. Travelers, foreign and native, in vast numbers, visited the chief commercial city of our country, on errands of business or pleasure; but, if not called to Brooklyn through personal claims of kindred or friendship, rarely sought it except to visit the great Navy Yard of the nation, or the most beautiful cemetery in the world; severally so placed on what was once her northern, and what is still her southern boundary, that either could be reached while the city itself was practically ignored. The visitor came and went, having seen little or nothing of it, except its unattractive outskirts, and with no longing awakened to see more. Meanwhile, she had gathered to herself public schools, which had grown to rank among the best of the kind in the land; private or corporate institutions of education for either sex, which in their entire equipment, management and efficiency would do honor to any community; a body of clergy, as a whole, and for their numbers not surpassed in character and gifts by those of any of our citizens; great institutions of charity, too largely dependent, however, on annual contributions rather than permanent endowments; courses of lectures, delivered by the ablest men of the country, or by savants from abroad, traveling or resident in America; a well appointed Philharmonic Society, amply patronized and appreciated; an Academy of Music, the beauty and value of which the fair served to make more widely and palpably known; a Mercantile Library, which, for many years, has met an inevitable want of every progressive community; and a Historical Society, recently formed from the city and island, which had started in its course with remarkable vigor. And yet, withal, Brooklyn, till the fair, had no status before the country beyond that of a remarkably quiet suburban town, where, after a hard day's labor, weary men found lodging places till the next day's work began."

But, in, and by the fair, Brooklyn "stood forth for once, apart from New York;" and, summoning Long Island to her side, put forth her powers to help, to the utmost of her means, the noblest charity of the world, and proved herself alive to her proud position, her abundant wealth, her great privileges and opportunities. And, since that time, whatever Brooklyn has wanted, she has sought for with her own powers, and has obtained it; for *liberality and self-power increase by the using.*

1864. February. For the purpose of stimulating enlistments to the credit of Kings county, members of the Substitute Bounty Fund committee of the Board of Supervisors, visited the Army of the Potomac, as well as Port Royal, where Kings county regiments were stationed, for the purpose of inducing them to reenlist to the credit of Kings county, which efforts were eminently successful.

March 6th. Two hundred and fifty reenlisted men of the 48th New York Volunteers left Brooklyn, to rejoin their regiment, then in Florida.

March 11th. A great calico ball was held at the Academy of Music, in aid of the Sanitary Commission.

March 14th. Appeared the president's call for 200,000 men, additional to the 500,000 already called for.

March 10th and 15th. Meetings were held at the Reformed Dutch Church, on the Heights, for the purpose of organizing in Brooklyn, a branch of the *United States Christian Commission.* A committee of prominent citizens of all denominations, previously appointed, reported an informal plan of organization, and the following gentlemen, with such others connected with the churches of Long Island, as they should hereafter associate with them, were constituted a *Christian Commission for Brooklyn and Long Island*, to act in concert with the United States Christian Commission, in supplying Christian teachers and religious and moral literature to the army and navy, etc., etc.: Revs. James Eells, D.D., R. S. Storrs, Jr., D.D., Jno. H. Raymond, D.D., W. I. Budington, D.D., J. B. Waterbury, D.D., J. E. Rockwell, D.D., Elbert S. Porter, D.D., E. H. Canfield, D.D., Samuel T. Spear, D.D., Chas. S. Robinson, L. H. Mills, C. D. Foss, R. M. Hatfield, Theodore L. Cuyler, Wilbur F. Watkins, Wm. S. Karr, E. Mills, Robert Lowery; Samuel B. Caldwell; Thos. H. Messenger; Livingston K. Miller; S. B. Chittenden; Reuben W. Rogers; Henry Sheldon; Edward Cary; Wm. J. Coffin; Edward A. Lambert; Wm. W. Armfield; James C. Southworth; John D. McKenzie; David Wesson; Lewis Morris; A. D. Matthews; R. L. Wyckoff; John G. Fay; Richard H. Cornwell; Benson Van Vleet; Dwight Johnson; Walter S. Griffith.

The above named committee, organized March 23d, under the title of the *Brooklyn and Long Island Christian Commission*, and elected the following officers: *President*, Walter S. Griffith; *Vice-President*, Rev. James Eells, D.D.; *Corresponding Secretary*, Rev. J. B. Waterbury, D.D.; *Recording Secretary*, Wm. J. Coffin; *Treasurer*, Samuel B. Caldwell. Previously, the patriotic and Christian people of Brooklyn and Long Island had given their donations through the New York branch of the United States Christian Commission, which had a special portion of the field assigned to it. Great interest was manifested by the public; office rooms were secured in Hamilton building, corner of Court and Joralemon streets; and funds were liberally and almost spontaneously provided by the churches and by individual contributions. The public meetings held for the purpose of interesting the community and obtaining funds were most enthusiastic in character and fruitful in results, abounding in scenes of the intensest interest and the most touching incidents. The funds placed by this Brooklyn and Long Island Commission, at the disposal of the central commission of Philadelphia, at different times, amounted in the aggregate to nearly $9,000.

The number of books, periodicals, newspapers, etc., distributed by this commission to the army and navy cannot be accurately stated; yet we learn from their report, that from March, 1864 to April, 1865, they sent out bibles, and portions of the scriptures, 1,210; psalm and hymn books, 4,033; small books for knapsack, 52,079; books for libraries, 5,641; magazines and pamphlets, 50,544; newspapers, religious and others, 177,520; pages of tracts, 787,226, being a total of 1,078,304. These were all carefully selected from our best families, or from the lists of the best publishing houses, and were of the highest character, as to interest and morality. With these were sent, also, in the course of a single year, between three and four thousand comfort-bags and housewives, the productions of sewing circles, young ladies' schools, Sunday schools, etc., etc., and which were comforts indeed to the brave soldiers and seamen, not less from their intrinsic adaptability to camp needs, than from the evidence they bore with them of the thoughtful remembrance of the patriotic women and girls who made them. Out of two hundred chapel tents furnished by the Central United States Christian Commission to the soldiers of the Army of the Potomac, for their accommodation in the matter of religious meetings in camp, ten were furnished by the Brooklyn and Long Island Christian Commission, at an expense of $5,000. Each of these large tents bore, on its canvas roof, the name of the Brooklyn and Long Island Christian Commission, and to each was furnished a library, comprising, in all, about 1,350 volumes. One thousand and thirty volumes were contributed by James H. Prentice, of Brooklyn, and several other excellent libraries were also sent from here to the hospitals at Hampton, Va., Fredericksburg, Md., and others. $500 was also contributed by the Brooklyn and Long Island Christian Commission to the permanent chapel erected at the Hampton Hospital. In addition to this, and in prompt response to an appeal to the churches of Brooklyn, one hundred and sixty-seven delegates, representing nearly all the evangelical denominations, were sent to the front for humane and religious labor in the field, camp and hospital, and on board vessels of the navy. They were sent in companies of from two to ten or twelve, and usually spent six weeks in the work.

March 17th. The *Union* of this date, says:

> "Though Brooklyn has had to bear its full share of the responsibilities and burdens of the war, its natural advantages, and the enterprise of its people, have proved equal to any exigency; and the course of our city has been as prosperous and as progressive as in more auspicious times. A satisfactory attestation of this fact may be had by a walk through the outskirts of the city, where costly structures rear their lofty heads, and the busy hum of industry may constantly be heard. The large manufacturing interests of our city — which exist to an extent that but few of our citizens have any conception of — are all highly prosperous, and are employed to their fullest capacity.
>
> "But, it is in that portion of our city known as Green-Point, where the greatest evidences of progress and prosperity are to be be seen. Within the past year, a dozen or more streets in the Seventeenth ward, which promise to become the most frequented and important thoroughfares, have been opened, graded and paved, thus enormously enhancing the value of the property in that district. In the same ward there has been erected within the past eight months, not less than one hundred first class dwelling houses and stores, and yet the demand is greatly in advance of the supply. Besides these buildings, there have been erected in the same locality, docks, ferry houses, and factories, which have largely increased the traffic and importance of the neighborhood.
>
> "But, perhaps, the most encouraging feature of Brooklyn enterprise is to be found in the unabated prosperity of the ship building interest. The estimated value of the vessels now building at Green-Point, including those for the government, is upwards of ten millions of dollars, and the number of persons employed thereon, is between two and three thousand.
>
> The first iron vessel built on the plan of Capt. Ericson, was constructed at the works of A. J. Rowland, Green-Point, which establishment must ever be famous, while we continue to remember the battle of the *Monitor* and the Merrimac. Since that memorable event, Mr. Rowland has constructed seven vessels of a similar character, and of the average value of $500,000 each.

"The same firm have two iron monitors under way. One, the *Puritan*, a sea-going vessel (length, 340 feet; breadth of beam, 50 feet; depth, 23 feet), is the largest of the monitors yet built, and is justly regarded as a perfect marvel of naval architecture and strength. She is so nearly finished that she will be ready for launching early in May. The other iron vessel under way at this yard, is the *Cohoes*, a light draft monitor for coast service. She is 300 feet long, 42 feet wide, 28 feet depth of hold, and 2,800 tons burden. The number of hands employed at this yard, will average about five hundred.

"The Dry Dock Iron Works is a young rival of Mr. Rowland's establishment, and was opened last fall by Mr. J. S. Underhill. At this establishment is being constructed a light draft monitor, to be called the *Mordoc*, and in all respects similar to the Cohoes, building in Mr. Rowland's yard.

"Mr. Henry Steers, at his yard, is building for the government, the sloop *Idaho*, a vessel of 3,000 tons, 300 feet long, 44 feet wide, and 27 feet depth of hold. The Idaho will be launched within a month from this time. She is built with an express view to speed, will be furnished with two propellers, and contain engines of 3,000 horse power, and will prove a splendid addition to the United States navy."

A large number of ocean and sound steamers (both side wheel and propellers), ferry boats, and wooden vessels, were also being constructed in the various yards.

March 19th. The *first* fair for the benefit of the Christian Commission in Brooklyn, was held at No. 39 Pineapple street, by a school of nine little (five to eight year old), children taught by Miss Ketchum, viz: Katie S. White, Willie Forbes, Rebecca T. Rowland, Sarah Howe, Walter Nordorf, Agnes Forbes, Lucy Howe, Alice Moffat, Lizzie King; proceeds of their effort, $52.

March 23. The board of supervisors resolved "that the special committee on bounty to volunteers be, and are hereby empowered to pay such sums not exceeding the amount heretofore paid to volunteers for the army, if they find it will be advantageous to the county, to recruits in the *naval* service, provided that this county be credited on the quota therefor." The committee finding, on inquiry, that credit would be given Kings county for sailors enlisting to her credit (three years service being required to obtain credit for one man), resolved to pay naval recruits, the following bounties, for one year, $100; for two and three years, $200; for Marine corps (term of service being four years), $300.

March 25th. A grand entertainment was given at the Academy, by the Musæola Association, for the benefit of the families of the members of the 14th, 48th and 67th Regiments.

April 5th. *The Brooklyn Yacht Club* was incorporated by act of legislature.

May 15th. A call from the Brooklyn and Long Island Christian Commission, for one hundred minute men, to go to the battle-field and hospital, at the front, for the succor and spiritual comfort of the wounded soldiers, was this day promulgated from all the pulpits of Brooklyn.

May 18th. Appeared the *bogus* proclamation of the president, calling for an additional draft of 400,000 men, and appointing a day of national humiliation and prayer. This document emanated from two Brooklyn newspaper men.

There being a slight deficiency in the full quota of the county, a draft was ordered to fill the same; and, on the 17th, the board of supervisors directed their bounty committee to pay out of the funds remaining in the county treasurer's hands, $300 to each and every man held, or that may be held, to service, under this or any subsequent draft made, in the second and third congressional districts of the state, etc., who may procure an acceptable substitute.

June 2d. The bounty fund committee of the board of supervisors, were empowered and directed to pay the bounty to all men drafted, and who should enter the army. But few cases, however, occurred under this resolution.

June. Capt. Poinsett Cooper, son of the deceased Commodore Cooper, U. S. N., while recruiting his health from wounds received in the Battle of the Wilderness, was presented with a superb sword, belt and gloves, by the officers of the Brooklyn Bank, in which he was formerly employed.

July 9th. At a meeting of the field and staff officers of the 1st Long Island Regiment, held at Delmonico's Hotel, in the city of New York, *The Association of Officers of the First Long Island Volunteer Regiment of* 1861, was formed "to keep perpetually green the valor, merits and virtues of our brothers in arms, who have fallen by our side, fighting for God and country," and "to preserve as a living coal, the goodly fellowship and brotherly regard felt each for the other, by those who survive." Officers: Col. Nelson Cross, *President;* Lieut. Col. Henry L. Van Ness, *Vice-President;* Adj't. Geo. B. Lincoln, *Secretary.*

July 13th. The board of supervisors passed a resolution, directing the bounty committee of the board, pursuant to a previous resolution (June 23d), "to pay to any person furnishing an accepted volunteer, or recruit for three years United States service, the sum not exceeding $300, the same as paid to any drafted man furnishing a substitute, and to be paid upon the like certificate of the United States officer, and without regard to the person furnishing such recruit being liable to be drafted into the United States service, etc."

It having become necessary to keep pace with New York city, in the payment of hand money, as well as bounty, the committee determined to pay a premium of $20 for one year men, and $35 for two and three years men.

July 14th. The corner-stone of the new Armory in the Eastern District, was laid.

July 18th. A further call for 500,000 one year men was made by the general government; and, under resolution of the board of supervisors, passed August 16th, the committee commenced to pay one year recruits and volunteers the sum of $175, and $100 hand money to any person bringing a recruit. In case the recruit presented himself at the office, he received both bounty and hand money. This hand money was made to apply, however, only to one year recruits.

July 31st. The 151st New York Volunteers (or First Metropolitan Regiment), was, together with the 46th and 51st, newly arrived from the front, honored with a magnificent reception by the authorities of the city of New York. The 151st was one of the four Metropolitan Regiments, raised under the auspices of the Metropolitan Police, and to its ranks the 45th precinct of Brooklyn contributed one entire company, of which Sergt. Daniel Jacobs was appointed captain. The 46th precinct, also of Brooklyn, furnished a company to the regiment, under the captaincy of Mr. George Rudyard, and the organization was largely indebted to the labors of Police Captains Woglom and Mullen. The 51st Regiment was, also, to a still greater extent, a Brooklyn organization, full one-half of its members having been recruited in this city. Of the 46th Regiment, two entire companies were raised in Brooklyn.

Among those who took part in the reception was a portion of the 13th Regiment, New York State National Guard, of this city, and the police to the number of about one thousand, which included the off platoons of the Brooklyn force. The veterans with the military and police escort formed in procession near the police headquarters, in Mulberry street, and formed a very imposing *cortege* as they marched through some of the principal thoroughfares to the rooms of the Union League Club, on the corner of Union square and Seventeenth street, where suitable arrangements had been made for the accommodation of the party. The veterans were appropriately addressed by Col. Colyer and Col. Shepard, and were subsequently furnished with a bountiful collation. On their line of march they were everywhere greeted with acclamations and shouts of welcome.

August 4th. A national fast day.

August 5th. Companies B and C (90 men), 28th New York State National Guards,left for Elmira, on one hundred days tour of service.

August 7th. The 90th New York Volunteers come home on veteran furlough, and returned to the field on September 2d.

September 10th. "Next to the news of the fall of Atlanta," says a Brooklyn paper, "the most cheering announcement of the week, is that Kings County is out of the draft. The thousands who were waiting in trembling anxiety the turning of the wheel of fate are greatly relieved. Brokers are chagrined that their profits are summarily cut off. Substitutes who hold back for an increased price, regret that they refused liberal offers; and some parties who had furnished substitutes wish they had saved their money. But the mass of the people rejoice greatly that the city has, for the present, at least, avoided the hardships of the conscription. The navy has taken us out of the draft. The efforts of the committee of aldermen and supervisors to have previous naval enlistments credited were successful, General Hays has issued a certificate, by which it appears that on the 1st August, the deficiency under all calls was, in the 2d District, 3,494, and in the 3d District, 2,481, making a total of 5,975. The two districts are credited, on account of naval enlistments prior to February 24, 1864, with 6,046, leaving a working capital for any future call, a surplus of 71."

September 12th. A strong appeal is made by the Brooklyn and Long Island Christian Commission, for delegates to go to the aid of the suffering and dying at Winchester and Petersburg. Five or six thousand are reported as lying at City Point, mostly those who breasted the shock of battle in front of Petersburg and on the Weldon rail road.

This draft found the Seventeenth ward (Green-Point) with its quota (one hundred and seventy-one men) unfilled. Meetings were at once called, money raised, a committee appointed and in about two weeks time, the ward was out of the draft, and with quite a surplus to its credit. Over $20,000 was raised for this purpose in a short time.

September 19th and 23d. Meetings of a number of our best citizens, at No. 9 Court street, resulted on the 30th, in the formation of a *Soldiers Home Association*, having for its object the provision of relief for sick, or disabled soldiers and sailors and their families. The trustees named in its incorporation were George Hall, John Greenwood, Moses F. Odell, Jonathan S. Burr, Seymour L. Husted, Geo. B. Lincoln, James M. Seabury, L. S. Burnham, Wm. H. Jenkins, James Murphy, Luther B. Wyman, Wm. H. Johnson and Charles J. Lowrey.

September 21. The 48th New York Volunteers returned home to Brooklyn.

December 3d. A public meeting in behalf of the *Soldier's Home Commission* was held at the Academy.

December 13th. The *Female Employment Society* acknowledges the receipt of one hundred dollars for the widows and orphans of deceased soldiers, being the proceeds of a fair held by the "little girls of South Brooklyn."

December 17th. Mrs. Stranahan, president of the Woman's Relief Association, acknowledges the receipt from six little girls, of one hundred and fifty dollars, being a portion of a sum of two hundred and seventy-five dollars, realized from a children's fair, held at No. 84 Joralemon street, on the 2d of the same month, for the benefit of the soldiers. The balance was reserved for the purchase of materials for the making up, by the juvenile donors, of such garments as the society should indicate as most requisite for soldiers use.

December 17th. A patriotic subscription ball, for the benefit of the destitute families of the soldiers of Brooklyn, held this evening at the Academy of Music, netted the sum of $6,036.26, which was handed over to the Female Employment Society of Brooklyn for disbursement.

December 22d. A meeting of the people of Brooklyn was held at the Academy, for the purpose of listening to an address on the history, patriotism, and sufferings of East Tennessee, and to express the sympathy felt with the heroic and unfortunate people of that loyal stronghold. Owing to the inclemency of the weather, the audience was not as large as the object deserved. Mr. A. A. Low presided, and over two thousand dollars was raised for the aid of the suffering Tennessean patriots.

December 28th. The treasurer of the *Liberty Soldiers Aid Society*, acknowledges the receipt of $26.57, being the proceeds of a fair held by five little girls, Misses Lottie Chichester, Ida Wiltse, Annie Schenck, Ida Lane and Kittie Remington.

1865. January 5th. The 173d New York Volunteers (Fourth Metropolitan) from Brooklyn, in camp at Winchester, Va., received a splendid state flag, with two guidons, donated by citizens of Brooklyn, the War Fund Committee, etc.

March 24th. *The Brooklyn Club* was organized and on the 24th of April following filed its certificate of incorporation.

April 10th. The steamer *Oceanus*, with one hundred and eighty passengers, of both sexes, set sail, under a general permit from the war department, for a trip to Charleston Harbor, Hilton Head, Fort Fisher, Fortress Monroe, Norfolk, City Point and Richmond. It was a very select and *recherche* affair, originally conceived by

Messrs. Stephen M. Griswold and Edwin A. Studwell, of Brooklyn. At Charleston, the party first heard of Lee's surrender; and, on the 14th of April, they were present at the impressive scene of restoring to its place on Fort Sumter, the stars and stripes. On this occasion the Rev. Dr. R. S. Storrs and the Rev. Henry Ward Beecher assisted, the latter delivering one of his impassioned and thrilling addresses. On the return, near Fortress Monroe, the party first heard of the assassination of President Lincoln. Before leaving the steamer, the members of this pleasant party, formed themselves into a permanent organization, known as the *Sumter Club.*[1]

News of Gen. Lee's surrender was received, and the city, as indeed, the whole country, is overflowed with joy.

April 15th. The announcement of the assassination and death of President Lincoln, plunged the whole community in mourning. Men of parties joined in the regret. All party rancor, all political bitterness was forgotten in sorrow. The thousands of flags which the day before floated joyfully upon the breeze, were silently taken down, or put at half-mast, or draped in funeral serge. Alderman D. D. Whitney, as acting mayor, issued a proclamation directing the public offices to be closed, the flags to be displayed at half-mast, and the bells to be tolled from twelve to one o'clock P. M., etc., etc. Courts, theatres and places of public amusements were closed; and everywhere a deep pall of sorrow seemed to have fallen upon the whole community. On the evening of the 17th, an immense gathering of citizens took place at the Academy of Music under the auspices of the War Fund committee; and was one of the most solemn and impressive demonstrations that had ever taken place in Brooklyn. The interior of the beautiful edifice was draped in mourning, while the vast audience, filling every available spot, exhibited feelings in perfect consonance with the mournful occasion which had brought them together. Speeches were delivered by Hon. James Humphrey, Judge Birdseye, Rev. Dr. Thomas Vinton, S. B. Chittenden, and Rev. Dr.

---

[1] See the *Trip of the Oceanus,* a handsome volume issued by the club, from the Union press.

Willits. Numerous other meetings also held in other parts of the city testified to the general sorrow.

The municipal and county authorities, public bodies, military, loyal leagues and citizens generally of Brooklyn joined in the great procession by which the city of New York, on the 26th celebrated the obsequies of the martyred president.

September 6th. The public spirited ladies of the Seventeenth ward gave a splendid entertainment and supper to the returned Green-Point soldiers at the M. E. Tabernacle, on Union, near Noble street. Green-Point contributed largely to the make up of the 131st, 158th, 170th, 127th, 159th, 132d, 62d, 51st and other regiments, besides many men contributed to the navy.

October. J. B. Jones, M.D., health officer, made a report to the common council, in which he called the attention of that body to the probable appearance upon these shores, of the Asiatic cholera, which had even then commenced its march of desolation in India and Europe, and recommended that immediate measures should be adopted for a complete and searching sanitary inspection, by ward committees, consisting of six residents, two of whom should be physicians, in connection with the aldermen, and the assistance of the police; as also for the cleaning of streets and the prompt suppression of all nuisances. These measures, were to some extent, adopted and enforced.

1866. With the 1st of January, *Samuel Booth* entered upon the duties of the mayoralty.

Samuel Booth, the subject of this sketch, and of whom the foregoing engraving is an excellent likeness, was elected in the fall of 1865, as the sixteenth mayor of the city of Brooklyn. He was born in England upon the 4th day of July, 1818, and left his birthplace with his parents, Thomas Booth and Rebecca, to come to this country, while yet an infant of only three weeks of age.

Mr. Booth spent the first ten years of his childhood in the city of New York, since which time he has been a constant resident of Brooklyn. His first residence in this city was in Tillary street, his father building for himself a small house there upon land which at that time formed a part of a large and almost unbroken farm, called the Johnson farm.

Mr. Booth never received what might be called a liberal education, although his tastes, had opportunity offered, would have inclined him toward it.

Saml Booth
Mayor

His early training was such only as could be acquired at the best of the common and select schools of that day. Up to the time of his leaving New York city, he was under the able instruction of Professor Griscom, then in charge of the high school in that city, and leaving there pursued his studies, until fourteen years of age, in Brooklyn, at the school of the late Adrian Hegeman, afterward the county clerk of Kings county.

Immediately after leaving the school of Mr. Hegeman he engaged himself as a clerk in the wholesale grocery business, in the establishment which then belonged to the late Thomas M. McLean, in Maiden lane, New York. It was here, under the able instruction of the manager of that business that Mr. Booth acquired the basis of sound business habits, which has only become strengthened since, throughout his exceedingly busy and not altogether uneventful life.

At the age of sixteen he concluded, however, to abandon the chances of success in that direction, and apprenticed himself to Elias Combs to learn the trade of carpenter and builder, which he accomplished, and in the pursuit of which he has been successfully engaged in Brooklyn up to the present time.

As an index to the character of his mind, it is stated that while most of his associates were engaged during their otherwise unoccupied evenings in the pursuit of such unprofitable recreation and amusements as offered themselves, Mr. Booth applied himself constantly to his books and sought to make amends in this way for his early lack of more complete educational advantages.

At the age of twenty-five Mr. Booth started business for himself and since that time his history has been, to a great extent, identified with the prosperity and advancement of the city of Brooklyn.

In the year 1851, the various wards of the city were represented by two aldermen instead of one, as at present, one of which, designated by lot, officiated also in the capacity of supervisor in the county board. Mr. Booth having been in that year elected alderman of the Fourth ward, it fell to him to occupy both positions, and from that time to the present, he has been almost constantly engaged, in one way or another in the public service. His first election was characterized by his receiving, with one exception, a larger majority of the suffrages of his fellow citizens than any other candidate for official honors has received in that ward either before or since that time. He served as alderman for four years, during which time the fine building known as the Kings County Penitentiary was built, the entire charge of which, for the most part, was placed under the control of Mr. Booth. After four years, declining a reelection as alderman, he received an unsolicited appointment as a member of the board of education. He filled this position two years.

In the year 1857, the office of alderman and supervisor having been separated by an act of the legislature, Mr. Booth again consented to become a candidate for office, and was elected supervisor of the Fourth ward, which position he occupied with the almost unanimous approbation of his constituency up to the time of his election to the chief executive office of the city, in the fall of 1865.

During his last term as supervisor the splendid building known as the New County Court House was erected. His fellow members lost no opportunity in taking advantage of his practical knowledge in such matters, and he was made chairman of the committee upon its erection. As a proof of his fidelity to the interests of the county it remains only to be said that this fine building, with all its appurtenances, the finest of its kind in the country, cost the sum of only $550,000.

But perhaps the most important of the duties which devolved upon Mr. Booth during his term as supervisor, were those which arose from his connection with the bounty committee during the progress of the late war. For the most part, with the exception of one year, the chairman of this committee, its most arduous duties devolved upon him, and in this, as in all other positions in which it has been his fortune to be placed, he was always found at his post and never failed to meet its most urgent responsibilities. In looking after the raising of troops to meet the various calls for them by the government during the war, his watchfulness never ceased regarding the heavy burden which of necessity fell upon Brooklyn, and he never deemed his work accomplished so long as any opportunity remained whereby that burden might be lightened. Nearly all of the money expended by the county in the payment of bounties to volunteers, amounting to the large sum of $3,800,000, passed through his hands. It may, perhaps, be not too much to say that the opportunity for plunder, which would in the present state of political matters, have dazzled many, passed by without leaving a stain upon the fair name of Mr. Booth, and no one of the Boys in Blue who represented Brooklyn in the war, or of the widows or orphans left by its casualties to seek themselves for justice at the hands of the bounty committee, has ever questioned the honesty of purpose which actuated it under the chairmanship of Mr. Booth.

In taking the chair as mayor of Brooklyn, Mr. Booth was met at the commencement with the fact, that the political party, to the suffrages of which he was indebted for his election, was in a minority in the board of aldermen. He felt therefore that he must depend, to a great extent, upon political opponents for the carrying out of any policy which might occur to him as being for the best interests of the city. His honesty of purpose, however, and his direct and unequivocal bearing toward all questions relating to city affairs soon won for him the confidence of all parties, and during his administration almost all recommendations made by him were favorably considered and acted upon by the common council. His watchfulness as regards the welfare of the city was proverbial. He brought with him to the position, the experience of a lifetime, almost, in city and county matters, and dishonesty and corruption met in him a formidable antagonist at the outset. His judgment upon all questions was unaffected by political or personal friendship or dislike, and at the close of his administration of the affairs of the office all parties joined in the almost universal expression of the able and impartial manner in which he had conducted them. It was enough for Mr. Booth to know that any project was practically advantageous to the city to meet with his warmest approval; if he failed to see this, it was as certain of his constant and unwavering opposition, and whether advocated by friends or foes, either politically or personally, was always to him a matter of the greatest indifference.

To his credit and to that of the board of aldermen it is said that no veto which he ever sent to that body was overruled.

No one, unless intimately acquainted with the every day surroundings of the office of mayor, can appreciate the demands for assistance and pecuniary aid in all manner of distress which are constantly being made upon it. To all of these appeals Mr. Booth lent an attentive ear, and he was ever ready with his purse and by his own personal efforts in some way to aid every unfortunate who came to the office with any just claim for relief.

In April, 1869, Mr. Booth received the appointment of post master of the city of Brooklyn.

February 14th. A splendid reception was given to the 90th New York Volunteers.

February 26th. The legislature passed an act, creating a *Metropolitan Sanitary District*, and *Board of Health* therein, for the preservation of life and health, and to prevent the spread of disease. The sanitary district thus created was the same as that already known as the metropolitan police district; and the board of health was composed of the commissioners of said metropolitan police, and of four sanitary commissioners (appointed by the governor) and the health officer of the port of New York. This board (wherein Brooklyn was represented by James Crane, M.D., as sanitary commissioner, and Thos. G. Bergen, police commissioner) organized on the 5th of March; and, on the 10th, Dr. John T. Conkling was elected assistant sanitary superintendent, and Dr. R. Cresson Stiles as deputy registrar of vital statistics, and detailed for duty to the city of *Brooklyn;* and to the same city, also, were assigned six sanitary inspectors.

The prevalence of cholera in various parts of Europe, and the almost absolute certainty of its appearance in this country during the year, stimulated the new board of health, immediately upon its organization, to prepare the metropolitan district for the arrival of the epidemic. On the 18th of April, the steamer Virginia, from Liverpool, arrived at quarantine, with the cholera on board, it having appeared among the steerage passengers on the 12th of that month. On the 1st of May, the first case occurred in New York city, and the epidemic continued to prevail to a very moderate extent during the month of June; increasing during July; and, from the 15th of August, decreasing until October 15th.

In Brooklyn the first distinctive case occurred on the 8th of July, and its increase, then, was not rapid and was mostly confined to localities in different sections of the city where there was the greatest amount of filth, especially in the Twelfth ward, in which occurred 288 of the total 816 cases in Brooklyn. A hospital was opened at the corner of Hamilton avenue and Van Brunt street, on the 22d of July, in charge of Dr. Wm. H. Thayer, and was closed on the 6th of September. A new hospital was built in the City Park, opened on the 15th of August under Dr. W. F. Swalm, and closed October 1st, at which time the cholera had disappeared from the city. The entire mortality from cholera, in Brooklyn, was 573; to which might undoubtedly be added, if all the facts were known, many of the 142 cases of cholera morbus, which proved fatal. The full details and statistics of this epidemic may be found, at length, in the report of the Metropolitan Board of Health for 1866.

June 13. Hon. Moses F. Odell, naval officer of the port of New York, four years a member of congress, and twenty-one years superintendent of the sabbath school of the Sands street Methodist church, died, aged 48.

October 13th. Celebration of the completion of the *Erie Basin Dry Dock.*

October 25th. Was rendered memorable in our civic annals by the presentation of medals, prepared by order of the common council, to every Brooklyn soldier who had returned alive and with an honorable record, from the many battle-fields of the South.

Early in the morning, the veterans, and the members of the various militia regiments of the city, gathered at the assigned places to participate in the proceeding. Nearly every house was adorned with bunting, and the City Hall, police headquarters, and other public buildings were fairly covered with flags. The people were enthusiastic in their manifestations of interest. Every window was filled, and the housetops crowded, while the streets were packed, blue and gray being mingled promiscuously.

At a little after ten o'clock, his excellency, Gov. Reuben E. Fenton, arrived at Fulton ferry, and was greeted with a salute of twenty-one guns. A procession was then formed and proceeded (*via* Fulton, Sands and Washington streets) to the City Hall, where an eager throng of people waited for their arrival. Every available inch of space was packed, and many were disappointed in their efforts to obtain a view. The military were halted in Washington street, and the governor and his staff, the committee of the common council and the invited guests, were escorted to the governor's room, where quite a number of local celebrities were assembled. The army and navy were well represented, but the clergymen were perhaps in a majority.

The governor was welcomed by Mayor Booth in a few well chosen remarks, and then introduced to the audience. Admiral Farragut shortly afterwards made his appearance, and was greeted with three rousing cheers. Loud calls were then made for a speech from Gov. Fenton, who briefly responded, expressing his thanks for the welcome extended to himself and staff.

Admiral Farragut was then called for, and he at length came forward, but followed the example of his predecessor in making "brevity the soul of wit," simply returning thanks and stating that he deeply felt the compliment bestowed upon him through the honors shown by the city toward her soldiers and sailors.

From the governor's room, the procession, with augmented numbers, reformed, and after devious marchings arrived at Fort Greene, where the presentation exercises took place.

A staging had been erected, and about it the veterans were massed. After a few preliminary exercises, the Rev. Dr. Storrs was introduced, and delivered an earnest and eloquent address to the veterans.

Mayor Booth then made the following presentation speech, as reported in the *Union*:

> Shortly after the surrender of Gen. Lee, and when it seemed certain that the valor of our army and navy had subdued the rebellion, it was suggested to my predecessor, Col. Wood, that the sum of $10,000 should be raised by tax for the purpose of procuring suitable medals to be presented to the heroic survivors, from this city, of many a hard-fought conflict.
>
> It is needless for me to recite, in detail, the history of this appropriation; suffice it to say that the authorities of the city, with entire unanimity, granted the amount asked for by Col. Wood; and, accordingly, in the month of March of this year, under resolutions presented by Alderman Bliss, the committee on war and military affairs, were instructed to proceed with the work of preparing the medals, which you are now to receive. Allow me, just at this point, to state a fact which I deem of some interest. I compute that, during this war, no less than 30,000 men were sent forth to battle in the name of the county of which this city forms, numerically, so large a part. To say nothing of our citizens enlisted in the regiments of other states, we were represented in over one hundred and eighty regiments and batteries of the state of New York. I believe I am correct in saying that fifteen full regiments went forth from this county, and I say it to the lasting credit of these regiments, and of those of our citizens whose inclinations led them to serve in regiments outside of Kings county, that we have never been disgraced in the person of our representatives in the army or navy.
>
> And now permit me to say that I feel myself honored in being the medium through which you are to-day presented with this testimonial of the estimation in which you are held by your fellow citizens for your heroic toils and sacrifices in the preservation of our union.
>
> The medal itself, though neat and tasteful in design and execution, possesses no great intrinsic value. Its cost, in money, is not large. In respect

to most of your number — perhaps all — I am safe in saying that there is not, in the entire city, money enough with which to procure a medal that would reward you for your patriotic services in behalf of our common country.

The medal we present bears with it that which money cannot purchase. It represents the heart and voice of more than three hundred thousand people. It is a token of your gallantry, and of their gratitude for services rendered, throughout four years, of war in defense of their homes and firesides, and, looked at in this light, it seems to me that it will be preserved and valued more highly than silver or gold by every brave man who has represented the city of Brooklyn in this war.

The small ribbon won by the French soldier as a mark of heroic deeds is prized as highly as life itself. It bears evidence that the wearer has done something for the glory of France. The testimonial we present you to-day bears evidence that you have done very much for the cause of liberty and good government throughout the world.

Its meaning is that you have aided in no small degree to save the great republic from anarchy and ruin. It means a preserved nation. No kingly gifts — these medals were suggested, as they are now given to you, by the warm impulses of your neighbors and fellow citizens. Soldiers and sailors, we are fond of you.

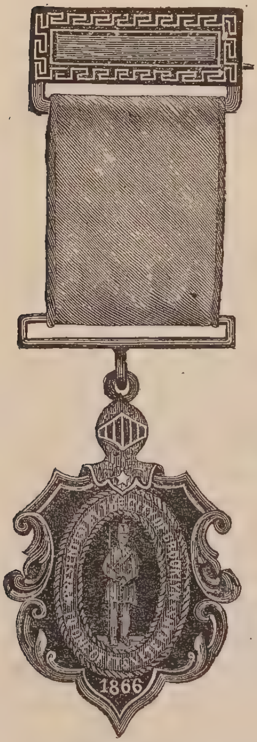
As you stand here before us, we can but feel that you represent one of the noblest phases of American institutions. Coming up from the people as you did at the simple call of your country, you have proved that the strong heart of the people can be trusted, and you have done more, by your self-sacrifices and your patriotism, to add dignity and lustre to your country's name than anything which has been accomplished since the first dawn of the nation's life.

That you may long live to bear with you the honors which you have so nobly won, is the heartfelt wish of all of us. It has been my pleasure and pride to have been connected, to a very great extent, with these matters in Kings county. I have watched your course from the commencement with a hearty satisfaction, and it is with feelings very difficult for me to express that I proceed to perform the grateful duty which devolves upon me to-day.

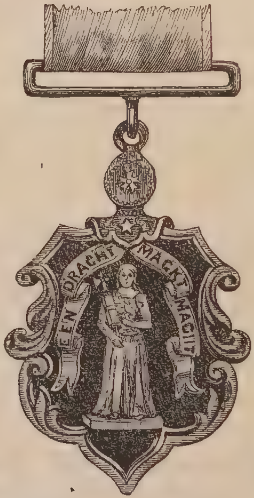
After the mayor's remarks, Ex-Mayor Wood responded in loyal and affecting language, highly eulogizing the bravery and endurance of the men who represented Brooklyn in the army and navy during the late war.

The mayor then mounted the stand and announced the song, "We'll rally round the flag boys," and being disappointed in not finding a leader there, led off himself, and those on the stage, including Admiral Farragut, his staff, Gov. Fenton, and his staff, Dr. Storrs, and the Common Council, all went at it enthusiastically;" the three thousand veterans and all the spectators joining in with right good will and fine effect.

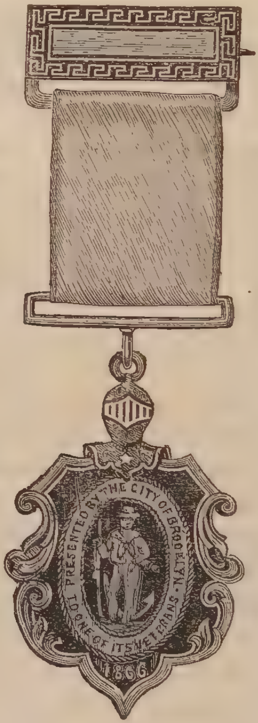
The ceremony of distributing the medals was then gone through with, and the exercises were ended.



Reverse of Soldier's Medal.



Obverse of Medal.


PRESENTED BY THE CITY OF BROOKLYN TO ONE OF ITS VETERANS
1866

Reverse of Sailor's Medal.

In the evening a banquet was given at the Arsenal, at the close of which, when the civilians had dispersed, General Roberts and staff, and a large number of other veteran officers formed a circle and passed away the time, as they did on many a bivouac, and about the camp fire, in singing "Benny Havens, O!" and other patriotic songs; relating anecdotes of the service, and expressing patriotic sentiments. There was no expression of partisan politics in that goodly company, as there had been among the one thousand civic guests, but brotherhood, and a common adulation of the dear old flag, was the order of the evening. On separating, those comrades in danger and hardship, knowing not whether there would ever be occasion again for them to be together, joined hands and sung Auld Lang Syne.

"The following list comprises the entire organizations of veterans that appeared in column, as organized by Brevet Lieut. Col. Wooley, chief of Staff:

"Col. E. Schnapf, of the 20th New York, commanding, assisted by Capt. F. W. Obermeyer, 46th New York, and Capt. Henry Wills, 133d New York, and comprising 700 men and 50 officers of the following named organizations: United States Navy, the 1st, 2d, 3d, 5th, 7th, 20th, 46th, 52d, 54th, 58th, 99th, 103d, 133d, and 173d regiments of New York Volunteer Infantry.

"The 158th New York Volunteer Infantry, 170 men, 10 officers, Major Wm. M. Bennett, commanding; the 5th New York Artillery, 115 men, 13 officers, Col. Samuel Graham, commanding; Taft's 5th New York Independent Battery, 32 men, 3 officers, Capt. E. D. Taft, commanding; 1st Long Island, 145 men, 3 officers, Brevet Col. G. W. Stilwell, commanding; Company F, 10th Regiment National Zouaves, 40 men; 48th New York Volunteer Infantry, 209 men; Col. W. B. Barton, commanding; 87th Regiment, Brooklyn Rifles, 51 men, 6 officers, Col. R. A. Bachia, commanding; 159th New York, 68 men, 7 officers; 174th New York, 60 men, 7 officers; 98th New York Infantry, 70 men, 15 officers, 51st New York, 40 men; the 14th of Brooklyn also paraded with this regiment, 100 uniformed men.

"There were, also, about 300 men and 20 officers, not represented by any organization, but sons of Brooklyn, who had belonged to other organizations throughout the state and the union. These were organized by Brevet Lieut. Col. William Hemstreet, 18th Missouri Infantry, and placed under command of Col. Olmstead, 139th New York. All of the above, exclusive of the 14th Brooklyn, consisted of uniformed veterans, and numbered in the aggregate, 2,049 men, and 148 officers. In addition to these, were probably as large, or a larger number, within the uniformed militia organizations.

"The disabled heroes who were seated in carriages were the objects of much care and attention from officers, soldiery, and citizens. On arriving at the staging, they were seized by brigadier-generals, civic officials, citizens, and militia, and lifted over the heads of the crowd, and seated on the platform; and at the termination of the ceremonies were driven to their homes, in, to them, unprecedented style."

1867. January 23d. The East river between Brooklyn and New York was bridged over by ice! The *Eagle* of that date says:

> During last night (22d) the ice which yesterday moved up the river, causing so much delay, came down with the turning of the tide, and the same difficulties in ferry navigation were experienced. Boats, however, did not attempt to cross, except at long intervals. The cold of the night exceeding that of the day, made it more difficult, and darkness still further increased the dangers of the undertaking. Finding it impossible to make the New York slip at Fulton ferry, the pilots were glad to put in at the Catharine slip on the New York side, on the principle of "any port in a storm." The milkmen, market farmers and newspaper men were not particular, so that they got across somewhere near on time.
>
> Meantime the boat, struggling out of Fulton ferry, in the New York slip, found itself imprisoned, and the chilly dawn brought the discovery that she was frozen in as effectually as was ever Dr. Kane in the Arctic ocean — differing only in degree. This was too bad, and things did not improve at that point until fully ten o'clock. As the light became strong, an experienced Fulton market dealer made a bet that he could cross on the ice, and won easily. He left Beekman street, New York, closely followed by two others to rescue him in case of accident. The trio proceeded a little down stream, and leaving Fulton ferry to the eastward, struck the Brooklyn shore at DeForrest's stores, a couple of blocks below the city flour mills. Of course the example was contagious, and every one who could, dared, or wished, started and made the trip across to New York on foot and for nothing.

As long as the ice remained bridged and fastened, an open sea was left from a little below Fulton ferry, Brooklyn side, to Green-Point, thus making the ferries between these points as available as in a summer's day. The great majority of those who must go to New York were thus ferried over without any detention. A large number of those who always prefer to walk when they can, those who like to perform a novel feat and those who were curious to see how it felt to be in the middle of the river, rushed down to DeForrest's stores, through an arched way and upon the ice. In this manner probably not less then five thousand persons crossed. A policeman lifted them on shore at the foot of Beekman street, and away they went. One person with more lungs and vanity than the majority, ran across six times, that he might brag over his performance hereafter. All this time a couple of tugs laid off in the clear water, just above the line of the ice bridge, or from Fulton to Peck slip ferry; the tide was running up stream rapidly, and the sun began to warm up the atmosphere considerably. The boatmen expected, perhaps hoped, that some adventurous individual would be set afloat upon cakes of ice, in order that they might rescue them for a consideration.

The people were becoming emboldened each moment, while the ice support was growing less trustworthy. At last two ladies were seen to venture in company with one gentleman. They reached the other shore in safety, were handed up, and can now feel reasonably vain of being the only two ladies who have walked over the river in eleven years. Two compositors in the Eagle office cut their sticks for the river and took a double quick to the other side, where, after disbursing thirty cents in honor of their exploit, they took a triumphal walk in return, satisfied that they had done "a big thing on ice." Hundreds on both sides of the river crossed just for the fun of the thing.

At a few moments past ten o'clock the force of the current had so weakened the ice in the centre of the river, that it began to show signs of giving way. Recently jammed in together, and each cake depending for the permanency of its position upon all others, a breaking up becomes a serious thing to those who are upon the treacherous surface. All at once the ice began to move, a long cake broke off lengthwise, in the track along which persons were traveling. This caused a scattering, all persons being in a hurry to reach either shore. The long line, broken in the middle, bent back upon itself and made the ice still more uncertain by the force of their falling feet. Three persons came to the Brooklyn shore, pretty well wet and frightened; they had gone in, one of them to the waist. A boy scrambling on shore, near DeForrest's dock, was thrown back by a rising cake of ice and nearly submerged. All four escaped, however, and they are among the persons who will not hurriedly repeat their hazardous experiment.

Very soon the whole ice which had formed this bridge reaching from South to Fulton ferry, began to move with great force up the river. The damage to shipping has not thus far been very considerable; the most mentionable, being that caused by a brig lying by the City Flour Mills, just west of Fulton ferry. This vessel was driven from its fastenings by the ice, its bowsprit forced into an elevator and broken off, nearly upsetting it, and in the rebound striking the stern of one of the Knickerbocker Ice Company's barges, staving it in.

From ten o'clock until half-past eleven this morning, the whole ice moved up stream, impeding the travel by ferry boats as before, but still no great delay resulted. At noon time, and just previous to this, while the ice was still, a number of chaps full of risk, struck out from New York for Brooklyn, They got across, and were followed by a large crowd. The ice began then to move down stream, and carried with it about thirty persons upon one cake, down towards Governor's island. They were all rescued by tugs, and charged generously for the service rendered."

This is the third time of late years that the East river has been similarly bridged.[1] It never happens except when a thaw occurring causes the North river to send down fields of heavy ice; followed by a south-west wind, which blows these heavy cakes into the East river, where they oscillate from Governor's to Blackwell's island and block up navigation. A cold spell succeeding this makes the ice sufficiently firm to bear up the weight of those who choose to cross.

---

[1] In 1852 and 1856. The *Eagle* of January 20th, 1852, says, "The cold which has been remarkably great for the last few days, became so intense last night that the East river became thoroughly bridged and sheeted over, and this morning the ferry boats were so completely wedged in their places, at the docks, that no passage could be made during the morning. The people began to cross the ice, and a continuous stream of passengers ventured to walk the waters, the ice being strong enough to sustain them. About eleven o'clock the East river presented quite an animated scene of people passing, and boys skating, etc., when the tide continuing to rise broke the ice from its moorings and sent it adrift. Those on the ice were not aware of their perilous position for a considerable time, though shouted to by persons from the shore, until coming to land they found their approach cut off. Their condition became alarming, the ice breaking in pieces and floating hither and thither with the tide. Ropes were lowered from vessels in the river, and a great number of ladies taken on board and safely landed. Chivalrous individuals on shore began to fit out some small Sir John Franklin expeditions to rescue those perched upon the ice-

April 8th. By the efforts, mainly, of A. E. Mudie, a public meeting was held at the Academy of Music, at which was organized a *Brooklyn Branch of the American Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals.*

May 9th. By an act of the legislature passed this day, *the Inebriate's Home for Kings County* was duly incorporated.

May 10th. The legislature passed an act, providing for the improvement, by dredging and docking of the *Gowanus Canal*, and placing the control of said work in the hands of a commission; and May 11th, another commission was appointed for the so-called *Wallabout Improvement*, at the foot of Washington avenue.

July 24th. Street commissioner Robert Furey, acting under authority of the common council, having previously given twenty days notice to owners of stores and other obstructions at the foot of streets on the water front owned by the city, to remove the same, proceeded this day, with a force of workmen to remove said obstructions, and raised quite a commotion.

August. Three cases of yellow fever occurred in New York, one of which was evidently contracted while removing cotton from the Atlantic docks, in Brooklyn; and one case was re-

---

bergs. The master of the brig Oxford very generously sent out the boat belonging to his vessel, and rescued about seventy persons. Mr. Wm. C. Hall, a ship carpenter of New York, signalized himself by his efforts in getting people to land. Two boys, in rashly endeavoring to come ashore, fell into the water and narrowly escaped drowning.

"Several large platforms of ice covered with people, were drifted down to Governor's island, where the persons succeeded in gaining the land. The boats, shortly after eleven o'clock A.M., began to disentangle themselves and force a passage through the ice."

The *Eagle* of Monday, February 11th, 1856, says: "The East river was completely bridged over on Saturday night, by an immense flow of ice of sufficient solidity to admit a passage across on foot. Alfred Hodges, John Cole, and another, taking advantage of the circumstance, lowered a life-boat into the slip on this side, and undertook the journey, dragging the boat with them for use in case of necessity. They found the ice compact enough to bear heavy teams, and experienced no difficulty in passing to the other side. They landed at Burling slip, and taking a drink to keep out the cold, returned in the same manner and by the same route they came, highly elated with their success.

"This was the time when Rev. Henry Ward Beecher and two ladies crossed, just as the ice was breaking up, and came very near being drowned."

ported by Deputy Registrar R. Cresson Stiles, to have occurred in Bergen street, Brooklyn, the patient having visited the lower quarantine, and, without permission, boarded an infected vessel.

On the 7th of August, an Italian vessel, the *Chiara*, arrived in Brooklyn, from the Mediterranean, with a load of oranges and other fruits. After the cargo was discharged, several of the crew sickened, and the vessel went to Newtown creek, where the three remaining seamen were attacked. The disease, however, could not properly be called yellow fever. On 17th September, a workman in a glass house, near the dock where this vessel was moored, was taken with symptoms of yellow fever and died; and on the seventh day, four others were attacked. The disease was different from any other malady that prevailed in the district, and according to the report of Dr. Stiles (*Metropolitan Board of Health Report for* 1867) the symptoms and post-mortem appearances resembled yellow fever.

1868. January 1st. The duties of the mayoralty were this day assumed, for the second time, by *Martin Kalbfleisch*, whose election, in the fall of the preceding year, we have already chronicled.

Martin Kalbfleisch was born in Flushing, Netherlands, on the 8th of February, 1804, and received a thorough education at the excellent schools of his native town. That place, however, offering but little opportunity for advancement or success in commercial or other pursuits, he determined to seek his fortunes elsewhere; and, with that view, took passage in 1822, for Padang on the coast of Sumatra, in an American vessel, the Ellen Douglass of Salem, Mass. On arriving at Padang he found the Asiatic cholera raging fearfully, and therefore reembarked for Antwerp, where the vessel was sold; and at the request of the captain, an American, accompanied him to France, where they were engaged in commercial operations together, for four years. During this period, his inclinations led him to look upon the United States as his future home; and, accordingly, in 1826, he carried that project into execution. Having but few acquaintances or friends, and but little means, upon his arrival, he found himself obliged to accept of any employment that offered; until, in 1835, when he had accumulated sufficient means, he was enabled to establish a color manufactory at Harlem, on New York Island, where he then resided. The high prices at that time paid for property induced him to sell his place and locate in Connecticut. This move, however, proving unsuccessful, he was induced to return to the environs

Martin Kalbfleisch

MAYOR

of New York, and finally determined to locate at Green-Point, as offering the best facilities for the prosecution of his business, and there he settled, in 1842. His family being somewhat numerous, he found the want of a school house to be a serious drawback, and immediately applied himself to remedying the want. He organized the district (comprising all of Green-Point up to line of Remsen street); got the use of the dilapidated old school house near the Bushwick church, repaired it, and obtained the services of a teacher, Mr. Norman Andrews, still living. By perseverance he soon had the satisfaction of seeing a new school house erected at Green-Point; and this has been followed up until that section of our city, at this day, has no less than four large and admirably equipped edifices devoted to the instruction of its youth. As Mr. Kalbfleisch's business expanded, the want of room compelled him, about twenty years since, to remove his factory to its present location, between Metropolitan and Grand avenues. For many years he has made the manufacture of acids a specialty, and has continually increased the extent of his works until they now embrace several acres, and are the most extensive in the country. The business (conducted for some years under the firm style of M. Kalbfleisch & Sons), has recently passed into the hands of the latter (under the firm style of M. Kalbfleisch's Sons), M. Kalbfleisch having amassed sufficient means to enable him to retire.

Mr. Kalbfleisch has always taken a lively interest in politics; and, although for many years a hard worker in the democratic ranks, did not aspire to office. Circumstances, however, made him, in 1851, a candidate for supervisorship of the old town of Bushwick, to which office he was elected, and which he held until the town was consolidated with the cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburgh. In 1853, he was appointed one of the commissioners to draw up a charter, for the proposed consolidation of the cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburgh, and acted as president of the board.

In 1854 he became the democratic candidate for mayor of the consolidated city, but was defeated by George Hall. In 1855 he was elected alderman of the 18th ward, and served in that capacity until May, 1861, when he became mayor of the city. He served three years as president of the board of aldermen, and the last time he was elected alderman, received all the votes but one cast in his ward for that office. In 1862 Mr. Kalbfleisch was elected a representative to congress from his district, and in 1867 reelected mayor of the city, which office he now occupies.

Mayor Kalbfleisch, by virtue of his office, is a member of various commissions, and a trustee of several institutions. He is, also, a director in two of our banks, insurance companies, the Trust company, etc., and president of the Prospect Park Fair Ground Association. He is an excellent linguist, speaking four languages fluently; has a ripe experience in public matters; manages his official trusts with prudence, energy and business tact; thinks for himself; has clear ideas upon all matters submitted to his judgment or approval; and is never afraid to use his veto prerogative.

April 16th. A *Board of Estimate and Disbursements* of the fire department was appointed by legislative enactment.

May 6th. A *Department for the Survey and Inspection of Buildings*, in the Western District of the city, was appointed by act of legislature.

May 31st. Sabbath. The graves of soldiers, at Cypress hills, were this day strewn with wreaths and flowers by the ladies, citizens and their surviving comrades in arms. Addresses were delivered by several of the clergy, and appropriate music was performed. The whole affair was under the auspices of the veterans.

June 21st. The corner-stone of the great Roman Catholic Cathedral was laid, with much ceremony.

July 8th. The old Howard estate, at East New York, was this day sold at auction. The historic tavern known as Howard's, or the Half-way House, on the East New York and Jamaica road, the Broadway plank road and Howard Place, together with about four acres of land, was sold for $21,000 to Mr. Henry R. Pierson, president of the Brooklyn City Rail Road Company.

November 12th. *The Brooklyn Academy of Design* had its first opening on the evening of this day.

November 14th. A terrible collision occurred on the New York side of the Fulton ferry, between two of the Union Ferry Company's boats, which is thus described in the *Union* of that date:

> At an early hour in the morning, the stream of people passing down Fulton avenue to cross the river, were met and startled by a rumor that a fearful disaster had taken place on Fulton ferry. In a few minutes all Brooklyn was wild with excitement, and many a peaceful home that had sent out its representatives to their daily avocations, was torn with doubt and fear. As the hours passed, and the truth began to appear from the thickly thronging reports, the extent of the accident, though sad enough to cast

a gloom on every portion of our city, was found to be far less than was at first apprehended.

The accident occurred about half-past seven o'clock, at which time the tide was running out. The *Union* was in the lower slip, having discharged her passengers for New York, and received on board a small number of passengers for Brooklyn. The *Hamilton* was going in, heavily laden with passengers, a large number of whom were at the forward portion of the boat. The bow was crowded, as were also the hoods (the covered portion of the boat between the cabin and bow). The crowd was as usual, the greatest on the side of the ladies' cabin, and particularly under the hood, and about the railings. As the Hamilton was headed, the ladies' cabin was on the port side, where the crowd was greatest, and the boat more depressed in the water.

As the Hamilton entered the slip the tide threw her towards the Union, and as her wheelman was unable to change her direction, a collision was the result. The Hamilton being loaded down in the bow, and the Union having little or no load on board, the consequence was that the overhang of the Union was about two feet higher than that of the Hamilton. The collision was the work of an instant.

As the Hamilton neared her slip in a diagonal direction, the ebb tide having carried her down, the crowding of the two boats was so gradual, and the mass of people who were on the bow of the Hamilton and under her port hood, was so dense, that the imminence of the collision was not known until the crashing of timbers and the shrieks of the people, with their rushing away from the side of the boat, appalled every one with the fact that death and mutilation were upon them. The bow of the Union had overlapped the deck of the Hamilton by six or eight feet, carrying away the gunwale, and smashing in the cabin and hood sides. There, under the Union, the Hamilton was now fast. The scene is hardly to be described. Terror or eager sympathy was upon every countenance. Crowds were rushing forward to the scene of destruction, while others were vainly endeavoring to press them back. Among the shouts of men who were endeavoring to preserve order were the shrieks of the injured who were under the timbers. Large numbers of people were rushing off from the boat, while others were rushing from the bridge upon her. The police, however, who were near the scene, soon restored some order, and the unfortunate ones began to be rescued.

Twenty persons were injured by this accident, one of whom, a boy named George Brower, was instantly killed, while others received serious fractures, contusions, etc. The accident had no inconsiderable effect in forming the public mind towards the building of a bridge across the East River.

December 1st. Fort Lafayette, opposite Fort Hamilton, destroyed by fire.

December 21st. The Common Council, by a vote of 15 to 4, authorized a loan of $3,000,000, to the New York Bridge Company's proposed East River Bridge, on condition that the sum of $2,000,000 be first subscribed to the capital stock by other parties; and that the company's charter be so amended, that the city's interests be represented in the board of directors, by three city officers comprising the commissioners of the Sinking Fund of the city of Brooklyn for the time being. The *Eagle* of the 22d, in commenting upon this action, says:

> "The city has done its duty. The public spirit of our citizens must do the rest. To those who have an interest in the city the question is not merely will the bridge pay as an investment, but will it pay to wed Long Island with the island of Manhattan, and to share fully in the princely fortunes of our sister city? To the wealthy and the comparatively poor owners of property in Brooklyn, or to those who ever hope to own a spot they can call home, there is but one answer to such a question. Last night's action even has added millions to the value of Brooklyn property. Its consummation in the completion of the bridge will more than double our real wealth. With new duties come new responsibilities. We can build the bridge and save its cost too, if we agree to sink for the time all other differences in the common and grand desire to make our city speedily what it is destined some time to be."

December 28th. The new *Brooklyn Skating Rink* in Clermont Avenue, was opened to the public, and the beautiful building of the *Kings County Savings Bank*, E. D. was formally opened and inaugurated.

Some idea of the wonderful growth of Brooklyn during this year (1868), may be gained from the following abstract of an article in the *Brooklyn Eagle* of February 16, 1869.

> "Later residents can hardly conceive the rapid growth of Brooklyn during the past quarter of a century. Twenty-five years ago, corn grew on

Montague street — Court street had no existence, and the fashionable locality of South Brooklyn was but a dreary sand-hill. Twenty-five years ago the aristocracy gathered in the neighborhood of the Navy Yard, for the gold lace and gilt buttons had much the same attraction then as now. Later, the principal business portion of the city was in the neighborhood of Fulton ferry. All the banks, insurance companies, and newspaper offices were gathered in the immediate neighborhood, the lawyers congregated about the corner of Front and Fulton streets; and, in fact, the first block of Fulton street, was the exchange of Brooklyn, where the prominent men of the city were most apt to be found during business hours. The building of the City Hall altered this, for all the lawyers and most of the incorporated institutions moved to that place and it became the business centre. However, there is another change and the lower part of Fulton street is resuming its former bustle and activity, and, as a business centre, is rivaling the Hall. The business is hardly the same, for there is an infusion of the wholesale trade, and many large manufactories are within easy distance of the street, so that the moneyed institutions have found that they did wisely in remaining in their old spots. Brooklyn is no longer a village, but supports several business centres; and, as it spreads farther towards what is now its outskirts, other centres will spring up without interfering with the old ones. During the past twenty-five years, the increase of population and of buildings has been enormous. Forty thousand was about the population twenty-five years ago, and to-day it is nearly three hundred thousand. Buildings and dwellings have sprung up as if by magic. Long rows of brown stone and brick buildings have risen, seemingly, in the space of a single night. The past year has seen no diminution, and, in fact, *the new buildings of* 1868 *exceed in value those of any previous year*. More elegant and costly public buildings have been erected since the 1st of January, 1868, than in any one previous year, and although the number of buildings is not as large as in 1867, yet, as was stated above, the value far exceeds it. In 1867, 3,539 buildings were erected, and in 1868 but 3,307 were put up. Of these, 375 were brown stone fronts; 775, brick; and 1915 frame dwellings; 3 stone, 7 brick, and 9 frame church edifices; 1 brick school-house; 41 brick and 24 frame buildings, for manufacturing purposes; 7 brick, 10 frame stores, and 140 buildings of a miscellaneous character. The greatest number of these buildings were erected in the 7th, 9th, 10th, 17th, 18th, 21st, and 22d wards, the 21st taking the lead, principally, however, in the frame structures.

This only includes those buildings which were completed within the year, and not those which were commenced. The increase in value, however, is not as great in the dwelling as in the public buildings, which are to become an ornament to the city. Notwithstanding the great number of dwelling houses that have been erected, the demand has been greater than the supply. Even at this time of the year vacant houses upon the Heights, that portion of the city called the Hill, and that portion of South Brooklyn lying in the neighborhood of Carroll Park, are eagerly snapped up, and it is very rarely the case that a house in any of these neighborhoods lies vacant or unengaged for the space of a week. It is a singular fact that almost without exception, the great number of dwelling houses have been erected by builders, who have amassed a sufficient sum and embarked it all in this enterprise; in short, the vast improvement in the real estate of Brooklyn has been due more to the enterprise of the builders and speculators than to the capitalists and large landholders.

Among the public buildings completed and commenced during the year 1868, may be especially mentioned the iron structure of the *Long Island Safe Deposit Company*, on the corner of Front and Fulton streets, costing $150,000; the large building of the *Union Association*, on the opposite corner, costing $33,000; *Burnham's Gymnasia*, corner of Smith and Schermerhorn streets, costing $90,000; the elegant *Mercantile Library* building, in Montague street, costing, with the two adjoining buildings, $181,000; the new *St. Ann's* Protestant Episcopal church, on corner of Clinton and Livingston, costing about $200,000; Rev. Dr. Duryea's new church in Classon Avenue, costing about $100,000; the *Skating Rink*, costing $30,000; a riding school in Pacific street, between Nevins and Powers, cost $12,000; two large buildings on corner of Court and Livingston streets, in the French style of architecture, costing $60,000; Messrs. Horton, Son & Co.'s splendid store on Fulton Avenue, above Gallatin Place, costing $45,000; Armstrong's & Blacklin's, 213, Fulton; the *Adelphi Academy*, on Lafayette Avenue, $18,800; the church of the *North Reformed* congregation in Twelfth street, costing nearly $60,000; that of the *Carlton Ave. Methodist Episcopal* church, corner of Clermont and Willoughby Avenues, $75,000; the Roman Catholic *Church of our Lady of Mercy*, in DeBevoise street, $70,000; the new church edifice of *St. Charles Borromeo* (Roman Catholic) costing, with land, $75,000; frame churches for St. James's and for St. Stephen's congregations; several large warehouses; and the superb building of the *Kings County Savings Bank*, corner of Fourth street and Broadway, E. D., costing $195,000.

In State, Pacific and Dean streets and in Fourth avenue a large number of houses of brown stone, brick and mastic fronts are going up. In fact, this is heard from all parts of the city. In the twentieth and seventh wards many are going up in long rows and the same may be said of the sixth, eighth, ninth, tenth, twenty-first, and twenty-second wards. In the ninth and twenty-first wards, outside of the fire limits, it is estimated in round numbers, that there are over two hundred frame buildings, in course of erection, which will be held at $8,500. A greater number of better stores have been erected during the past year, to be rented, than in any previous year, a hopeful sign for the business interests of Brooklyn. Upon Fulton, Myrtle, and Atlantic avenues a number of fine stores have been and now are in course of erection.

From the foregoing it may be seen that the increase in the value of real estate to the city must be very considerable. In the year 1864, the value of new buildings added to the city was $1,631,250; in 1865, $1,838,500; in 1866, $2,531,000; and in 1867, $3,562,600. It has been impossible for us at this time of the year to get at the exact number of buildings that have been erected in 1868, or their exact value. In fact, we have but a very small portion, yet we are enabled to figure a value nearly as much as in any previous year — $3,315,200.

In Williamsburgh, the value of property has increased at an astonishing rate, owing no doubt to the widening of South Sixth and South Seventh streets. Many of the property holders along the line of the streets named were against the improvement. Since then these very men have been made rich by the movement. It appeared that the widening of the streets cost $400,000, while real estate has increased in value over $500,000. The Williamsburgh Savings Bank has just purchased a piece of property on the corner of Broadway and Fifth street, 112 feet front on Broadway by 100 feet on Fifth street, for $110,000, on which to erect a banking house. This is said to be the largest sum ever paid for building lots in the Eastern District. The property could have been bought prior to the widening of the street for $20,000, and the houses gave the value to the estate. Now the property is sold for $110,000, and the houses are torn down as worthless."

The number of houses built during the year 1868, is, however, only one of the evidences that may be adduced of the rapid growth of Brooklyn. During the year an enormous and unprecedented amount of street improvement was effected, in the matter of grading, paving, and laying down water and sewer pipes. Twenty-three miles of improved streets were added to the city, rendering about seven or eight thousand city lots available for building purposes, which previously were not so available. It will be seen, therefore, that, great as the increase of buildings, the Street Department doubly kept pace with the progress of house building, and furnished twice as much new street frontage as the 3,200 newly erected buildings occupied. After all the thousands of new houses Brooklyn built in 1868, she offered, to the builder, at the close of the year, street approaches to three or four thousand more lots than were approachable for building at beginning.

While the Street Department thus furnished means of getting access to unoccupied lots, the Water and Sewerage Department was not idle in rendering house property more valuable, by adding to the first necessity of streets, the scarcely less necessary elements of a water supply and drainage. In the year 1867, sixteen miles of water pipes were laid and fourteen miles of sewers. At the commencement of 1868, therefore, there existed in the city 210 miles of water pipe, and 134 miles of sewers. The total street length of Brooklyn is about 500 miles. Of this only about one-half is at all occupied as yet by houses and population. Much of it exists in the form of water and swamp lots, which will probably for many years yet remain unbuilt upon. In 1868, there were fourteen miles of water pipe laid and sixteen of sewers — a reversal of the figures of the former year. On the first of January, 1869, there were 150 miles of sewer and 224 of water pipes lying beneath the street surface of Brooklyn. Especially in the sixteenth ward has the sewerage been largely and efficiently prosecuted.